**Originally Processed With FOIA(s):**
S

**FOIA Number:**
S

# FOIA MARKER

**This is not a textual record. This is used as an administrative marker by the George Bush Presidential Library Staff.**

---

**Record Group/Collection:** George H.W. Bush Presidential Records
**Collection/Office of Origin:** Speechwriting, White House Office of
**Series:** Speech File Backup Files
**Subseries:** Chron File, 1989-1993

---

**OA/ID Number:** 13736
**Folder ID Number:** 13736-001

---

**Folder Title:**
[William] Weld for Governor Fundraiser 11/1/90 [OA 8318] [3]

---

| Stack: | Row: | Section: | Shelf: | Position: |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| G | 26 | 21 | 1 | 3 |

MA GOP FUNDRAISER--ROUND TWO

RECYCLABLE McKERNAN

1) "..OR ARE YOU JUST EXCITED TO HAVE THE FATHER OF A BEST-SELLING AUTHOR IN TOWN? I HAD FIGURED I WAS SAFE, SINCE NONE OF MY CHILDREN OR GRAND-CHILDREN (SHOULD BE: HAVE WRITTEN A BOOK YET)--WHO WOULD HAVE GUESSED MY OWN DOG WOULD HAVE WRITTEN A 'LICK AND TELL' BOOK?"

2) (IF SOMEONE ON THE TICKET HAS PLAYED GOLF WITH THE PRESIDENT):
"AND AFTER I LET YOU WIN AT YOUR GOLF TOURNAMENT (CHANGE TO BE APPROPRIAT ..I JUST DON'T GET THE SAME RESPECT ON THE COURSE PRESIDENT EISENHOWER HAD. WHEN HE RETIRED SOMEONE ASKED HIM IF LEAVING THE WHITE HOUSE HAD AFFECTED HIS GOLF GAME. IKE SAID: 'YES. A LOT MORE PEOPLE BEAT ME NOW.' WELL, (SO AND SO) NEVER LET MY POSITION INTERFERE WITH HIS GOLF."

---

ARTICLES, (cont.')

10) "'I AM A 'SCOOP' JACKSON DEMOCRAT,' SAYS JOHN SILBER...MR. SILBER AGREES THAT IF YOU CALL HIM A 'PALEO-LIBERAL NEO-CONSERVATIVE,' YOU'D BE ABOUT RIGHT..IF THAT DOESN'T SUM IT UP, HE TELLS YOU THAT THE DEMOCRATIC PARTY HAS BECOME 'A COLLECTION OF SECTS PURSUING PET SCHEMES THAT HAVE UNDERMINED PERSONAL RESPONSIBILITY...'

"NOW, MASSACHUSETTES IS PERCEIVED IN THE BROAD STROKES OF POLITICAL CARIACATURE. ITS LEADERS ARE SUPER-LIBS LIKE SEN. EDWARD KENNEDY, SEN. JOHN KERRY AND GOV. MICHAEL DUKAKIS; IT WAS THE ONLY STATE TO VOTE FOR GEORGE McGOVERN IN 1972; IT IS EHERE HARVARD IS; IT IS KNOWN AS TAX-ACHUSETTS AND AS THE MOST LIBERAL STATE."

"Loose cannon on deck" - Jan Schlichtmann - suggests great metaphors

MA GOP FUNDRAISER, ROUND TWO

CONVERSATION WITH CELLUCCI

1) CELLUCCI WAS THE FIRST ELECTED OFFICIAL IN '79 TO ENDORSE GEORGE BUSH IN HIS RUN FOR THE PRESIDENCY--THEIR CAMPAIGN TRAIL IN MASSACHUSETTS CONSISTED OF THE TWO OF THEM IN A CAR TOGETHER, DRIVING FROM TOWN TO TOWN.

2) IN 1988, CELLUCCI BECAME MANAGER OF BUSH'S CAMPAIGN IN THE STATE. THEY FLEW AROUND THE STATE IN A LITTLE PLANE RIGHT BEFORE THE PRIMARY--NANCY BUSH ELLIS DIDN'T LIKE GETTING UP IN THAT LITTLE CRAFT, BUT SHE WAS ALWAYS READY TO DO EVERYTHING SHE COULD FOR HER BROTHER.

3) CELLUCCI SAYS THAT IN '79, A TALL MAN FROM TEXAS ASKED HIM FOR HELP, AND NOW HE'S PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES. IN '89, A TALL MAN FROM CAMBRIDGE ASKED FOR HIS HELP, AND COME NOVEMBER HE'LL BE GOVERNOR OF MASSACHUSETTS.

4) CELLUCCI SAYS THAT BUSH REFERRED TO HIM, TO ANDY CARD, TO ANDREW NATSIOS (NOW DIRECTOR OF THE AGENCY OF INTERNATIONAL DISASTER RELIEF AT THE STATE DEPT), AND LEON LOMBARDI (A LAWYER AND TREASURER OF CELLUCCI'S CAMPAIGN) AS THE FOUR HORSEMEN. BUSH SAID THAT THE FOUR ALWAYS VOTED WITH THEIR HEARTS, MINDFUL OF THE TAXPAYERS POCKETBOOKS.

MA GOP FUNDRAISER, ROUND TWO

CONVERSATION WITH CELLUCCI, (cont.')

5) CELLUCCI TELLS THE STORY ABOUT HOW WHEN BUSH WAS ELECTED VICE PRES (TO BE SWORN IN A COUPLE OF WEEKS LATER) THE FOUR HORSEMEN WERE SUPPOSED TO MEET HIM AT THE AIRPORT. THEY WERE LATE, MISSED HIM, AND SO RUSHED TO THE HOTEL. THERE AN AIDE MET THEM AND TOLD THEM TO GO UP TO THE HOTEL ROOM WHERE THE VICE PRESIDENT WAS WAITING FOR THEM. THEY SPENT ABOUT 45 MINUTES TALKING WITH HIM, AND WHAT BUSH REALLY WANTED TO TALK ABOUT WAS LOCAL MASSACHUSETTS POLITICS, NOT HIS NEW POST.

6) CELLUCCI SAYS STEER CLEAR OF ANYTHING HAVING TO DO WITH THE BOSTON HARBOR. SAYS THAT THERE IS SOME CRITICISM OF BUSH FOR HAVING COME TO CAMPAIGN ABOUT THE DIRTY HARBOR, AND ABOUT DUKAKIS'S LACK OF EFFORT IN CLEANING IT UP--AND THEN BUSH'S SUBSEQUENT FAILURE OR PERHAPS MORE CORRECTLY LACK OF INTEREST IN CLEANING IT UP HIMSELF.

7) RIGHT BEFORE THE PRESIDENT"S EARLIER SCHEDULED VISIT, SILBER RAN ADS SHOWING HIMSELF WITH POTUS AND MITTERAND. SILBER IS REALLY HYPING WHAT GOOD FRIENDS HE IS WITH BUSH. CELLUCCI SAYS THE BEST LINE OF ATTACK IS TO ASSOCIATE SILBER WITH THE CORRUPT DEMOCRATIC ESTABLISHMEN SAYING THAT EVEN THOUGH HE CLAIMS TO WANT CHANGE, HE HAS SOLD OUT TO THE OLD FORCES OF INERTIA.

8) CELLUCCI SAYS THAT THE DEMOCRATIC PARTY WANTS THE PEOPLE OF MASSACHUSET to replace Mr. Know-it-All with Dr. Know-it-All. The only thing worse than Dukakis' arrogance is Silber's arrogance.

MA GOP FUNDRAISER, ROUND TWO

ARTICLES

1) "THIRTY-TWO YEAR OLD WILLIAM WELD, A RICH-KID BLUE BLOOD FROM LONG ISLAND, WITH TWO DEGREES FROM HARVARD AND A DEGREE FROM OXFORD THROWN IN FOR GOOD MEASURE..BILL WELD. BRAHMIN STREETFIGHTER.."
--Boston Sunday Herald, 10/14/90 p. 6

2) "THE FIRST WELD--JOSEPH WELD--CAME TO THESE SHORES IN 1630, AND WAS AN EARLY FINANCIAL BACKER OF HARVARD COLLEGE."
--ibid.

3) "AT AGE 11, (BILL) CAME TO MASSACHUSETTS TO ATTEND THE MIDDLESEX SCHOOL IN CONCORD. FROM THERE, WELD WENT TO HARVARD COLLEGE, WHERE HE GRADUATED SUMMA CUM LAUDE, FINISHING IN THE TOP EIGHT OF HIS CLASS."
--ibid.

4) WELD: "'THERE ARE SOME PEOPLE WHO ARE TAKEN INTO THE TENT BY THE WAVING OF THE BLOODY SHIRT ON THE ISSUE OF 'THIS FELLA DIDN'T COME UP THE HARD WAY.' YOU KNOW, PEOPLE SAY, 'WELL, HE NEVER HAD TO WORK A DAY IN HIS LIFE.' BUT THE FACT IS, I HAVE WORKED EVERY DAY IN MY LIFE, SO I'M NOT SURE THAT WHETHER OR NOT I HAD TO IS ALL THAT ILLUMINATING. AND WHILE I MAY NOT HAVE COME UP THE HARD WAY ECONOMICALLY, I CERTAINLY DID come up the hard way politically as a republican in Massachusetts."
-ibid p. 7.

I think there's a joke in this, over

MA GOP FUNDRAISER, ROUND TWO

ARTICLES, (cont.')

5) "WELD SAYS THE DRIVE THAT HAS FUELED HIS CAREER STEMS FROM THE BELIEF THAT MASSACHUSETTS GOVERNMENT IS LACED IWTH CORRUPTION.."
--ibid., p. 7

6) "BUT THERE IS A LESSER KNOWN NAME FOR THE UNUSUAL UTTERANCES UNLEASHED BY BILL WELD. THEY'RE KNOWN AS 'WELDISMS.'...BRANDING STATE GOVERNMENT BUREAUCRATS 'WALRUSES' WHILE DESCRIBING SILBER AS 'A TAX AND SPEND FELLA.' SOMEONE WHO'S NOT DOING HIS JOB? THAT'S SOMEONE WHO IS 'PLAYING WITH H$S FOOD' IN WELDSPEAK. HOW SHOULD THE STATE BUDGET BE CUT? IT CAN BE SHRUNK 'LIKE SQUEEZING WATER OUT OF CHEESE,' SAYS WELD. WELD WAS IN TOP FORM AT A GOP CONFERENCE LAST OCTOBER, WHERE HE PROMISED TO 'HONK THE HORN FOR THE FORGOTTEN MOTORIST' AND DESCRIBED DEMOCRATIC POLICIES AS EMANATING FROM 'CLOUD CUCKOOLAND.'"
--ibid., p. 7

7) "WELD PROSECUTED BANKS FOR CURRECNCY REPORTING VIOLATIONS, BROKE UP A BOSTON ARSON RING, AND STAGED AN UNREMITTING INVESTIGATION INTO CORRUPTION IN MAYOR KEVIN WHITE'S ADMINISTRATION. WELD WALKED AWAY WITH INDICTMENTS OF LOWER- AND MID-LEVEL WHITE AIDES, BUT NEVER NAILED HIS OBVIOUS TARGET."
--ibid., p. 14

= POSSIBLE ROUND II CHOICES (1)

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

CONVERSATION WITH PHIL PUCCIA, STATE GOP

1) EVENT FOCUS. ALTHOUGH MA GOP IS THROWING EVENT, THE INVITE READS "FOR THE BENEFIT OF BILL WELD AND PAUL CELLUCCI." THEY SHOULD BE THE FOCUS, BUT POTUS SHOULD PROBABLY ALSO MENTION WHERE THE REPUBLICAN PARTY IS IN MA, AND HOW FAR IT HAS COME.

2) INTRODUCTION. PARTY CHAIRMAN RAY SHAMIE WILL INTRODUCE WELD, WHO IN TURN WILL INTRODUCE THE PRES. PUCCIA SAYS SHAMIE IS A FRIEND OF POTUS. POTUS MIGHT SAY SOMETHING ABOUT HOW RAY HAS BUILT THE MA GOP AND MADE IT A FORCE TO BE RECKONED WITH IN MA POLITICS.

3) PIERCE vs. WELD. THE FACT THAT MA GOP DIDN'T PICK WELD AS NOMINEE, IS NOT AT ALL A TABOO SUBJECT ACCORDING TO PUCCIA. IN FACT, STEVE PIERCE IS WELD'S NEW CAMPAIGN MANAGER AND RELATIONS BETWEEN THE TWO CAMPAIGNS WERE ALWAYS VERY CORDIAL. A LOT OF TOP PIERCE PEOPLE WENT OVER TO THE WELD CAMPAIGN, AND THERE WILL BE PIERCE AND FORMER PIERCE PEOPLE IN THE CROWD.

4) ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS. SILVIO CONTE, A U.S. CONGRESSMAN FROM MA WILL BE IN THE CROWD. SO WILL GOV. JOHN VOLPE, WHO WAS GOV. FROM 66-70. RAY SHAMIE OF COURSE. ALSO, PRESIDENT'S SISTER, NANCY BUSH ELLIS, WHO LIVES IN MA, WILL BE AT THE HEAD TABLE.

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

(2)

CONVERSATION WITH PUCCIA, MA GOP

5) RED SOCKS. THE SOCKS WILL BE PLAYING THE TORONTO BLUE JAYS THIS WEEKEND. IF THE SOCKS WINN, IT MIGHT BE APPROPRIATE TO WISH THEM GOOD LUCK AS THEY GO ON TO THE PENNANT AND THEN THE SERIES. THE LAST GAME OF THE SERIES IS WED, OCT. 3RD, SO WE'LL KNOW BY FUNDRAISER IF THEY WON THE DIVISION. → they lost, so, let's use the "MA Democrats" line

6) WELLESLEY. I THOUGHT THERE MIGHT BE A JOKE IN THAT THE LAST TIME A MEMBER OF THE FIRST FAMILY WENT TO MA, THERE WAS SUCH A BIG STINK. MAYBE SOMETHING LIKE: "I HAD THOUGHT I MIGHT STOP BY WELLESLEY AND DELIVER A FEW REMARKS, BUT THEN AGAIN, THAT MIGHT AROUSE PROTEST...AFTER ALL, THE ONLY REASON I'VE ATTAINED NATIONAL STATURE IS BECAUSE OF BARBARA."

7) TUNNEL RECONSTRUCTION. THE CENTRAL ARTERY AND TUNNEL PROJECT WILL BE EXTREMELY EXPENSIVE, AND INVOLVE A LOT OF FEDERAL SPENDING. IT IS FEARED THAT WHEN THE WORK BEGINS, THERE WILL BE RATS ALL OVER THE PLACE. I THOUGHT OF A JOKE LIKE THIS: "IT'S A GREAT PLAN. WE ALL KNOW IT'S GOING TO BE EXPENSIVE, AND WE'VE ALL HEARD ABOUT THE POSSIBILITY OF AN EPIDEMIC OF RATS. BUT THEN AGAIN, WHENEVER THEY SMELL PUBLIC SPENDING IN THE AIR, THE DEMOCRATS ALWAYS COME OUT."

maybe we can use this in light of POTUS's new humor

8) LAZY JUDICIAL SYSTEM. ALL THIS WEEK THE BOSTON GLOBE HAS BEEN RUNNING STORIES TO THE EFFECT THAT THE JUDICIAL SYSTEM IN THE STATE IS A JOKE.

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

CONVERSATION WITH PUCCIA, MA GOP, (cont.')

A LOT OF THE DEMOCRATIC REPRESENTATIVES IN THE STATE HOUSE PRACTICE CRIMINAL LAW, AND THEY HAVE AN 88% VICTORY IN FRONT OF A SELECT GROUP OF JUDGES. PLUS, MANY OF THEM HAVE BEEN FOUND TO BE GOING HOME AT NOON, AND NOT TAKING THEIR DUTIES SERIOUSLY ENOUGH. PUCCIA SAYS IT IS BECOMING A CAMPAIGN ISSUE. HOW ABOUT, I THOUGHT: "WE NEED A GOVERNOR WHO WAS A U.S. ATTORNEY FOR MA, AND AN ASSISTANT ATTORNEY GENERAL. WHAT WE DON'T NEED IS JUDGES WHO ARE ASLEEP AT THE WHEEL. IN FACT, THE ONLY TIME THEY AREN'T ASLEEP AT THE WHEEL IS WHEN THEY'RE DRIVING HOME AT 2 O'CLOCK. I KNOW YOU HAVE TRAFFIC PROBLEMS IN BOSTON, BUT THIS IS NO WAY TO SOLVE THEM."



WELD FOR GOVERNOR

CONVERSATION WITH RAY HOWELL, CAMPAIGN

1) THE BOSTON GLOBE EXPOSED SCANDAL ABOUT THE STATE JUDICIAL SYSTEM, ACCORDING TO HOWELL, IS BEGINNING TO PLAY INTO THE CAMPAIGN. WELD SAYS WE NEED TO CLEAN UP THE COURTS SYSTEM. HE WANTS TO ELIMINATE JUDICIAL DISCRETION AND PAROLE. HE WANTS TO CHANGE THE COURT LAW THAT PROHIBITS THE TRANSFER OF COURT WORKERS TO HANDLE THE EBB AND FLOW OF CASE LOADS IN VARIOUS COURTS.

WELD SAYS WE NEED A REPUBLICAN ADMINISTRATION TO SWEEP AWAY THE PATRONAG SYSTEM IN THE COURTS, BUILT UP OVER THE YEARS OF DEMOCRATIC ADMINS.

2) HOWELL SAYS THAT BILLY BULGER, PRESIDENT OF THE MA SENATE, IS PERHAPS THE MOST HATED POLITICIAN IN MA AFTER DUKAKIS. IT'S ALMOST AS IF THE GUY OWNS THE COURT SYSTEM, AND HIS FINGERPRINTS ARE ALL OVER THE SCANDAL. HOWELL SUGGESTS THE JOKE: "I HEAR THINGS ARE SO BAD IN MA, THAT BULGER HAD TO LAY OFF THREE JUDGES." HOWELL SAYS IT WILL PLAY, BUT PERSONALLY I DON'T GET IT, AND DON'T KNOW IF THE PRES WANTS TO MAKE THAT KIND OF PERSONAL ATTACK.

3) HOW TO HANDLE THE FACT THAT MA GOP DIDN'T NOMINATE WELLS: HOW ABOUT THIS ONE I THOUGHT UP: "I'M LIVING PROOF OF THE LONG TERM BENEFITS OF LOSING THE FIRST ROUND." (CUZ DIDN'T POTUS LOSE IN IOWA?)

Don't use

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

CONVERSATION WITH RAY HOWELL, CAMPAIGN, (cont.")

4) HOWELL SAYS THAT THE ONLY MAJOR ISSUE THAT DIVIDES BUSH AND WELD IS ABORTION. HE ALSO WARNS THAT BUSH IS NOT WELL PERCEIVED ON ENVIRONMENTAL POLICY IN THE STATE, SO WE MAY WANT TO SHY AWAY FROM THAT ONE.

5) HANDLING SILBER: IT'S A TRICKY SUBJECT, BECAUSE SILBER HAS BEEN PLAYING UP TO THE PRESS THE STORY THAT HE AND THE PRES HAVE A MUTUAL ADMIRATION SOCIETY. WELD'S MAIN LINE OF ATTACK AGAINST SILBER, HOWEVER IS THAT THE LATTER IS REALLY NOT A FISCAL CONSERVATIVE. THERE IS EVIDENCE TO BACK UP THIS CHARGE--FOR INSTANCE, SILBER WANTS TO INCREASE THE GAS TAX, AND HE'S SAID ON OCCASION THAT IF GAS WENT TO $3.50 A GALLON, HE'D HAVE NO PROBLEM WITH THAT.; HE'S ALSO IN FAVOR OF AN INCREASED STATE INCOME TAX; PLUS, HE'S COME OUT IN FAVOR OF EXTENDING THE SALES TAX TO INCLUDE SERVICES NOT NOW INCLUDED.

all of this is in well of theme of fiscal irresponsibility

SOME SILBER JOKES I THOUGHT UP:

POTUS: "I KNOW THAT SILBER VOTED FOR ME, AND I HEARD HE EVEN SENT ME A COUPLE OF T-SHIRTS...WELL, I HAVE A MESSAGE FOR HIM: JOHN, IT'S NOT GOING TO WORK."

POTUS: "SILBER CLAIMS HE'S DOING A GREAT JOB AT B.U. WELL, IF THAT'S TRUE, I THINK WE CAN ALL AGREE THAT HE OUGHT TO STAY THERE."



WELD FOR GOVERNOR

CONVERSATION WITH CAMPAIGN, (cont.')

POTUS: "I THINK MASSACHUSETTS BETTHER THINK TWICE ABOUT ELECTING ANOTHER ACADEMIC...REMEMBER WHAT HAPPENED THE LAST TIME."

POTUS: "I'VE HEARD ABOUT THESE INFAMOUS SILBER SHOCKERS. WELL THE BEST ONES GOING TO COME ON ELECTION...AND REMEMBER, HE WHO SHOCKS LAST, SHOCKS BEST."

POTUS: "I'VE HEARD ABOUT THESE SILBER SHOCKERS...AND WHILE MASSACHUSETTS NEED SOME SHOCK TREATMENT, IT'S NOT THE KIND SILBER IS PROPOSING. MASSACHUSETTS HAS BEEN LIVING A FISCAL NIGHTMARE, AND IT'S ABOUT TIME WE WAKE UP TO A REPUBLICAN FUTURE, AND A FISCALLY RESPONSIBLE FUTURE."

6) ANECTODAL ON WELD: HOWELL TALKS ABOUT WELD'S OUTSTANDING RECORD AS DISTRICT ATTORNEY AND ASSISTANT U.S. ATTORNEY. ABOUT HOW WELD TOOK ON THE POWER STRUCTURE AND CHANGED THINGS. ABOUT HOW WELD TOOK ON THE MASSACHUSETTS MOB AND SENT ITS LEADERS TO PRISON. ABOUT HOW HE OBTAINED THE FIRST CRIMINAL PENALTY IN THE NATION FOR CURRENCY VIOLATIONS. AND HOW HE TOOK ON CORRUPT POLITICIANS.

7) GOOD ANECDOTE ABOUT WELD: WHEN WELD BECAME U.S. ATTORNEY, HE SAT DOWN WITH REPRESENTATIVES OF THE FINANCIAL COMMUNITY, INCLUDING BANKERS.

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

(7)

CONVERSATION WITH CAMPAIGN, (cont.')

WELD SAID: "I WANT TO TARGET WHITE COLLAR CRIME. WHAT NEEDS TO BE DONE?" THEY SAID, "WELL, WE HAVE A LOT OF TELLERS WHO ARE STEALING MONEY." WELD COUNTERED: "I'M NOT INTERESTED IN THE NICKEL AND DIME STUFF, LET THE LOCAL POLICE HANDLE THAT, I'M GOING AFTER THE BANKS."

8) MA MOOD ACCORDING TO HOWELL: PEOPLE ARE ANGRY, SHOTS AGAINST THE DEMS AREN'T GOING TO BACKFIRE, AS LONG AS IT STAYS PARTISAN.
POTUS: "PEOPLE ARE FIGHTING MAD IN MASSACHUSETTS, AND WHEN I SEE WHAT'S GOING ON, I CAN'T SAY I BLAME THEM."

9) A COUPLE OF JUDGE JOKES I THOUGHT UP:
POTUS: "I'VE HEARD ABOUT THE SCANDAL WITH THE STATE JUDICIAL SYSTEM. BUT I THINK THAT WITHIN THIS CRISIS THERE MIGHT BE AN OPPORTUNITY... FOR INSTANCE, IF YOU JUST PAY THE JUDGES BY THE HOUR, YOU MIGHT HAVE YOURSELF A CREATIVE SOLUTION TO YOUR BUDGET PROBLEMS."
POTUS: (RE. JUDICIAL SYSTEM) "YOU KNOW IT'S A SHAME, JUST WHEN THE NAME TAXACHUSETTS FELL OUT OF FASHION, SOME JUDGES HAVE JUST GIVEN NEW MEANING TO 'LAXACHUSETTS.'"

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

(8)

ANECDOTES

1) CURT'S JOKE, (IT WOULD BE A PERFECT FOLLOW TO A COMMENT ON RED SOCK'S LOSS): "I KNOW YOU'RE ALL THINKING ABOUT THAT TEAM THAT'S FALLEN FROM GRACE IN MASSACHUSETTS, THAT'S LOST ITS FIRST PLACE STATUS, THAT'S BECOME AN EMBARRASSMENT TO THE STATE....BUT ENOUGH ABOUT THE MASSACHUSETTS DEMOCRATS."

2) IF WE'RE SUPPOSED TO GO UP THERE TO CRUCIFY THE MA DEMS, HOW ABOUT: "I KNOW THERE WERE SOME THAT THOUGHT I WOULD BE TOO HARSH ON THE MASSACHUSETTS DEMOCRATS WHEN I CAME UP HERE. WELL, I THINK IT IS FITTING THAT THEY BE CRUCIFIED FOR OUR SINS, SINCE MASSACHUSETTS HAS BEEN CRUCIFIED FOR THEIRS." (I DON'T KNOW, MAYBE I'M STILL IN A CATHEDRAL FRAME OF MIND.)

(9)

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

QUOTES

1) "..ITS DRIVING ENERGY SPARKED ALWAYS BY INDEPENDENCE AND FREEDOM OF SPIRIT--CAN THIS BE ANYWHERE SO STRONG, SO FASCINATING, SO ENDURING, AS IN MASSACHUSETTS?"
--Pearl S. Buck, America 1971

2) "THE LAND TO ME SEEMED A PARADISE: FOR IN MY EYE, IT WAS NATURE'S MASTER-PIECE..(I)F THIS LAND BE NOT RICH, THEN THE WHOLE WORLD IS POOR."
--Thomas Morton, New English Canaan, 1637

3) "NO DOUBT THE BOSTONIAN HAD ALWAYS BEEN NOTED FOR A CERTAIN CHRONIC IRRITABILITY--A SORT OF BOSTONITIS--WHICH, IN ITS PRIMITVE PURITAN FORMS, SEEMED DUE TO KNOWING ROO MUCH OF HIS NEIGHBORS, AND THINKING TOO MUCH OF HIMSELF."
--Henry Adams, The Education of Henry Adams, 1907

4) (REGARDING CAPE COD) "A MAN MAY STAND HERE AND PUT ALL AMERICA BEHIND HIM'
--Henry David Thoreau, Cape Cod, 1855

5) "MARRIAGE IS A DAMNABLY SERIOUS BUSINESS, PARTICULARLY AROUND BOSTON."
--John Phillips Marquand, The Late George Apley, 1937

(17)

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

CONVERSATION WITH KAUFFMAN

1) THE BIG PICTURE:
   A. PEOPLE IN MA WANT CHANGE
   B. PEOPLE IN MA WANT STABILITY--THEY'RE TIRED OF THE CHAOS OF THE DEMOCRATICALLY CONTROLLED YEARS; THEY'RE YEARNING FOR SANE GOVERN-MENT TO BE RETURNED TO THEIR STATE. THEY FEEL MALIGNED.

   C. CONCLUSION: WHILE THE DESIRE FOR CHANGE WORKS FOR BOTH CANDIDATES, SILBER AND WELD, IT CAN WORK LESS FOR SILBER IF WE CAN PAINT HIM AS BEING PART OF THE DEMOCRATIC PARTY MACHINE. THE DESIRE FOR STABILITY AND A RETURN TO SANE GOVERNMENT CAN WORK FOR WELD AND AGAINST SILBER IF WE MAKE IT. REMEMBER: MA LIBS AND MA MODERATES ARE UNEASY ABOUT SILBER AS A "LOOSE CANNON ON DECK."

2) POTUS' REMARKS SHOULD BE CENTERED ON WELD AND RAPPAPORT, WITH ALSO SOME RECOGNITION OF MALLONE. NOTE, HOWEVER, THAT WE MUST BE SENSITIVE TO CELLUCCI--HE REALLY IS OUR GUY, HE CAME OUT EARLY, AND HAS COME OUT CONSISTENTLY IN SUPPORT OF BUSH.

HOW TO HIT THE WHOLE TICKET....POTUS: "THE PEOPLE OF MASSACHUSETTS WANT CHANGE, AND THAT'S WHY THEY'RE GOING TO GIVE THE REPUBLICAN TICKET A CHANCE."

(10)

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

NOTE: MOST AMERICANS ASSOCIATE MA. WITH HISTORY, WHICH IS ONLY FITTING SINCE MA HISTORY IS INEXTRICABLE FROM AMERICAN HISTORY.

HISTORICAL ALLUSIONS

I think this could fly

1) ON NOV. 9, 1620 THE CREW OF THE MAYFLOWER SIGHTED LAND FOR THE FIRST TIME. GIVES RISE TO POTUS: "ON NOVEMBER 9th, THREE CENTURIES AND SEVEN DECADES AGO...THE CREW OF THE MAYFLOWER SPOTTED LAND, THE LAND OF THE FUTURE MASSACHUSETTS. LET US ALL BE COMMITTED, THAT ON NOV. 9th, 370 YEARS AFTER THAT HISTORIC DAY, AND AFTER YEARS OF STORMY SEAS UNDER DEMOCRATIC ADMINISTRATIONS, WE'RE FINALLY BRINGING MASSACHUSETTS INTO PORT."

2) OTHER HISTORICAL NOVEMBERS:

-NOV. 11, 1620: THE MAYFLOWER WAS ABLE TO ROUND THE SHOALS OF CAPE COD AND FIND HARBOR AT PRESENT DAY PROVINCETOWN. THE HEALTHY MEN COMPOSED THE MAYFLOWER COMPACT TO SILENCE MUTINOUS TALK AND ESTABLIS ORGANIZATION AND CIVIL AUTHORITY.

-NOV. 11, 1647: MASSACHUSETTS BAY'S GENERAL COURT PASSED AMERICA'S FIRST CUMPOLSORY SCHOOL LAW.

-NOV 1920: MASSACHUSETTS CAST ALMOST 70% OF ITS POPULAR VOTE FOR REPUBLICANS WARREN HARDING AND HIS RUNNING MATE CALVIN COOLIDGE.

(11)

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

HISTORICAL ALLUSIONS, (cont.')

TWO YEARS LATER COOLIDGE WOULD COME UP WITH THE FAMOUS LINE: "THIS IS A BUSINESS COUNTRY AND IT WANTS A BUSINESS GOVERNMENT." WE MIGHT CO-OPT THIS FOR THE SPEECH, SINCE WELD WANTS TO OPEN MASSACHUSETTS FOR BUSINESS AGAIN.

IN THE SAME ELECTION YEAR AND MONTH, WOMEN TURNED OUT FOR THEIR FIRST PRESIDENTIAL AND STATE ELECTIONS IN MA.

-NOV. 1960: THE REPUBLICANS WON BACK THE GOVERNOR'S CHAIR WITH ITALIAN AMERICAN, LIBERAL REPUBLICAN JOHN A. VOLPE.

-NOV. 8, 1966: ENDICOTT PEABODY LOST THE ELECTION TO U.S. SENATE TO LIBERAL REPUBLICAN EDWARD BROOKE, THE FIRST BLACK TO WIN A SENATE SEAT SINCE RECONSTRUCTION (1880).

3) IN 1602, BARTHOLOMEW GOSNOLD LEFT ENGLAND TO SAIL FOR THE BRITISH ISLES WITH A CARGO OF SASSAFRAS THAT CLICKED THE LOCK ON THE MERCHANTS' POCKETBOOKS. SASSAFRAS WAS THEN CONSIDERED A VALUABLE AND POTENT DRUG FOR EVERY ILLNESS. HOW ABOUT A HISTORICAL ALLUSION AND JOKE: "PUBLIC SPENDING IS TO THE MA DEMOCRATS WHAT SASSAFRAS WAS TO THE ENGLISH IN THE EARLY 1600's--A VALUABLE DRUG FOR EVERY ILLNESS."

HISTORICAL ALLUSIONS, (cont.')

7) IN 1826, THE FACTORY ORIGINALLY ENVISIONED BY FRANCIS CABOT LOWELL RES-
IN AMERICA'S FIRST COMPANY TOWN. HISTORICAL ALLUSION:
POTUS: " IN THE 1820's, MASSACHUSETTS BECAME THE SITE OF AMERICA'S FIRST COMPANY TOWN. IN THE 1980's IT BECAME THE SITE OF A COMPANY STATE, AND THE COMPANY WAS DEMOCRATIC PATRONAGE, INC. THE 1990's ARE GOING TO BREAK THAT MONOPOLY."
(ESPECIALLY RELEVANT GIVEN THE GERRYMANDERING AND THE PATRONAGE IN THE STATE JUDICIARY SYSTEM.)

8) ANOTHER ALLUSION REGARDING THE HISTORY OF THE CHURCH-STATE DIVISION IN MASSACHUSETTS....
POTUS: "IN 1833, MASSACHUSETTS BECAME THE LAST STATE TO DISESTABLISH ITS CHURCH, AND ESTABLISH FREEDOM OF RELIGION AND THE LEGAL EQUALITY OF OF ALL RELIGIOUS SECTS AND DENOMINATIONS. MASSACHUSETTS MUST NOW UNSADDLE THE ENTRENCHED CHURCH OF LIBERALISM, AND RETURN TO THE DAYS WHEN A FREE-WHEELING DEBATE OF IDEAS TRIUMPHED OVER BLIND OBEDIENCE TO DOCTRINE.

9) THE TROUBLED TIMES OF THE 1930's WERE NOT WITHOUT HUMOUR, AS WHEN IN 1933, MEMBERS OF THE HARVARD LAMPOON "CODNAPPED" THE SACRED COD FROM THE GENERAL COURT ON APRIL 26.



HISTORICAL ALLUSIONS, (cont.')

10) A WATERMARK IN MA'S EVOLUTION AS A LIBERAL STATE: ON MARCH 10, 1971 A FEDERAL GOVERNMENT REPORT CAME OUT NOTING THAT BOSTON HAD 15.3% OF ITS POPULATION ON WELFARE, THE HIGHEST FIGURE OF THE NATION'S 20 LARGEST CITIES.

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

(15)

MASSACHUSETTS COLOR

1) MA IS HOME TO THE LAKE WITH THE LONGEST NAME OF ANY LAKE IN THE UNITED STATES. IT IS LAKE CHARGOGGAGOMANCHAUGAGOGCHABUNGAGUNGAMAUG. (I THINK WE'D NEED A PRONOUNCER ON THAT ONE.) THE NAME MEANS: "YOU FISH ON YOUR SIDE OF THE LAKE. I FISH MY SIDE. NOBODY FISHES IN THE MIDDLE."

--Massachusetts Facts

2) "ACCENTUATING ALL OF THIS ARE THE RICH CONTRASTS OF THE BAY STATE: THE BEACHES OF NANTUCKET AND THE FOREST OF BERKSHIRE HILLS; THE PORTUGESE NEW BEDFORD FISHERMAN AND THE TRANSPLANTED CAMBRIDGE ELECTRICAL ENGINEER; THE HUB--THE FLURRY OF ACTIVITY IN THE HEART OF DOWNTOWN BOSTON AND THE QUIET UPLAND TOWNS OF HAMPSHIRE COUNTY. MASSACHUSETTS TODAY IS THE CULMINATION OF 380 YEARS OF PIONEERING, POLITICKING, BRAVERY, AND ARTISTRY."

--ibid.

3) "WITH FOUR DISTINCT SEASONS, ISLANDS, COASTLINE, FORESTS, AND MOUNTAINS WHATEVER STRIKES THE IMAGINATION IS POSSIBLE. MASSACHUSETTS IS THE THIRD MOST DENSELY POPULATED STATE, AND THE SIXTH SMALLEST IN LAND AREA, YET IT HAS THE SIXTH LARGEST STATE PARK SYSTEM. MASSACHUSETTS HAS PROFESSIONAL SPORTS TEAMS IN ALL MAJOR LEAGUES. THE BRUINS, CELTICS AND RED SOX FROM BOSTON HAVE LONG AND STORIED HISTORIES."

--ibid.

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

(16)

MASSACHUSETTS COLOR

4) "BAY STATER'S HAVE ALWAYS HAD A KEEN INTEREST IN PRESIDENRIAL ELECTIONS. THREE U.S. PRESIDENTS, JOHN ADAMS, HIS SON JOHN QUINCY ADAMS, AND JOHN F. KENNEDY WERE BORN AND RAISED IN MASSACHUSETTS. ANOTHER, CALVIN COOLIDGE, SPENT MOST OF HIS YOUTH THERE."

--ibid.

5) "FROM THE EARLY DAYS WHEN 'NO TAXATION WITHOUT REPRESENTATION,' ERUPTED FROM BAY STATE CITIZENS, MASSACHUSETTS HAS BEEN DEEPLY INVOLVED IN TAX ISSUES."

--ibid.

6) "FROM WILLIAM BRADFORD ("OF PLYMOUTH PLANTATION") TO JACK KEROUAC ("ON THE ROAD"), THE STATE'S LITERARY CUP HAS FLOWED OVER WITH SUCH NOTABLES AS RALPH WALDO EMERSON ("THE AMERICAN SCHOLAR", "SELF RELIANCE HENRY DAVID THOREAU ("WALDEN", "CIVIL DISOBEDIANCE"), NATHANIEL HAW-THORNE ("THE SCALRLET LETTER", "TWICE TOLD TALES", "THE HOUSE OF THE SEVEN GABLES"), HORATIO ALGER ("RAGGED DICK" AND 118 OTHER NOVELS), HARRIET BEECHER STOWE ("UNCLE TOM'S CABIN"), THE POET EMILY DICKENSON, WHO PUT NO TITLES ON HER WORK, HERMAN MELVILLE ("MOBY DICK"), JOHN DOS PASSOS ("THE U.S.A. TRILOGY"), AND JOHN CHEEVER ("THE WAPSHOT CHRONICLE "FALCONER").

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

CONVERSATION WITH KAUFMAN (cont)

3) WE MUST CLEARLY PAINT THE PICTURE BETWEEN HAVING CONTROL AND NOT HAVING IT. WE SHOULD POINT OUT THAT HAVING RAPPAPORT IN THE SENATE MIGHT MEAN THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN BOB DOLE BEING THE MINORITY LEADER OR BEING THE MAJORITY LEADER.

4) THE BUSH CONNECTION TO MASSACHUSETTS: BUSH WAS BORN THERE, ALSO, HIS SISTER, NANCY BUSH ELLIS IS A CAMPAIGN CHAIRPERSON.

5) REGARDING C.L.T.: IT'S GOING TO LOSE, SO LET'S NOT TOUCH IT. PLUS, CAMPAIGN MANAGER SAYS ANALOGY WITH GRAHM-RUDMAN IS TOO AMBIGUOUS.

6) RAPPAPORT WILL WIN IF, ACCORDING TO KAUFMAN, HE DOES THREE THINGS:
   A. HE KEEPS PRESSURE UP ON KERRY.
   B. HE DOESN'T SELF-DESTRUCT.
   c. HE ACHIEVES THE CIRCLE OF CREDIBILITY--VOTERS MUST BE ABLE TO VISUALIZE HIM AS A SENATOR...THIS WOULD BE GREATLY HELPED BY POTUS PUTTING HIS ARM AROUND HIM IN A NON-PATERNAL FASHION...OR BETTER YET, POTUS REMARKING WHAT A GREAT TALK THEY HAD ON AIR FORCE ONE.



WELD FOR GOVERNOR

CONVERSATION WITH KAUFMAN (cont)

7) THE REASON PEOPLE DON'T LIKE KERRY:
   A. NO ONE HAS ANY STAKE IN HIM, HE'S MADE NO REAL COMMITMENT TO ANY PARTICULAR GROUP.
   B. PEOPLE BELIEVE HE'S SHALLOW, THAT HE DOESN'T CARE--CONTRAST THAT WIT RAPPAPORT, WHO HAS MORE ISSUE PAPERS ON MORE SUBJECTS THAN ANY OTHER CANDIDATE.

8) KERRY JOKE: "AS ELECTION DAY DRAWS NEAR, AS PEOPLE START PRESSING CANDIDATES ON THEIR STANDS...KERRY'S GOING TO WAKE UP IN A COLD SWEAT ONE NIGHT AND SAY...'I'M NOT RAPPAPORT.'"

9) THE TWO MOST IMPORTANT AREAS TO STRESS ABOUT WELD, ACCORDING TO CAMPAIGN MANAGER:
   A. HIS RECORD FOR ACCOMPLISHMENT AND INTEGRITY.
   B. THE NEED FOR A CHANGE IN MASSACHUSETTS. AND WELD IS WILLING TO FIGHT THE POWER STRUCTURE.

10) KAUFMAN SAYS WE MUST DISPEL THE RUMOUR THAT ANY BODY IN THE WHITE HOUSE IS FOR SILBER--SEE SILBER JOKES. PART OF THE WAY THAT WE CAN I
N DIRECTLY MAKE REFERENCE TO THE ACROSS THE BOARD UNITED FRONT AGAISNT

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

RAPPAPORT FOR SENATE

1) RAPPAPORT RECOUNTS SOME OF THE THINGS HE WILL NOT DO AS U.S. SENATOR:
-"I WILL NOT SPEND $1,041,701 A YEAR ON FREE MAIL--AS JOHN KERRY DID LAST YEAR."
-"I WILL NOT ACCEPT $56,426 IN HONORARIUMS IN JUST ONE YEAR AND KEEP ALL BUT $2,000 FOR MY OWN USE--AS JOHN KERRY DID LAST YEAR. I WILL DONATE ALL HONORARIUMS, AFTER LEGITIMATE EXPENSES, TO CHARITY."
-"I WILL NOT VOTE FOR A $12,000 PAY RAISE FOR MYSELF--AS JOHN KERRY DID LAST FEBRUARY. NOR WILL I TURN AROUND AND VOTE AGAINST A RAISE IN AN ELECTION YEAR WHILE ALSO VOTING AGAINST ETHICS RULES DESIGNED TO REDUCE PRESSURE FROM SPECIAL INTEREST GROUPS--AS JOHN KERRY DID."
-"I WILL NOT VOTE TO EXEMPT THE SENATE FROM THE SAME LAWS IT IMPOSES ON THE REST OF US."

2) RAPPAPORT: "I ALSO SUPPORT A PRESIDENTIAL LINE ITEM VETO, A TOOL CURRENTLY USED IN 43 STATES."

3) RAPPAPORT ON EDUCATION:
-"NATIONALLY, 25% OF OUR HIGH SCHOOL STUDENTS DROP OUT BEFORE GRADUATING. IN BOSTON, 40% OF STUDENTS FAIL TO GRADUATE. OF BOSTON STUDENTS WHO DO GRADUATE, 40% CANNOT READ AT AN 8-TH GRADE LEVEL."



WELD FOR GOVERNOR

RAPPAPORT FOR SENATE (cont.')

-"LOCAL FUNDING IS CRITICAL BECAUSE IT MEANS LOCAL CONTROL. THE POWER TO DECIDE SHOULD BE KEPT CLOSE TO THE CLASSROOM AND IN THE HANDS OF TEACHERS AND LOCAL SCHOOL OFFICIALS WHO BEST UNDERSTAND THE NEEDS OF THEIR OWN STUDENTS."
-"THE ABC'S OF EDUCATION REFORM: A.FOCUS ON PUBLIC ELEMENTARY AND SECONDARY SCHOOLS; B.FOCUS ON LOCAL CONTROL; C.PROVIDE ACTUAL FINANCIAL RESOURCES TO LOCAL SCHOOLS."

4) JOHN QUINLAN, CAMPAIGN DIRECTOR: "JOHN KERRY'S RECORD INCLUDES HIS OPPOSITION TO PROPOSITION 2½ AND TO THE CLT PETITION, HIS CONSISTENT SUPPORT FOR TAX INCREASES, HIS PERSONAL SPENDING OF 2 MILLION DOLLARS UNDER THE FRANKING PRIVILEGE, HIS VOTES TO EXEMPT HIMSELF AND CONGRESS FROM LAWS HE VOTES TO APPLY TO EVERYONE ELSE, HIS OPPOSITION TO A SPECIAL COUNSEL TO INVESTIGATE CONGRESS'S ROLE IN THE SAVINGS & LOAN SCANDAL, HIS PROPOSAL THAT WE GIVE SADDAM HUSSEIN 'WIGGLE ROOM' BY OFFERING CONCESSIONS ON THE WEST BANK, HIS VOTES AGAINST THE DEATH PENALTY FOR MAJOR DRUG DEALERS, AND MANY, MANY OTHER SUCH CONTROVERSIAL VIEWS...."

WELD FOR GOVERNOR

RAPPAPORT FOR SENATE

-"JIM IS NOT SURPRISED BY JOHN KERRY'S TACTICS. JIM EXPECTED THIS. THIS IS KERRY'S STYLE. WHEN HE WAS RUNNING SCARED IN 1972, HIS BROTHER WAS ARRESTED FOR BURGLARIZING HIS OPPONENT'S HEADQUARTERS. WHEN HE WAS RUNNING SCARED FROM JIM SHANNON IN 1984, HE ACCUSED SHANNON OF TAKING PAYOFFS. WHEN HE WAS RUNNING SCARED FROM RAY SHAMIE IN 1984, HE ACCUSED SHAMIE OF BEING A JOHN BIRCHER."

-"..RAPPAPORT HAS BEEN CHALLENGING--AND WILL CONTINUE TO CHALLENGE JOHN KERRY ON HIS PUBLIC RECORD--HIS SUPPORT FOR EVER HIGHER TAXES, HIS INEFFECTIVENESS IN THE SENATE, HIS ADVOCACY OF APPEASEMENT TOWARDS SADDAM HAUSSEIN AND JEOPARDIZING THE SECURITY OF ISRAEL, HIS EMBRACE OF THE MIKE DUKAKIS POLITICAL PHILOSOPHY, AND SO MANY OTHER MATTERS WHERE HE AND JIM HAVE VERY DIFFERENT VIEWS."

5) THE KERRY/DUKAKIS CONNECTION: "KERRY RAN WITH KUKAKIS IN '82," SAID QUINLAN, "KERRY SERVED COMFORTABLY WITH DUKAKIS IN '83 AND '84. HE CAMPAIGNED FOR DUKAKIS ALL ACROSS THE COUNTRY IN '87 AND '88. AND AS RECENTLY AS LAST MONTH (AUG) A KERRY SPOKESPERSON SUGGESTED THERE ARE NO IMPORTANT DISTINCTIONS BETWEEN THEM TO BE DRAWN...NOW, IN THE HEAT OF THE BATTLE, IT SEEMS THAT JOHN WOULD LIKE THE ELECTORATE TO BELIEVE HE AND DUKAKIS HARDLY KNOW EACH OTHER."

Weld for Governor
100 State Street
5th Floor
Boston, Massachusetts 02109

Biographical Information on William P. Weld

Bill Weld attended the Middlesex School in Concord, Mass., from 1956 to 1962 before entering Harvard College, where he graduated summa cum laude in 1966. A year later, he received a diploma in economics and political science, with distinction, from Oxford University. Weld graduated cum laude from Harvard Law School in 1970.

After serving as a law clerk with the state's Supreme Judicial Court for one year, Weld worked for 10 years at the Boston law firm of Hill & Barlow. In 1974, he served as associate minority counsel to the U.S. House Judiciary Committee during its Watergate impeachment inquiry. Weld was the 1978 Republican nominee for attorney general.

In 1981, Weld was named U.S. Attorney for Massachusetts by President Ronald Reagan. During Weld's five-year tenure, the office won convictions in 109 of 111 political corruption cases, imposed fines on several banks engaged in money laundering, obtained lengthy prison terms for the leaders of the Boston Mafia, and broke up an arson ring that was responsible for 306 fires in the Greater Boston area. In 1985, Weld's fellow U.S. Attorneys elected him chairman of the Attorney General's Advisory Committee of U.S. Attorneys.

Reagan brought Weld to Washington in 1986, appointing him Assistant Attorney General in charge of the Criminal Division. Emphasizing public corruption, narcotics and white-collar crime cases, Weld oversaw all federal criminal investigations in the nation. He resigned from that post in 1988 and joined the Boston law firm of Hale & Dorr, where he remains a senior partner.

Weld is 45 years old. He lives in Cambridge with his wife Susan Roosevelt, and their five children: David, [redacted] Ethel, 12, Mary [redacted], Quentin, 8, and Frances [redacted].

He is running for governor on a ticket with State Sen. Paul Cellucci of Hudson, a candidate for lieutenant governor.



SEP 19 '90 11:52

# *Bill Weld on the Issues*

## Budget and Taxes

Bill opposed the recently passed tax package. Given the state's weaken economy, he believes that the tax increase will send the economy into a tailspin.

As governor, Bill will look to make up any revenue gap by cutting duplication and inefficiency in a budget that has grown from $6 billion to more than $13 billion in the past eight years. He will cut administrative cost, consultant and purchased services accounts.

Bill supports the concept of "zero-based" budgeting, under which programs will be zero funded. Each program will then be carefully evaluated based on performance, cost effectiveness, staffing structure, duplication of services, etc.

Bill is an advocate of the type of restructuring that Peter Nessen called for in his study of purchased services, the so-called "07" account. Nessen found that by reducing the amount of paperwork generated by providers and the state, significant savings can be made. Nessen said the state needs to streamline the bureaucracy, institute component pricing, performance-based contracting and uniform financial reports. Currently a provider can be audited by many different agencies for the same program and even the same line item. Although this endless amount of paperwork is intended to insure that the taxpayer's money is not wasted, the elimination of this "micromanagement" could save hundreds of millions of dollars.

Bill has also proposed a number of fiscal restraints. These include a requirement that any revenue shortfalls during the fiscal year trigger cuts across the board, unless the legislature and governor agree on a fiscal plan to solve the problem (a "mini Gramm-Rudman"). Bill also supports requiring that revenue surpluses during any fiscal year be appropriated into a special "Rainy Day Fund," which could be used

only during fiscal emergencies. These restraints will force the state to build up reserves during good times, while avoiding damaging tax increases during bad times.

Bill has endorsed the CLT petition. He believes that only the CLT petition will force the Democrat-controlled Legislature to make the kind of cuts -- to do the kind of restructuring -- that is necessary to resolve what is really a structural deficit, and to prevent tax increases from becoming an annual occurrence.

## Jobs and the Economy

Bill feels strongly that it is essential to create an environment in the state that is pro-jobs. He will foster such a climate by streamlining the regulatory process and by providing businesses with the incentive to locate and expand in the Bay State.

Rather than taxing businesses to the point where they leave the state, Bill will work to lower or eliminate the capital gains tax for productive assets held in Massachusetts for a period of five years or more. He favors raising the existing investment tax credit for manufacturing from one to three percent, and he will work to establish a separate tax credit for research and development activities similar to that in many other states. These tax incentives will help jump start the economy by making it more attractive for businesses to locate here, to stay here, and to expand here.

Finally, Bill would work to resolve the State's current fiscal crisis (see Taxes and the Budget), which has a negative impact on the Commonwealth's business.

## Woman's Issues and Choices

Bill is a strong advocate of a woman's right to choose. He has endorsed the constitutional amendment offered by the Coalition for Choice and has promised to veto legislation restricting a woman's right to choose.

He supports removing the ban on the use of the Victims Compensation Fund for abortion counseling or services for victims of rape.

Bill also believes that we need to make child care both more accessible and affordable. He supports the Child Care Linkage Bill, which would require



SEP 19 '90 11:53

developers of commercial or industrial projects of more than 50,000 square feet to construct an on or near-site child care center. This bill will help address the issue of accessibility, while also dealing with cost by eliminating the expense of renting space. This typically makes up 25 percent of the cost of child care.

## Crime

As a former U.S. Attorney, Bill understands the importance of a strong criminal justice system. He favors the availability of the death penalty for cases of first degree murder. He is willing to convert other facilities to prison use and even to build increased prison space, but he will do so with the cooperation of cities and towns by providing incentives for communities to host a prison. Bill has promised that under the Weld Administration, prisoners will not be released because of overcrowding.

Bill, along with his unofficial running mate, state Senator Paul Cellucci, filed a tough sentencing bill earlier this year. If enacted, it will sharply reduce judicial sentencing discretion and establish mandatory prison terms for both violent and white-collar criminals. The result would be an increase in the amount of real time served by dangerous and career criminals. The proposed bill is modeled after a Federal statute enacted by Congress in 1984, and implemented by Bill in 1987 on a national basis when he was Assistant U.S. Attorney General in charge of the Justice Department's Criminal Division in Washington, D.C.

Under the legislation, parole will be eliminated. Instead of receiving parole, inmates will have their sentences reduced by one day for every week of "good time" that they serve. This will encourage good behavior in prison while removing the uncertainty and subjectivity of the parole system. Under the current system, a first-degree murderer serves and an average sentence of only seven years in the U.S., and those convicted of rape serve only three years on average. Bill considers these figures too low.

Bill supports the so-called "Boot Camp" bill, which, if passed, will establish military-style boot camps for young adult first-time offenders. Individuals convicted of a violent crime will be ineligible for the program. This type of program has been successful in other states in lowering the number of repeat offenders.



SEP 19 '90 11:54

# Environment

Bill had a strong environmental protection record as United States Attorney. He established an environmental enforcement team and brought numerous cases under the Clean Water Act, Clean Air Act, and Superfund Law. In 1985, he initiated the Federal lawsuits to force the cleanup of Boston Harbor and of New Bedford Harbor.

Bill strongly supports initiatives to preserve our vanishing open space. He supported legislation that recently established the Cape Cod Planning Commission, which will provide long-range planning in an area of the state facing strong development pressures. He also supports pending legislation to raise fees for hunting and fishing licenses, which would generate additional funds to protect wildlife habitats. This legislation is strongly supported by hunter and fishermen's groups.

Bill also supported the Recycling Initiative. The initiative would have required the packaging industry to develop packaging by 1996 that uses materials that are either recycled or recyclable. It was designed to create demand for recycled products and help reduce the six-million tons of solid waste generated in Massachusetts. The initiative provided a flexible approach that would have allowed creative industries to develop and improve solutions for our environmental problems.

Bill is supportive of efforts to protect our drinking water supplies. He supports the Watershed Protection Bill, which is designed to protect the Wachusett, Quabbin and Ware Watersheds. These provide drinking water for 2.4 million residents in Greater Boston.

Bill believes that we must strike a balance between environmental protection and over-regulation. As governor, one of Bill's priorities in the environmental area will be to find ways to simplify, speed and consolidate the permitting procedure without losing any necessary control over development.

One example of removing excessive regulations would be to speed up the permitting procedure for the cleanup of hazardous waste sites. Bill supports allowing business to begin such projects at their own risk and expense without having to apply for a permit in advance.



SEP 19 '90 11:54

Finally, Bill believes in targeted and aggressive enforcement of environmental laws. As U.S. Attorney, Bill made the enforcement of environmental law a priority. As governor, he will work to do the same.

## Education

Bill believes that a strong educational system is essential to providing young people with the skills they need to succeed. To ensure that our children have these skills, Bill supports the increased use of standardized tests in basic subjects. He also supports a state-wide examination as a prerequisite for high school seniors to graduate. The clearest and most accurate measure for a teacher's or school's success can be found in their students' test scores. These scores should be used to reward excellence as well as identify students having difficulties with their studies.

Bill will work to ensure that all towns receive their fair share of local aid, money that helps fund our schools, on a consistent and timely basis. The state's budget should not be balanced on the backs of our schools.

## Health Care

Bill believes that government has a role of assuring that all citizens have access to quality health care. He thinks that the way to make health care more accessible is to make it more affordable.

The first step in this direction will be to simplify the hospital-finance system. Bill believes that we should push the hospital finance system toward a totally prospective, case-specific, payment process. Hospitals should be spending their time worrying about delivering care, and not about retroactive reimbursement issues. There is a great deal of over-regulation, of both hospitals and doctors, in the health care industry.

We must also make efforts to ensure that our neighborhood health clinics, which for many people, are the most easily available health care providers, have the financial resources they need.



SEP 19 '90 11:55

Bill supports the concept of home care as a cost-effective way to address the health care needs of our aging population. Home care is more cost-effective and less restrictive than nursing home care.

Bill believes that the Medicaid program is an important tool in ensuring health care access. He supports efforts to move Medicaid towards a managed care program as a way of preventing cuts in services due to the skyrocketing costs of the program.

Bill is opposed to the Universal Health Care Law passed by the legislature in 1988. It would place a $1,680 per-worker tax on business, both large and small, which fail to offer their workers health insurance by 1992. He is concerned about the law's possible adverse impact on small businesses. He believes that Massachusetts should follow the lead of Connecticut in passing reforms that encourage the insurance industry to offer guaranteed issue policies to small business and their workers. The plans cannot be cancelled as a result of claims experience; rate increases are capped; and no individual can be separated from a small group because of health reasons. If enacted, these reforms, which are supported by the health insurance industry in Connecticut, will cover 65 percent of the uninsured population in Massachusetts.

The bottom line must be to ensure that all citizens have access to medical care regardless of their income.

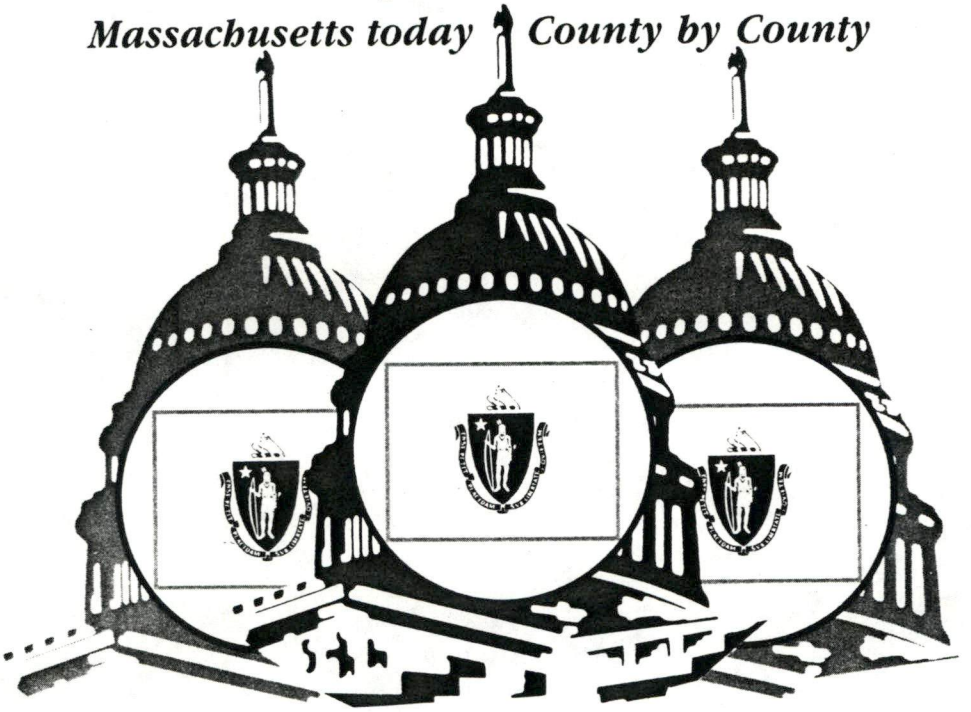


SEP 19 '90 11:55

*More Than An Almanac*

# MASSACHUSETTS FACTS

*A Comprehensive look at Massachusetts today County by County*

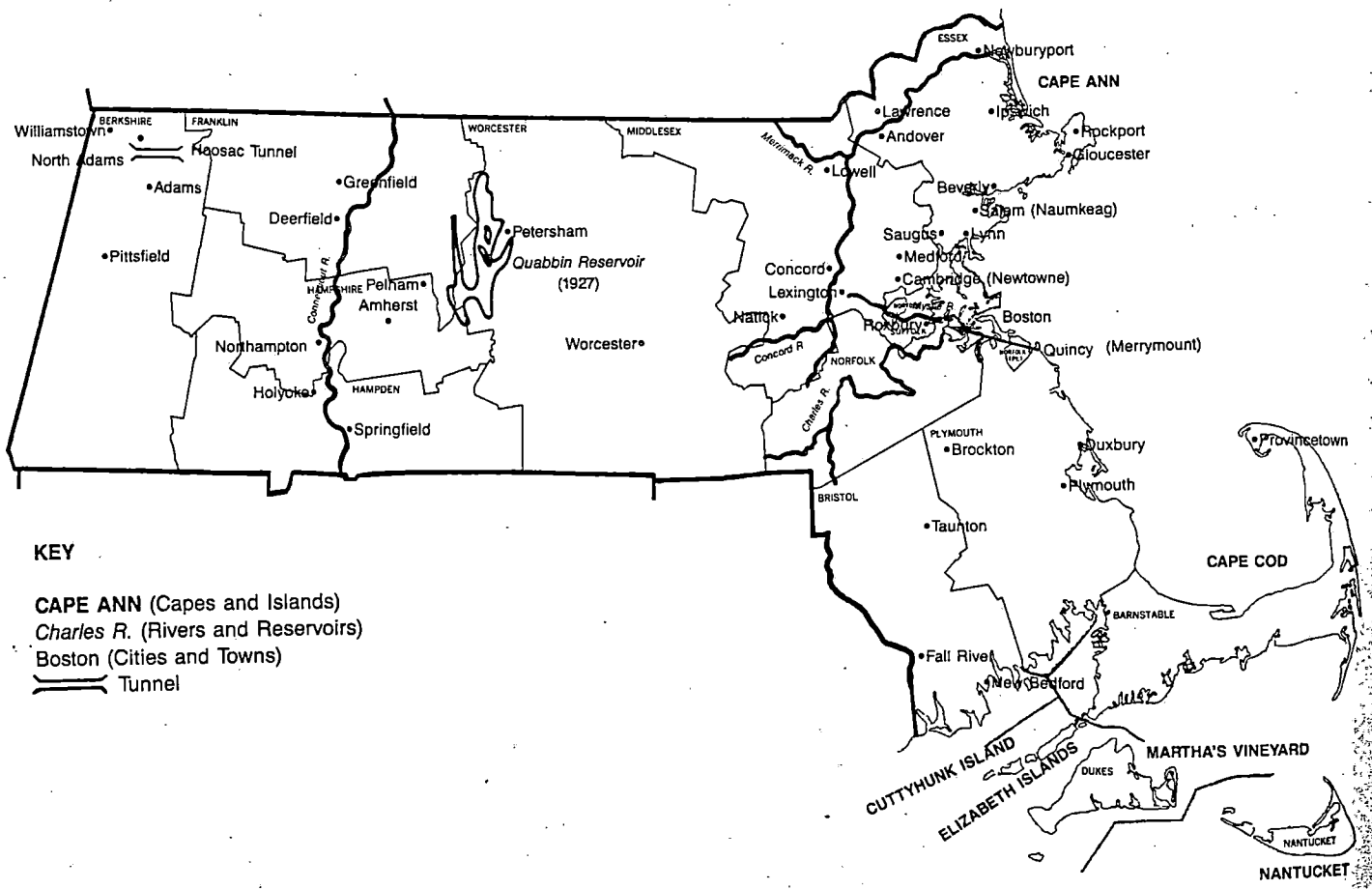


*Flying the Colors*

by
JOHN CLEMENTS

PUBLISHED BY
CLEMENTS RESEARCH, INC.
DALLAS, TEXAS

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORICAL CHART



# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

By the turn of the 16th century, a number of proud, independent, Algonquian-speaking tribes of brown-hued people had established a reasonably stable system of hostile rivalries and protected territories in the land that was to become present-day Massachusetts. However, in another century and a half, this tenacious disunity would be their undoing. On June 24, 1497, unaware of both the date and an English flag planted, probably on the coast of Newfoundland, by Venetian navigator John Cabot, these people innocently continued their semi-sedentary ways of farming, hunting, fishing and occasional fighting, ignorant of the fact that, in the eyes of the English, they now trespassed on a foreign king's land. They did not realize that, according to these foreigners' law, Cabot's visit gave foundation to England's future claim on North America east of the Rocky Mountains and north of Spanish Florida. Once themselves newly arrived conquerors, the 16th-century tribes of Massachusetts had migrated from the west, pushing pre-Algonquian people before them to the coast where those previous inhabitants disappeared either through intermarriage or obliteration. Arriving as early as 500 B.C. with a general skin tone and features strongly resembling distant Asian cousins, Algonquian tribes spread across the area now called New England and commenced a lifestyle that would make the first permanent marks upon the land. Not merely hunters, fishers and gatherers, these people were farmers and pottery makers. Families related through the female lines often gathered in villages, settling on the most fertile locations along streams and rivers, preferring the falls of the larger rivers which would one day power English textile mills. The men added to the natural meadows by clearing flat, low-lying tracts, developing a method of girdling the trees to kill them and then burning the underbrush, readying the area for the women who then planted the seeds. As the tribal property owners, holding the land in common, the women were also the planters and cultivators, nurturing hills of corn and varieties of squash which were named by the English from the Massachuset tribe's word *askootasquash* meaning "eaten raw." Present in abundance, fish were used successfully for both food and fertilizer. The women also cultivated beans, pumpkins and tobacco and gathered nuts and the plentiful, native berry varieties. Algonquian men hunted, fished and trapped. In the eastern and central regions of today's Massachusetts, deer, turkeys, geese and ducks abounded while further west, deer, wolves, bear and moose roamed the Berkshire Hills. Near the coast, shellfish were easily caught or collected but the Algonquian tribes much preferred bass, using lobsters that weighed as much as 20 pounds for bait. Beaver were prominent inhabitants of early Massachusetts and much valued for their pelts as were mink and otter. Algonquian women were adept at fashioning clothes from deer hides and beaver pelts. In order to increase the game, nurture the forest and facilitate hunting, the men set periodic forest fires which resulted in open, parklike forests canopied by tall hardwood trees. While boys were trained to hunt, they were also raised to fight. War was an accepted warp in the weave of the culture, and scalps were necessary badges of manhood. The Algonquian warrior drank the blood of his fallen enemy in order to absorb his courage. Among the Algonquian tribes that settled Massachusetts, the chief cause of warfare appears to have been territorial incursions and not the Iroquoian drive to unite and conquer.

Had the Algonquian tribes developed anything akin to the Iroquois Confederacy and had the English tarried a while longer before broaching the shores, Massachusetts' history might read differently. As it was, the matrilineal society was clannish, suspicious and independent. Upon marriage, the male entered the family of his wife through whom inheritance was passed to the children. Each clan chose a *totem*, roughly translated as "brother," which was a living creature such as a turtle, bear or wolf with whom they claimed a mystical relationship and from whom they drew their clan's name and identity. Each year, the clans gathered for religious ceremonies during which the *sachems* would meet in council. Political authority was patriarchal though the women chose the members of the council, thus wielding a certain amount of political clout. The sachems were middle-aged or elderly men who led and oversaw tribal affairs, directing warfare but leaving the actual fighting to the younger men. The leadership of the Wampanoags' grand sachem, Massasoit, would later be crucial to the survival of the Plymouth Colony. In addition to their agricultural ability and knowledge of forest management, the Algonquian people exhibited ingenuity in their invention of the birch-bark canoe and the snowshoe. They lived with their extended families in wood-framed longhouses or in dome-shaped wigwams framed by bent poles. These structures were covered with bark or hides. When local resources became depleted, a family or village merely moved their lodging downstream to another fertile area, allowing the underbrush to reclaim the cleared land. Beaver pelts led to trade among the tribes. Developing a commercial bent, the Algonquians created their own medium of exchange which they called *wampomeag* or, as the English tagged it, wampum. The tribes cut and drilled pieces from the purple and white inner surface of shells and strung them together, creating wampum belts, a medium in which the French and then the English quickly learned to deal. A number of Algonquians learned the English tongue as traders and fishermen began to frequent the rivers and shores but the Algonquian language was very complex and highly inflected and learned by few Englishmen. "Praying John" Eliot would learn the dialect of those tribes in eastern Massachusetts in order to translate the Scriptures and successfully teach Puritan ways to about 2,500 of the some 10,000 Indians populating southern New England. Being somewhat settled, agricultural, commercial, and spiritually sensitive, the Algonquian people were susceptible to Christianity and assimilated European culture better than did most Indians. Following centuries of tribal ups and downs, the European newcomers would find Wampanoags inhabiting the South Coastal Plain of Massachusetts from Cape Cod to Massachusetts Bay, maintaining control over a few small interior tribes. The Patuxets dwelt in the area marked by a rock that looked something like an over-sized potato, a typical, medium-grade glacial boulder that would soon acquire a name and eventually, fame, a canopy and a fence. The Nausets, many of whom were converted before the war of 1675, were a friendly tribe that dwelt on Cape Cod and the adjacent islands. The North Coastal Plain was claimed by the Massachuset tribe whose name would be misspelled by Captain John Smith and given to the English settlement. In the Central Uplands, the Nipmuc tribe headquartered around present-day Worcester though they also spread into Vermont, New Hampshire, Connecticut and Rhode Island.

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

The Pocumtucs claimed the most fertile stretch of land in all of New England, the Connecticut Valley, as well as roamed the game-rich, heavily forested Berkshire Hills. Some Mohicans crossed the Taconic Range from New York and settled in the valley of the Housatonic River. In northern Massachusetts, the Pennacooks were the local residents as well as allies of Maine's spirited Abnakis who were frequent raiders into Massachusetts. South in Connecticut were the only newcomers to the social system, the war-minded Pequots. Early English settlers would not have survived without the assistance of Algonquian people who later paid a high price for their friendliness to the new invaders, but the Algonquians themselves had earlier exacted a similar price from the peoples who had preceded them. Although the irrepressible march of history trampled their land, their culture and their lives, the Algonquian people played vital roles in the drama that produced today's Massachusetts. Their significant input would one day be saluted by their presence on the Commonwealth's Great Seal and their blood would run in the likes of future President Calvin Coolidge.

## EARLY EXPLORATION 1524-1619

**1524** • In the wake of John Cabot who was lost at sea on his second voyage to North America, Genoese navigator Giovanni da Verrazano reached the Hudson River in April. Realizing it could provide no passage to the Far East, he continued up the coast, also rejecting Narragansett Bay, rounded Cape Cod and ranged as far as the Strait of Belle Isle without the results desired by Francis I of France.

**NOVEMBER 17, 1558** • Elizabeth I, the Virgin Queen, took the throne and launched England on a course of expansion, destined to leave an empire to her successor, James I, though every attempt at New World colonization during her reign failed. Though welcomed by Protestant England after the reign of Catholic zealot "Bloody Mary" Tudor, Elizabeth achieved a compromised organization of the Anglican church which aroused both the Catholics and the Puritans, the latter insisting on a complete purge of Roman Catholic doctrine and ritual. The Queen strongly resisted the Calvinistic Puritan movement, preserving her creation of the Church of England while tangling with a strongly Puritan House of Commons.

**1584** • Protestant English clergyman and renowned geographer Richard Hakluyt published *The Discourse of Western Planting*, a persuasive tract for the English colonization of the New World, promoting the benefits of an outlet for a growing population as well as a growing economy, a source of raw materials, a chance to block the expansion of Catholic Spain and the opportunity to establish a seat of Protestant Christianity in the New World and deliver the Christian gospel to the Indians. It would take some 20 years for Hakluyt's propaganda to stir the hearts of Englishmen.

**1589** • Hakluyt's *The Principal Navigations, Voyages, Traffics and Discoveries of the English Nation* further fired the desires of English adventurers and prodded the pocketbooks of English financiers toward colonization. By the late 1500s, many English and French fishermen had regularly cast their nets in the waters off the coast of Massachusetts, New England and Newfoundland, trading with, teasing, and sometimes kidnapping the Indians they encountered. Some Indians were taken to England and later returned to the area. Certain ones learned smatterings of English from the European fishers and traders. The Indians' ancestors may have encountered Norsemen in the eleventh century and possibly ancient Irishmen even earlier, in the light of certain surviving legends. Whatever the case, the white settlers who would struggle ashore in 1620 would certainly not be strange sights to many of the local inhabitants.

**1602** • Bartholomew Gosnold was sponsored to explore the area referred to as Norumbega or Northern Virginia. After spending a few weeks on Cuttyhunk, the outermost island off the shoulder of Cape Cod, Gosnold christened the Cape with its present-day appellation, named the Elizabeth Islands, and sailed for the British Isles with a cargo of sassafras that clicked the lock on the merchants' pocketbooks. Sassafras was then considered a valuable and potent drug for every illness. Hakluyt was partially responsible for the later account of this voyage, the first English book to describe a portion of the Massachusetts coast.

**1603** • Convinced by the cargo of sassafras even more than by Hakluyt's persuasiveness, the merchants of Bristol, England sponsored a second voyage to Northern Virginia, outfitting Captain Martin Pring's *Discoverer.* Pring became the first Englishman on record to enter Massachusetts Bay. He spent six weeks hunting, fishing and cutting sassafras where Plymouth Colony would establish itself 17 years hence. When the local Indians behaved themselves, Pring entertained them with music, possibly from a type of zither, but when the Indians misbehaved, Pring terrified them with his fierce mastiff dogs, Foole and Gallant. Fishermen from several nations continued to ply the rich waters of the Massachusetts coast, trading for furs with the Algonquian tribes. In England, Elizabeth I died, having waited until the very last moment to designate a successor, James I.

**1604-1606** • Under the French flag, Samuel de Champlain spent several years as geographer and cartographer for Pierre de Monts' North American expedition which centered around New Brunswick and Nova Scotia. During the summers, Champlain, a devoted Catholic, explored the coasts of Maine and Massachusetts, charting the area as far south as Cape Cod and Martha's Vineyard. Champlain and his party were the first white men on official record to visit the site of present-day Boston but Champlain preferred the area to the north as it was richer in pelts. During this time, George Weymouth also explored the Massachusetts coast.

**APRIL 10, 1606** • James I jointly granted the Charter of Virginia to a group of London merchants (the Virginia Company) and to a group of Plymouth merchants (the Northern Virginia Company), including the territory from South Carolina to Maine and "from sea to sea." The charter insured all colonists and their descendants of "all liberties. . .to all intents and purposes as if they had been abiding and born within this our realm of England." England would be strongly reminded of this guarantee of English law and liberty over 150 years later.

**MAY 14, 1607** • A group of colonists under the charter of the Virginia Company and including Captain John Smith, went ashore in the New World to establish Jamestown in the area that came to be known as Virginia.

**1607-1608** • The Northern Virginia Company, led by Chief Justice Sir John Popham and Sir Ferdinando Gorges, attempted to establish a trading post on the coast of Maine,

on an island in the mouth of the Kennebec River. After facing a gruesome winter and uncooperative Indians, the group fled back to England on the relief ship that anchored in the spring of 1608. Meanwhile, James I had attempted to force England's religious Separatists to conform to the Church of England. As a result, a young Puritan of East Anglia named William Bradford went briefly to prison in 1607. As a member of a Puritan Separatist congregation in Scrooby led by William Brewster, Bradford fled in 1608 with the group across a stormy North Sea to Amsterdam. The few remaining groups of English Separatists went underground.

**1609** • The self-exiled Puritan Separatists in Amsterdam moved to the Dutch town of Leyden where the 19-year-old Bradford was chosen to be a ruling elder of the Pilgrim Church. Here the Puritan group found both religious and moral toleration in which Bradford eventually saw the danger, not of persecution, but of the dilution of his faith into a tolerant and licentious lifestyle.

**1614** • The Dutch trader Adrien Block, after exploring Manhattan, the Hudson River and Long Island Sound, sailed as far as Nahant Bay, above present-day Boston. Captain John Smith, having left Jamestown, was hired by Sir Ferdinando Gorges of the Northern Virginia Company to explore the coast of the company's lands. The island of Monhegan was the base from which he gathered data during his first voyage to New England. On a second voyage in 1615, Smith was captured for a time by a French pirate, but used the opportunity to write of the land he had surveyed.

**1616** • John Smith's *Description of New England* was published, featuring for the first time in print his new name for the area, New England, as well as the name Massachusetts for the country that was his favorite, the "Paradise of all those parts." The name, taken from the Massachuset tribe, meant "at the Great Hill" though the highest hummock in all of that tribe's territory was not over 600 feet. Smith's spelling with the extra *t* eventually became the official version. In preparing Smith's engraved map, Prince Charles agreed to these names but changed Smith's Cape Tragabigzanda to Cape Ann, named the River Charles and christened Plymouth, among other changes.

**1617** • A pestilence, possibly measles, played what could be considered a vital role in preparing the shores of Massachusetts for the Pilgrims. The disease destroyed the influence of the Massachuset tribe and destroyed all but one of the Patuxets. This one survivor, Squanto, was away during the plague, kidnapped by a European trader to be sold as a slave but ransomed by fishermen and taken to England. There he learned English before he was returned to a homeland devoid of his family and tribesmen. Other tribes were also decimated by the disease, weakening possible resistance to invaders and normally touchy territorial concerns. The act was considered providential by both Captain John Smith and later colonist, Thomas Morton. In Leyden, Brewster's Separatists were already negotiating for land in America where Bradford believed that their posterity would not be "in danger to degenerate and be corrupted." From his readings, Bradford described the new land to the elders as vast and fruitful, "unpeopled . . . [excepting] only savage and brutish men which range up and down, little otherwise than wild beasts."

**1619** • Having grown reluctantly pessimistic about American gold resources, the Virginia Company turned to selling land to companies for agricultural settlement. While Separatist William Bradford promoted America, Separatist leader William Brewster was arrested by Leyden authorities cooperating with the English ambassador who charged Brewster with distributing illegal religious tracts in England. Brewster escaped to, of all places, London where he negotiated with the "materialistic" and "imperialistic" Virginia Company for land near the Hudson River, a place prime for Puritan settlement. Brewster obtained a patent for his Separatist group through Sir Edwin Sandys. The "particular plantation" had not been settled by the Dutch who were actively trading in the area that would soon be known as New Amsterdam. Though William Bradford had prospered in Leyden, and was quite comfortable, the Puritan group was modest in its means and not able to raise the necessary financing for such an undertaking. Thus, Brewster and Bradford were forced to rely on a group of unscrupulous moneylenders in London, submitting at that time to seven years of usurious debt.

## UNDER THE FLAG OF ENGLAND 1620-1776

**1620** • Only 35 of the 240 Leyden Puritans were sufficiently motivated to brave the journey to America. Most chose to remain in their present exile, as the church's pastor, John Robinson, elected to remain with them. William Brewster and William Bradford were among the 35 who chose to go and were joined in London by 40 more Separatists from that city as well as a number of other English, bringing the group to just over 100 persons. General circumstances in England had improved to the point that, at this time, most citizens saw no reason to leave their homeland.

**SEPTEMBER 16, 1620** • Delays and the leaky *Speedwell* caused the determined group of "pilgrims" to cast off from Plymouth, England, late in the year in only one vessel, the *Mayflower,* which now faced the stormy, autumn Atlantic alone. In mid-crossing, a main timber buckled but the ingenuity of the ship's carpenter allowed him to rerig the ship and save the day. Bradford's wife was aboard but the couple's young son had been left in Leyden. The journey was long and arduous due to the late autumn weather which led to quarrels, complaints and many weakened conditions.

**NOVEMBER 9, 1620** • The ship's crew sighted land but the company knew, from the available charts and accounts, that this was Gosnold's and Smith's Cape Cod and not the harbor that led to the Hudson River. After nine weeks at sea and now in the throes of winter, the group was over 200 miles northeast of its intended destination and official patent, and out of the jurisdiction of the Virginia Company's charter.

**NOVEMBER 11, 1620** • Due to the calmest winter the area would see for many years, the ship was able to round the rocky shoals of Cape Cod and find harbor at present-day Provincetown. As they were not where they intended to be, the 41 yet-healthy men thought it legally necessary to compose *The Mayflower Compact* in order to silence mutinous talk (particularly among those not of the faith), and establish organization and civil authority. According to their ideals, the pact was signed only by Separatists, though agreed to by all. Government by the consent of the governed was therefore established before they ever went ashore. The next three weeks were spent exploring Cape Cod to find a place that might best sustain them.

**DECEMBER 8, 1620** • The exploring party, which included

Bradford, crossed Cape Cod Bay to Plymouth Bay, arriving in a snowstorm which forced them to spend two days on an island.

**DECEMBER 11, 1620** • The party came ashore at Plymouth (already named so by Prince Charles and Captain Smith and marked by a peculiar rock) and, after some exploration, decided that this was the best place they had found at which to survive the winter. Meanwhile, Bradford's wife, Dorothy, drowned after "accidently falling overboard." Her circumstances may have driven her to suicide.

**DECEMBER 21, 1620** • The task of going ashore and unloading the *Mayflower* was difficult and long, due to few boats and the uncooperative weather. The first act of the new "civil body politic" was to choose John Carver, one of the Separatists, as governor for that year.

**JANUARY 14, 1621** • The community house which the group had managed to erect burned, driving some back to the *Mayflower* for shelter. Scurvy and other diseases set in as did ever-worsening weather, causing the ship to remain at the colony as both seamen and settlers began to die.

**JANUARY-FEBRUARY 1621** • Fully half of the 102 Pilgrims would be secretly buried at night in camouflaged graves so as not to alert the Indians. Of the 24 heads of families, 13 were lost as were 20 of the 24 mothers. Only six or seven persons remained able to care for the ill and dying. Bradford was among the ill while William Brewster and Captain Myles Standish were among the healthy. Bradford later saluted the unselfish, daily sacrifice of the caring brethren who gave such great evidence of their faith, sparing "no pain night or day," performing such "homely and necessary offices for them which dainty and queasy stomachs cannot endure to hear named; and all this willingly and cheerfully. . . showing herein their true love unto their friends and brethren. . . ." Known as a soldier of great strength, Standish was elected by popular vote to be the group's captain in a meeting held in the newly erected community house.

**MARCH 16, 1621** • Spring restored the health of those still alive who now turned to the necessities of houses and crops. Indians had only skulked about, Bradford wrote, and had stolen some tools but on this day, one strode boldly into the settlement and delivered a dramatic "Welcome, Englishmen," using the words and phrases he had learned from English fishermen in the "eastern parts" (Maine) where he lived. Samoset was able to acquaint the Pilgrims with the land and people of Maine as well as the immediate surroundings. Samoset later returned with five Indians and the stolen tools, also preparing the colonists for a visit from the great sachem of the Wampanoag tribe, Massasoit. The sachem and his entourage arrived some four or five days later bringing Squanto, the orphaned Patuxet. The Pilgrims had landed in the territory of the small tribe wiped out by disease, allowing a friendship and formal alliance to be easily formed with Massasoit whose territory had not been violated. Squanto remained with the Pilgrims until his death, teaching these former town laborers to plant corn, using fish for fertilizer. He showed them where and how to fish and what to gather, being as Bradford noted, a "special instrument sent of God for their good beyond their expectation."

**APRIL 5, 1621** • The *Mayflower* finally set sail for England, leaving every survivor by his or her own choice to challenge the new land and build a settlement and a society "in the purity of the faith." [In contrast to the Roman Catholic Church, these Puritans believed they had no intermediary between themselves and God the Father, save Christ Himself; they met God face-to-face and wanted only the Bible as their rule of faith and practice for what they believed should be an independent and autonomous church congregation. As *Separatists,* these believers totally spurned the Church of England (Anglican) which, they said, still retained certain Catholic rituals and beliefs. *Non-conformist* Puritans wished to separate themselves only from the errors they saw in the Church of England and not from the Church itself. *Conformist* Puritans outwardly conformed to the rituals retained by the Church of England, though the degree of conformity varied, all the while going out of their way, often risking punishment, to hear meaty sermons of reformed doctrine. As in all human affairs, there existed various degrees of, and between, the extremes of Anglican and Separatist, though all were called Protestants.] Later the same month, Governor John Carver suffered a stroke while working in the fields on a hot day, dying a few days later, soon followed by his frail wife. William Bradford was chosen as his replacement even though Bradford was still very weak after approaching death during the winter. Bradford's steadfast wisdom, ability and kindly nature were such that he was reelected almost every year for over 30 years.

**MAY 12, 1621** • The first marriage in the colony was performed, being carried out as a civil ceremony by the magistrate. Following the laws of Holland where they had so long sojourned, the Pilgrims established the practice among the New England churches of the civil ceremony in conjunction with, or apart from, religious beliefs, a major concern being the legalities of inheritances.

**JUNE 1621** • The *Mayflower,* having landed in England, made known the need for a new patent, bringing news of a sorely tried Plymouth Colony and not the expected settlement in the rich and fertile Hudson River area. The Northern Virginia Company had meanwhile been reorganized as the Council for New England and issued to the colony the second Pierce Patent. The land would be owned jointly by the colonists and the company. Each settler received 100 acres with 1,500 acres set aside for public use. An annual quit-rent of two shillings per acre was required of the colony after seven years. In addition, the Pilgrims still owned their debt to the London merchants. In the same month, a group of 50 ambitious Englishmen led by Andrew Weston landed at Plymouth, boasting of what they would accomplish. Moving north to Wessagusset (Weymouth Shore), they attempted to establish a fishing and trading post but by 1623 had failed miserably, due mainly to poor management and their own excesses. In wretched condition, they died or scattered.

**JULY 1621** • An expedition was sent to visit Massasoit who lived some 40 miles away. The Wampanoags had also lost thousands to the 1617 plague, and bones still lay where the victims' dwellings had been. The Pilgrims learned of the strong Narragansett tribe across the bay to the west, untouched by the pestilience, and made peace with the Nauset tribe of Cape Cod.

**OCTOBER 1621** • Governor Bradford organized a great feast of thanksgiving to mark the Pilgrims' year of survival and "the plenty with which they had been blessed" during the year. Inaugurating a tradition that would endure and grace our far-removed technological age, the Pilgrims fed and

entertained their Indian friend Massasoit and some 90 of his tribesmen for three days. The guests reciprocated with five slain deer. The colonists rejoiced in their God though they still mourned their many losses.

**NOVEMBER 1621** • The small ship *Fortune* arrived unexpectedly with a Mr. Cushman and 35 colonists, most of whom were brash and adventurous young men. They were a welcome addition to the strength of the colony even though they came inadequately prepared and low on provisions. The Plymouth brethren learned from the beginning to take in and to peacefully coexist with many who were not of the faith and moral character that they would otherwise prefer as the strength of the community was vital to everyone's survival. But they also maintained their exclusive attitude, deporting any who seriously challenged Separatist control.

**DECEMBER 1621** • A challenge from the Narragansett tribe to the new, unwelcome allies of the Wampanoags caused the Pilgrims to fortify their village. From necessity and because they thought it to be a Popish holiday, the Pilgrims worked on Christmas Day. Some claiming it a matter of conscience to stay home were later discovered by Bradford to be playing games in the street. The governor explained that it was against his conscience that some should play while others worked, nipping the rebellion in the bud. Christmas was banned in Plymouth as late as 1840.

**1622** • In a year of struggle against the elements, colonists knew hunger but not starvation. They still managed to build a fort with good timber, wrote Bradford, spurred on by rumors of the Narragansetts and the news, brought by a ship from Virginia, of the Indian massacre that nearly destroyed that Southern colony. In this second year, the ship *Fortune* returned and, loaded with the year's yield of furs and produce for the financial benefit of the merchant creditors, cast off only to be captured by the French, to the great chagrin of the Plymouth community.

**1623** • Myles Standish successfully conducted the first organized war against the Indians who had been stirred to form a conspiracy against the English by the behavior of Andrew Weston's men (see June 1621) and other trouble-makers among the colonists. It was another lean year but boats came over from England every season. Some 200 or more Separatists would join the group on four different ships. This year, a boat brought Alice Southworth of the Leyden church with her two young sons. Soon after her arrival, she and Bradford were married. They later had three children of their own who were part of a new generation, unfamiliar with England and knowing nothing but the life of an American colonist. Meanwhile, in England, a group of wealthy merchants formed the Dorchester Company of Adventurers, of whom the less-radical Puritan conformist clergyman John White was prominent. Another member was Mistress Elizabeth Poole of Taunton, Somerset, who later founded Taunton, Massachusetts. With a patent from the Council of New England, a group of fishermen and planters took the *Fellowship* to Cape Ann where they constructed a house and fishing stage at Stage Fort Point. In September, Robert Gorges, son of Sir Ferdinando Gorges, futilely attempted to revive Weston's post at Wessagusset. Sometime during the year, non-Separatist Roger Conant and his wife arrived in Plymouth.

**1624** • Plymouth colonists, tired of their "common course and condition," convinced Bradford to end the annual practice of drawing for plots of land and, instead, to grant permanent allotments. Later expanded, the new practice spurred colonists to work harder and produce more as they were assured of enjoying the fruits of their own labors. In July, when a fierce drought threatened to destroy the crops, the colonists were driven to "seek the Lord in humble and fervent prayer," according to Bradford, "and He was pleased to give them a gracious and speedy answer, both to their own and the Indians' admiration that lived among them." The gentle rains came and stayed so that, as Bradford wrote, "instead of famine now God gave them plenty. . . so as any general want or famine has not been among them since to this day (1644)." Excluded by the Separatist Pilgrims, a disgruntled Roger Conant drew a number of non-Separatists to himself and removed up the coast to found Nantasket.

**1625** • In England, Charles I succeeded the wildly extravagant and scandalous James I whose reign had encouraged a rampage of the rich and opportunistic, unsettling the balance of the economy. Now Charles gave ear to the highly ritualistic, anti-Puritan, Anglican Bishop William Laud. Those Puritans who had wished to reform England and its Church from within began to lose hope. Bradford wrote friends in his homeland that the colonists had "never felt the sweetness of the country till this year." Roger Conant was summoned from Nantasket to Cape Ann to manage the floundering outpost, followed by his loyal group of non-separatist Puritans. Having unknowingly acquired a scurrilous title to a part of Cape Ann, the Plymouth residents commenced building in the area a fishing stage of their own which was seized by the Cape Ann interests. Captain Myles Standish almost fought the group but Conant cooled the soldier's temper by offering to build a new fishing stage for the Pilgrims. Hostilities continued to build between the Separatists and non-Separatists. The same year, Captain Wollaston founded a colony at Passonagessit. Among the colonists was Anglican Thomas Morton who would change Mount Wollaston to Merrymount and cause grave concern among settlements from Maine to Nantasket.

**1626** • The very first joint-stock corporation in America was formed by the Plymouth brethren when they arranged with their London merchants to buy out the company's interest and pay off the colony's debts. A total of 53 men in the colony agreed to own Plymouth's assets as well as its debts, dividing the land and livestock among them. Every colonist was issued one share in the community. The agreed to pay £200 each year for nine years beginning in 1628 plus another £600 in debts. Bradford and seven others formed a partnership, calling themselves the "undertakers," to manage (with the colonists' consent) the colony's trading activities in order to pay off the formidable sum. The merchants cheated the colonists, altering the books and collecting far more than they were owed. The agreement led the colonists to aggressively establish more trading posts, venturing into Maine along the Kenebec and Penobscot Rivers. In the autumn, Roger Conant led the remnant of the Cape Ann expedition, some 20 to 30 persons, down the coast to a place the Indians called Naumkeag, where a number of rivers formed a safe harbor and good farmland was close by. Soon to be known as the Old Planters, these were the hardy souls who declined the dissolved Dorchester Company's offer of return passage to England. Meanwhile in England, the undaunted clergymen John White and John Conant actively looked for new settlers and capital.

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

**MARCH 19, 1628** • White and Conant succeeded in forming the New England Company, a group dominated by gentry rather than merchants, who were interested more in true colonization than in trading ventures. The company obtained a patent that stretched from three miles north of the Merrimack River to three miles south of the Charles River. Desiring discipline, piety and order but not Separatism, these Puritan investors chose the soldier Captain John Endecott as governor of the new plantation.

**JUNE 1628** • Following the departure of Captain Wollaston, Thomas Morton had spent the last few years leading infamous revelries, including lusty and scandalous May Pole celebrations, at Merrymount (Quincy). Though repulsive to the Puritans, these antics would probably have been ignored had Morton not trafficked in guns and liquor with the Indians. This matter was one of peace and survival to every colony from Maine to Nantasket and all, Puritan or no, insisted that the Pilgrims arrest and expel the villian, a task which was efficiently and bravely carried out by Myles Standish. On the 20th of the month, Captain Endecott set out from England on the *Abigail* with some 50 settlers, of whom only a quarter were adult males.

**SEPTEMBER 6, 1628** • Endecott's group arrived at Naumkeag, greeted by the suspicious Old Planters who feared a band of exclusion-minded Separatists. Endecott had been instructed to include the Old Planters in all privileges and profits and to treat them as equals. Men had only to be peaceable, cooperative and honest to be fully included in this new community though the vision was for a Puritan society. The covenant between the two groups was commemorated by renaming the settlement Salem, or "peace," though the Old Planters were given an inferior area on the Bass River which later became the township of Beverly. Their "great house," houses and garden plots were appropriated by the newcomers.

**WINTER, 1628-1629** • Plymouth physician Samuel Fuller, called to Salem to treat an outbreak of scurvy, engaged in long conversations with Endecott, convincing him that Congregationalism was the only church government taught in the Scriptures.

**MARCH 2, 1629** • As the Parliament had grown heavily Puritan, Charles I dissolved the last Parliament to meet for 11 years, believing in his divine right to rule without it and intent on enforcing the uniformity in both state and church that he thought would stabilize the country. His later arrangement of a forced loan without Parliament's consent raised the issue of taxation without representation in England. The pressure on English Puritans to conform intensified as part of the makings of the English Civil War of 1642.

**MARCH 4, 1629** • The Council of New England made a sub-grant, passing the seals to the New England Company which was royally chartered as the "Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England." Matthew Craddock was named as the "first and present governor" over an 18-member Board of Assistants. The stockholders of the company were referred to as freemen who, as the General Court, possessed supreme legislative power and annually elected all officers.

**APRIL-MAY 1629** • Some 300 Puritan colonists recruited from all over England and yearning for the freedom of a Puritan-controlled New England, left in the *Talbot*, the *Lion's Whelp* and the *George Bonaventure*, with two additional ships, bound for Salem. Aboard the *Talbot* was the non-conformist minister Francis Higginson who, soon to be summoned before the Court of High Commission to answer for his non-conformist behavior, readily accepted the offer to serve in Salem extended by the Massachusetts Bay Company. The party also included the non-conformist minister Samuel Skelton, Separatist minister Ralph Smith and conformist Francis Bright, who, as a protege of John White, sailed with the some 40 persons from Dorchester. Also in the group were about 35 Separatists from the Leyden Congregation destined to join their brethren in Plymouth.

**JUNE 1629** • While 200 of the newly arrived settlers swelled the population of Salem, 100 of their number were sent south to settle Charlestown in order to establish firm claim to Massachusetts Bay.

**JULY 20, 1629** • Thirty heads of Salem families, probably also the social and economic leaders, formed the covenant for the First Church of Salem and chose, by ballot, Skelton for their pastor and Higginson for their teacher, as both wished to be formally called by the congregation. About a week later, the men were ordained through the laying on of hands by the laymen.

**AUGUST 6, 1629** • Salem's deacons and elders were chosen and ordained. All three acts thus conducted by the church leaders were foreign to the doctrine of the Church of England but foundational to Congregationalist or Separatist practices. Governor Bradford and William Brewster arrived by boat just after the ceremony to fellowship with their Puritan brethren. Such fellowship usually included the temperate enjoyment of beer and Madiera as Puritans were advocates of moderation and self-control, not prohibition. The Separatist minister Ralph Smith would soon migrate to Plymouth and, the following year, conformist Francis Bright would return to England. The Salem church still firmly denied any intent of Separatism though any Anglicans not agreeable to the Salem church were to be barred from the sacraments. Congregationalism gave the laity control of the church, all church members having equal say, one congregation autonomous from the rest. This practice flourished in the free air of New England and was adopted by all the early churches of Massachusetts Bay. Puritan churches differed, though, in the measure of strictness used to define a church member.

**JULY-SEPTEMBER 1629** • John and Samuel Browne, original patentees of the Company and members of Endecott's council, actively protested what they called Separatism in the Salem colony and gathered a faction to read their service from the Anglican Book of Common Prayer. Determining the division to be dangerous to the colony, Endecott expelled these important members of the Company who, arriving in England, agreed not to publicly complain after return of their investment. The Company, embarrassed at the charges of Separatism in the colony and fearing the loss of their charter, cautioned Endecott.

**AUGUST 26, 1629** • In England, middle-class squire John Winthrop, having lost his attorneyship because he was a conformist Puritan, joined a group of gentry at Cambridge who pledged their emigration to New England provided the charter and the government of the colony be transferred to them. No charter had ever left the country before but the action, they believed, would prevent its revocation by a whim of the King. This agreement plus the charter became the basis

Xerox from JohnWinthrop

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

for the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

**FEBRUARY-JUNE 1630** • Fourteen ships, three more to follow, embarked with 1,000 Puritans and their servants for the coast of New England, an adventure "entirely without precedent in the modern world" as Arthur Percival Newton would later write. These immigrants were generally middle-aged, middle-class families with the means to finance their own journey, free from debt to merchant investors, and intending to establish not a colony but a commonwealth. Other lands in the New World, from New Amsterdam and Virginia to the Barbados, offered richer material rewards, a friendlier climate and an easier life but only Massachusetts offered the "New England Way" of Congregationalism and the opportunity to establish a pious, Puritan lifestyle while earning a respectable living in a stern but honest land. Winthrop, charter in hand, preached to the faithful on board the *Arbella* that their immediate object was to seek out a new home "under a due form of Government both civil and ecclesiastical . . . for we are entered into a covenant" with God "for this work." As they went to build a "city upon a hill," Winthrop, with unusual historical insight, realized that the eyes of all people would be upon them. Winthrop had replaced Matthew Craddock as governor of the "Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England," as Craddock could not make the voyage.

**MAY 1630** • The rest of the Leyden Separatists who took passage with the first of the Great Emigration arrived in Plymouth where their gracious brethren paid their passage debts and then maintained them for up to 18 months until the newcomers brought in their own crops. Most Plymouth settlers who undertook this hardship had never known the new immigrants. As the debt was never demanded and never repaid, Bradford later wrote of the generous episode, saying it must have been the "special work and hand of God." Still the population of the humble settlement was estimated at only some 300 persons.

**JUNE 12, 1630** • John Winthrop replaced John Endecott as Governor of the new Commonwealth of Ma
the *Arbella* made Salem's harbor. The new co
Salem in a "sad and unexpected condition, a
them being dead the winter before," wrote Th
"and many of those alive weak and sick." As
deputy governor and his board of only nine
explored the entire area, they decided that the
the coast from Salem at Shawmut was the
the center of population and government. The
town the temporary capital until Newto
established. Reverend Skelton of the Salem c
new arrivals communion in the church
professed Puritans, they were not members
church. This was a severe change from Sale
for fellowship which required only a gene
the gospel and good intentions toward
community. This event plus the poor cond
community probably contributed to Wint
remove to the bay at Shawmut (Trimountai
underscored the importance that the concept of the covenant was to play in New England's theology and its social and political theory.

**AUGUST 23, 1630** • The first Court of Assistants, consisting of half the legal number of 18, was held on the soil of Massachusetts at Charlestown with the first item of business requiring the provision of houses and income for the two ministers. The Court also decided to appoint six of its nine members as judges, assuming judicial power for the colony. Though Winthrop desperately wanted to hold the community under a tight rein for reasons of government and security (late-coming ships brought rumors that the French might attack), the families fanned out around the Bay in search of good farmland, settling at Dorchester, Rocksbury (Roxbury), Lynn, Medford and Watertown. By necessity, they would each set up their own local government and establish their own Puritan church, relying on their knowledge of English borough, manor and open-field customs. Reverend Higginson of Salem, having been taken mortally ill during the winter, died unable to temper Skelton's strict course. Meanwhile, the first execution in Plymouth took place in 1630, sometime after the arrival in Salem of Winthrop, who advised his Plymouth brethern to hang the unbelieving troublemaker and now murderer, John Billington.

**SEPTEMBER 7, 1630** • Shawmut (Trimountaine) was ordered by the assistants to be called henceforth Boston which was the site of the first General Court meeting the following month due to the lack of fresh water at Charlestown.

Day in Hist

**OCTOBER 19, 1630** • At the General Court in Boston, Winthrop and the other leaders decided that, in violation of the charter, the assistants would annually elect, out of their own number, the governor and deputy governor. The charter limited government to the freemen (company stockholders) but about 100 old and new planters came to the meeting and demanded the franchise. Winthrop realized that this wish would have to be gratified (though he would wait until the following May), especially as the only freemen of the Company who had crossed the Atlantic were also assistants. For the Massachusetts Bay Colony, the transfer and possession of their own charter created a real independence from England. Massachusetts had no royal governor, no English army garrison and no agent of Parliament. The colony would
tern for the development of American government.
l Court established the
sacrificially though some p
Winthrop, who lost his son Henry, gave away much
food. Some 200 died and about 100 returned to England, a number of them dying on the way. These departed, said

- list - check yes
September
Has always
been a historic
month for MA !!!
& this Sept 8(?)
6(?)
the people of MA
will make history
again

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

Thomas Dudley, "partly out of dislike of our government which restrained and punished their excesses, and partly through fear of famine. . .."

**FEBRUARY 1631** • The *Lion,* sent away for provisions, returned well-stocked with food and lemon juice to cure the scurvy, inspiring a February thanksgiving day.

**MAY 18, 1631** • In the annual spring election, Winthrop was once again elected governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He proposed to the General Court the adoption of an oath of fidelity to the Company and its officers to be taken by the newly enfranchised freemen. The idea was accepted. Then Winthrop proposed that, in the future, only communicant members of the churches in the colony be allowed to vote as freemen and this was also instituted. For the first four years of the colony, the Board of Assistants took for itself all legislative, executive and judicial powers. But the religious restrictions they imposed did not exclude on the basis of wealth or social standing, cutting through the community vertically rather than horizontally. The magistrates were completely in charge of allotting lands and approving new towns. Unlike other colonies, they completely avoided making any feudal grants. Each town had a head constable as well as a tithingman who was responsible for church business and attendance on Sunday. Other town officers often included a town clerk, a treasurer and surveyors of highways. "Blue laws" would be passed that would require church attendance, regulate the observance of the Sabbath and specify standards of individual conduct.

**NOVEMBER 4, 1631** • John Winthrop, Jr. arrived in Massachusetts Bay from England with his young wife. The year also saw the arrival of the Reverends Thomas Hooker, John Eliot and Roger Williams. Williams, a Separatist, rejected the views held at Boston and went to Salem, then to Plymouth. This same year, Myles Standish and John Alden founded Duxbury while Governor John Winthrop launched the first Massachusetts-built ship from the new yard at Medford on the Mystic River. The ship was called *The Blessing of the Bay.*

**SPRING, 1632** • The General Court at Massachusetts Bay was forced to allow freemen to elect the governor and deputy governor. Heretofore, the freemen had only elected the assistants.

**SPRING, 1633** • In Plymouth, Governor Bradford was replaced by Edward Winslow. In Massachusetts Bay, cloth prices were regulated, manufacturing (in the homes) was subsidized and skilled weavers were brought over from the British Isles. Cottage industries started in the Puritan colonies while the necessary self-sufficiency also gave rise to the New England "Jack-of-all-trades." While the rest of America would learn to think big, New England retained its comfortable belief that a thing of small size might have a large effect. This same year, John Winthrop, Jr. helped found Ipswich and the Reverend John Cotton arrived in Boston.

**OCTOBER 8, 1633** • Probably the oldest "home rule" document in American institutional history became part of the Dorchester town records, the oldest known town records in the state, as the provisions for a town meeting were agreed to by "the whole consent and vote of the Plantation." This was also the first known written reference to selectmen (though they were not called that until later), the first elected town officials.

**1634** • Thomas Dudley was elected governor of Massachusetts Bay in protest of John Cotton's election sermon supporting the "sacred stewardship" of the magistrates. Thomas Prince took the office in Plymouth. The Boston Latin School, America's first secondary school, was established with a classical curriculum derived from the English schools.

**MAY 14, 1634** • As the colony spread out and the number of freemen grew, it became necessary to elect representatives called "deputies." On this day, the General Court approved an oath for the new deputies and all freemen of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, requiring allegiance to the government. The freemen promised to preserve all privileges and liberties and vote responsibly for the common good. This came about from the freemen's insistence on seeing the charter which had promised legislative power to the freemen. As a result, the General Court now consisted of magistrates (the assistants) and a body of freemen who wished to make their presence felt as part of a unicameral body, especially since the magistrates had recently levied a tax without any representative input. The representative freemen (deputies) pushed through three basic resolutions which vested the entire General Court, and not merely the magistrates, with the power to choose and admit freemen; the power to make laws, to elect or appoint officers; and the power to levy taxes and dispose of all lands. Every freeman still had a voice in annual elections though only the elected deputies attended General Court. Subsequently, the magistrates would try to outweigh the freemen, acting in the manner of an upper house by claiming a negative voice or veto. This same year, King Charles demanded the return of the charter from Massachusetts Bay but Winthrop mounted the ordinance at Cambridge, ordered a beacon constructed on Beacon Hill as a warning device and readied the militia. Meanwhile, Winthrop's son lost both his wife and young daughter. During the year, the General Court passed the state's first official highway regulations.

**SPRING, 1635** • In the annual elections, John Haynes replaced Thomas Dudley as governor of Massachusetts Bay while William Bradford once again claimed the office at Plymouth. Some 2,000 colonists a year, mostly Puritans running from the developments in England, arrived in Massachusetts as the Great Emigration continued. John Winthrop, Jr. became colonial agent for English lands along the Connecticut River and Reverend Thomas Hooker, dissatisfied with John Cotton's leadership as teacher in the First Church of Boston, led his own group of followers to establish Hartford, Connecticut. Settlers continued to fan out into the Connecticut River Valley, Maine and Long Island Sound. New England Puritans would settle most of eastern Long Island. The freemen gained the right to use secret paper ballots and Roger Williams, having returned to Salem's church in 1633, called for absolute Separatism directed at the Anglicans as well as absolute separation of church and state, directed at the Puritan leaders. He would become an Anabaptist as he also spoke out against infant baptism.

**SEPTEMBER 13, 1635** • The General Court banished Roger Williams from the colony though he was allowed to remain until the end of winter when he left to found a settlement on the Narragansett Bay in what would become Rhode Island.

**MARCH 3, 1636** • In a momentous meeting of the General Court at Newtowne (Cambridge), the body set forth the basic requirements for local town governments, that they may

choose their own officers, order their own affairs and dispose of their own property, laying out a decentralized, federal, secular constitution for the colony. This was the first grant of local self-government in America. To enhance the power of the magistrates, conservatives guided the General Court to appoint a standing council, with vague powers granted for life, made up of Winthrop, Dudley and Endecott. They also set up the Quarterly Court system to meet in Ipswich, Salem, Newtowne, and Boston, presided over by locally resident magistrates and elected commissioners. The formation of churches was also regulated to preserve religious unity.

**SPRING 1636** • In Plymouth, Edward Winslow was once again chosen as governor while, in Massachusetts Bay, 23-year-old newcomer, Henry Vane was elected to the post. Boston had become the center of a doctrinal disagreement called the Antinomian controversy which was later labeled the first and worst internal conflict in the colony's history. Boston resident Anne Hutchinson held regular discussions in her home, accusing Reverend John Wilson of the Boston Church as well as others of preaching salvation by works. Mistress Hutchinson also claimed direct, personal revelation from God and "prophesied" her enlightenments to a growing group of followers. Many local leaders considered this a serious form of heresy as they held the Bible to be the complete revelation of God, to which nothing could be added. They also believed that the Hutchinsonians were interpreting the "covenant of grace" as "license," teaching that the individual convinced of his salvation by a personal revelation was free to do anything he liked without sin. Not only was the movement promoting what the Puritan leaders saw as religious heresy, but it was also threatening what they considered to be a community founded on cooperation and obedience to God's laws, as interpreted and even legislated by the spiritual and governmental leaders as part of a common faith and practice of worship. Mistress Hutchinson also campaigned for the removal of Wilson who should then, she said, be replaced by her brother-in-law, Reverend John Wheelwright, who was calling the Boston clergy "antichrists." The movement was popular among the townspeople and church members and was defended and supported by Governor Vane and Reverend John Cotton. It was strongly opposed by Winthrop and most of the magistrates and clergy.

**OCTOBER 28, 1636** • The General Court of Massachusetts Bay granted £400 for the establishment of a college. Education was of vital importance to the Puritan way of life and thinking, as the study of the Bible required both a scholarly, learned clergy and a literate, disciplined congregation. Also about this time, in Plymouth, a document known as the General Fundamentals was drawn up which enumerated the same basic tenets of the later Bill of Rights, formalizing the classic safeguards of English liberty. This would be followed in a few years by Massachusetts' Body of Liberties. In Massachusetts, the first wool-processing mill was built in Rowley and the Fairbanks House was sturdily framed with oak in Dedham. Still standing, this house is the oldest frame dwelling in America.

**MAY 1637** • In Plymouth, the community agreeably elected William Bradford their governor once more. But in Massachusetts Bay, the populace was divided into "blue coats" (Vane and the insurgent movement) and "white coats" (Winthrop and the conservatives). Excitable and contentious on this election day, the crowd listened to inflammatory speeches and occasionally erupted into minor scuffles. The election itself was removed wisely from Boston to Cambridge where Winthrop won the day. The disgusted Henry Vane returned to England.

**MAY 26, 1637** • The Pequot War began a few days following the election. Colonization of the Connecticut River had incensed the warlike and ambitious Pequots who had tried to convince the Narragansetts to join them against the English. The Narragansetts held too many grudges against the Pequots and chose to join the English in order to obtain revenge and humiliate their enemy. Captain John Mason and John Underhill led a group of Massachusetts Bay colonists who, with the aid of the Narragansetts, surprised and trapped the main body of Pequots in one of their own forts. The fort was burned and some 600 or 700 Indians died. Most of the remaining Pequots submitted themselves to Uncas, chief sachem of the Mohegans who were at peace with the English.

**JULY 1637** • The Pequot War ended, never requiring the aid of the 50 volunteers at Plymouth. During this year, Duxbury and Taunton received status as towns. Taunton was settled from Boston while Duxbury was accepted officially but regretfully as a town by the Plymouth General Court. It saddened the leaders to see part of their community separate themselves from the old town because it diminished the strength and prestige of the parent settlement. The town of Plymouth had been losing settlers for some time though both of these new towns were within Plymouth Colony.

**AUGUST, 1637** • The first church council in New England met to resolve the Antinomian controversy and restore peace to the colony. John Cotton retreated and conformed acceptably to the assembly which condemned some 80 "erroneous opinions." Both Wheelwright and Mistress Hutchinson refused to recant and Wheelwright was disfranchised and banished along with two prominent supporters. Personal firearms were taken from all known Antinomians ("blue coats") in Boston.

**NOVEMBER 17, 1637** • Anne Hutchinson was brought to trial but rendered the prosecution nearly helpless with an eloquent defense until she boasted of the doctinal revelations she had received directly from God. This was her undoing and she was officially banished from the colony. Though opinions among the settlers would continue to vary over merited or unmerited favor with God, some clergy were labeled "legalistic Preachers."

**MARCH 1638** • In an ecclesiastical trial, Anne Hutchinson was officially excommunicated from the church. While the Reverend Wheelwright went to New Hampshire, she joined Roger Williams as a founder of Rhode Island. Leaving Rhode Island after the death of her husband, Anne and her children fell victim to an Indian raid in 1643 at Pelham Bay. Winthrop remained governor of Massachusetts while Thomas Prince was elected in Plymouth.

**MAY 3, 1638** • Newtowne was named as the sight of the proposed college as it was deemed free of Antinomian taint. Henceforth, it was to be called Cambridge after the famous English university town. Nathaniel Eaton was the master. Over in England, Congregational minister Jesse Glover bought a printing press and hired locksmith Stephen Daye as a printer, setting sail for New England. The Reverend Glover died during the passage but Daye and his son Matthew set up the press at Cambridge. The press was the first in the English colonies

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

and the second in North America. Shortly after the college opened in the late summer, a young clergyman named John Harvard died and left £1,700 and several hundred books to the new clerical institution. Harvard had been the teaching elder at Charlestown and died of consumption at the age of 31. A shoe factory was in operation at Lynn where shoemakers Philip Kirtland and Edmund Bridges had settled near the tannery of an earlier settler. Also about this time, the capital was moved to Boston.

**DECEMBER 1638** • Dorothy Talby was hung at Boston for murdering her three-year-old daughter in what has been described as an insane reaction to what she perceived as Puritan expectations.

**MARCH 13, 1639** • The General Court ordered that the new college at Cambridge, America's first university, be officially called Harvard College.

**MAY 1639** • The first school maintained by community taxes was established in the town of Dorchester. In spring elections, Winthrop again remained governor of Massachusetts while Bradford regained his post at Plymouth, a duty he would retain until 1644. This same year, the five remaining "undertakers" of Plymouth, who included Bradford, paid off the colony's debt, an agreement which they had contracted in 1626. In order to raise the remaining £400, the gentlemen were each forced to sell a portion of their own real estate.

**SEPTEMBER 1639** • Master Eaton was dismissed from Harvard for beating the students. His wife confessed to serving tainted food to the young scholars. Meanwhile, Daye's press cranked out the first document to be printed in America, the Oath of Freemen, which was first written in 1634.

**1640** • Thomas Dudley replaced Winthrop as governor for the year. As the Civil War approached in England, many Puritans saw hope for their cause at home, ending the Great Emigration. In fact, due to the hardships of the Pequot War and the economic crisis of the early 1640s, a significant number of settlers would abandon the great Christian experiment and return home to England. For the next two decades, England would virtually ignore the colonies. By this time, 40 communities had been officially recognized in Massachusetts Bay Colony while Plymouth Colony records show ten towns. Still dedicated to the concept of the "just price" as opposed to the inflation caused by the New World practice of charging what the market will bear based on the law of supply and demand, the conservative magistrates set prices on commodities in order to stabilize the economy. The area was quite an attraction to the scholarly as there were some 113 university men in New England by this time, 71 of them in the area of Massachusetts Bay. Arriving in Boston in the summer, Henry Dunster had received his master's degree at Magdalene College in Cambridge, England. The Reverend Dunster was approached by ten magistrates and 16 elders three weeks after his arrival and elected president of Harvard College. At the age of 30 he would be the youngest to serve in the office. He would be, for a time, sole instructor as well as administrator of the kitchen, dormitory and brewery, beer being considered a necessity for every English occupation, including study. He married the wealthy widow of Reverend Glover, inheriting the printing press which was removed to a lean-to on the old village courtyard that was now Harvard Yard. *The Bay Psalm Book* was printed before the year ended as the first offering of the Harvard University Press. *The Bay Psalm Book* was the first book printed in America. Only 11 known copies survive. The press today is in the Vermont Historical Society Museum in Montpelier.

**1641** • At spring elections, Richard Bellingham won the governor's office in Massachusetts Bay while, in Salem, the men learned to produce salt by evaporating sea water. Bellingham was a member of a loose alliance of influential men known as "Those from Essex," led by William Hathorne of Salem with Reverend Nathaniel Ward and Richard Saltonstall, Jr. of Ipswich and Simon Bradstreet of Andover. A struggle had been developing between the towns and the Board of Assistants with its Standing Council. Also, there was rivalry between Salem and Boston. The Essex faction would attempt to get the capital moved to Salem.

**DECEMBER 10, 1641** • Based on a model drawn up by Nathaniel Ward, the Massachusetts Bay Colony's "Body of Liberties" was adopted as law, delineating basic English liberties and privileges, protecting certain rights for women, children, servants and work animals as well as tempering punishments. Whippings were limited to 40 lashes at most and "cruel and inhumane" punishments were outlawed, though traditional use of the public stocks and ear cropping were approved. A total of 12 offenses were specified as worthy of death. In many aspects, these guidelines were more humane and liberal than the common law in force elsewhere. A defendant also had the right to avoid a jury trial by "throwing himself upon the court." This year and the next would prove a severe slump in the economy, a crisis which was particularly hard on the infant college. Contributions came in even the smallest amounts of regionally grown commodities from New England farmers who firmly believed in the advancement of learning.

**1642** • The Massachusetts Bay Colony passed a school law that mandated basic education to be a parental responsibility, overseen by the selectmen in the town. Winthrop was once again governor, serving until 1644. Harvard College managed its first commencement and Civil War broke out in England between the Puritans and the Royalists.

**1643** • Massachusetts had more colonists than all the rest of English America. The first tutors were appointed to aid Master Dunster at Harvard and Captain John Underhill, hero of the Pequot War, was imported by New Amsterdam to protect Manhattan from Indian attack. He led the local militia there to victory. The economic slump spurred Winthrop to strike a deal with Frenchman Charles de la Tour, promising him non-neutral aid in his struggle to win lordship of Nova Scotia in turn for trading privileges. This was formally protested by the Essex faction and, since La Tour lost, the incident afforded an opportunity for Endecott and the Salem elders to get even with Winthrop and Dudley for appropriating for Boston Salem's former leadership of the colony.

**MAY 10, 1643** • On this day, the colony of Massachusetts Bay divided itself into three shires or counties. As the colony had expanded and settlements had become widespread, central government had become more difficult. The area was first divided into court districts (Quarterly Court system), then into military districts and now into counties. The town governments that naturally developed to handle local affairs were virtually autonomous. Essex County, having already developed an identity of its own, comprised all that part north of Boston and east of the Concord River. Middlesex County



FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

ran southwest from the Essex border and west from Boston while Suffolk County comprised the Boston area. This was an administrative reform and a logical extension of the Quarterly Court system of 1636 but the Essex faction used it to gain political advantage for their area. The setting apart of Essex County would strengthen a natural talent for politics which would carry through to the days of Henry Cabot Lodge.

## ESSEX COUNTY

Named for Essex County, England, which was named in honor of Robert Devereaux, the earl of Essex. Created: May 10, 1643 as one of three original counties. County Seat: (Shire Towns) Salem, Lawrence and Newburyport. Major Events: In the 1630s, the Bradstreets helped to found Ipswich while others founded Nahant, Merrimack, Salisbury, Newburyport and Essex and moved inland to settle Hamilton, Topsfield and Wenham. Georgetown would be one of the last towns settled in the county since Ezekiel Rogers, head of the Rowley Company, held back land grants for the area in case his friend Oliver Cromwell did not succeed in dethroning Charles I and needed a ready refuge. Poet Anne Bradstreet would leave her legacy in Ipswich where lacemaking was the first industry and America's first hosiery factory would operate. Lynn had a tannery as early as 1635, the beginning of New England's famous shoemaking industry. The American wool industry began at Rowley in 1643 and the American iron and steel industry was born at Saugus in 1644. In 1692, a 72-year-old mother of eight in Salem Village, named Rebecca Nurse, was accused of being a witch. Refusing to confess to such a charge, she was hanged, her body rescued for burial during the night by her family at risk of their own lives. Witch lore would abound and persist in the coastal and river towns. Marblehead would be known for its famous psychic fortune teller, Moll Pitcher, born about 1743, and her ancester, wizard Dimond. (As of 1986 in Salem, Laurie Cabot holds the title of "official witch of Salem" where she and other "white witches" own and operate Crow Haven Corner, a witch shop. They also claim an active witch population of about 1,000.) In 1697, the first ship was launched in Haverhill. In 1730 in Methuen, Robert Rogers was born. He would become one of New England's first native playwrights as well as leader of Roger's Rangers during the French and Indian War when he destroyed the St. Francis Indian village. William Driver of Salem would be the first American to refer to the new flag as Old Glory. Dr. Josiah Bartlett of Amesbury would sign the Declaration of Independence. John Glover and his Marbleheaders would row General Washington and his troops across the East River from the Battle of Long Island and later across the Delaware. John Derby of Salem would be the first to carry the news across the Atlantic of both the beginning and the ending of the Revolution. Salem is still known for its "McIntires," the buildings built by native Samuel McIntire, one of the leading architects of the Federal period. The gale of 1846 took a devastating toll on the Marblehead sailors, 65 of whom were lost in the 1846 storm. After turning briefly to shoe manufacturing and other industries, Marblehead is now a thriving center for yachting. The late 1700s produced America's first millionaire in Salem, Elias Hasket Derby. The nationwide struggle between the Federalists and the Democratic-Republicans was vividly demonstrated by the family feud of Salem's Derbys and Crowninshields. In 1778 in Andover, Samuel Phillips had fared well from his paper mill and powder mills and funded the founding of Phillips Andover Academy, the nation's oldest incorporated school. Site of the nation's first flax mill, Andover would later be the center of the Second Great Awakening as the Phillips family would help establish Andover Theological Seminary in 1807. In 1787 in Danvers, excess shoe leather inspired tanner Zerubbabel Porter to develop a commercial shoe factory the same year that 17 Danvers settlers and a covered wagon from Hamilton left for the Northwest Territory. In 1810 in Haverhill, which would call itself the Queen Shoe City of the World, America's foreign mission movement was founded in the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. In 1812, Rockport became the target of British cannonballs, one of which demolished the steeple of the First Congregational Church. Instead of cannonballs, Rockport now draws artists and tourists, though legally a "dry" town since 1856. The boom days of the granite quarry left long ago. Cellar holes are all that remain of Dogtown where poor widows of the sea lived with their children, guarded by fierce watchdogs. Essex County boomed during the era of the clipper ships which carried ice harvested from Wenham Lake to Europe, Asia and the Indies. Newburyport became the ninth leading maritime center in the country and one of the region's richest towns. Donald McKay, the famous builder and designer of clipper ships, came to Newburyport in 1841 and was a partner in shipbuilding with John Currier until 1843. In 1843 in Danvers, Gilbert Tapley started the manufacture of woven carpets. In 1845, Abbot Lawrence and his brothers formed the Essex Company, chartering Lawrence as a town in 1847 and completing the Great Lawrence Stone Dam in 1848. They used the water power of Bodwell Falls to build a planned industrial city. Lawrence was once the Worsted Capital of the World. Essex County was also the home of Thomas Sanders who married the daughter of Nathan Saltonstall Howe and had a son, George, who was a deaf mute. Sanders hired Alexander Graham Bell to tutor the child. Bell worked for the family in Salem from 1873 to 1876, experimenting with hearing devices. Sanders loaned Bell $110,000 to conduct his experiments. On February 12, 1877, Bell demonstrated his telephone before some 500 Salem residents at Lyceum Hall on Church Street. The first telephoned news dispatch would be made by Salem reporter Henry Batchelder to the *Boston Globe*. Sanders made a million dollars, became president of National Telephone Company and a top executive in the Bell System. In 1875 in Hamilton, four nearsighted polo players founded the well-known Myopia Hunt Club. In 1899 in Beverly, immigrants poured into help build the United Shoe Machine Company facilities, a plant that would incorporate the space of 18 football fields. Today the company is located in 26 countries and the Beverly park is the largest shoemaking-machinery plant in the world. Haverhill once had a movie-house projectionist named Louis B. Mayer who soon controlled all the movie houses in the town. Hamilton native General George Patton, Jr. married Beatrice Ayer, daughter of the textile magnate. Gloucester is still a fishing town though it has lost over 10,000 men to the sea. Thoroughly Anglo-Saxon for almost 300 years, the Cape Ann town is currently populated by a large percentage of Portuguese, Scandinavians and Italians. Clarence Birdseye perfected quick-freezing here in 1830. In the late 1970s, Gloucester's 185 registered draggers and trawlers hauled in a $25-million catch.

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

## MIDDLESEX COUNTY

Named for Middlesex County, England. Created: May 10, 1643 as one of three original counties. County Seat: (Shire Towns) Cambridge and Lowell. Major Events: By 1634, Waltham and Watertown were settled. In 1635, Concord became the first settlement on the colony's western frontier as fur trader Simon Willard and the Reverends John Jones and Peter Bulkeley established the new outpost with some 30 to 40 families. Though the wilderness north of Boston had been explored by the Sprague brothers in 1629, the town of Everett was not settled until 1649. Long known as South Malden, the town would later be named for the governor, senator and Harvard president, Edward Everett. The town would be the southern end of the Newburyport Turnpike, a privately operated highway. Groton was settled by 1655 and a county jail was established near Harvard Square. In the 1690s, Framingham became a refuge for families fleeing Salem Village and the witchcraft terror. In 1692, the first sheriff of Middlesex County was elected. Captain Timothy Phillips won the office in the spring elections. The 26th sheriff of the county died in office in 1984 and the 27th citizen to hold the office now serves the county of 11 cities and 43 towns. Hopkinton was settled in 1715. The Boston Marathon starts here every April. During the siege of Boston, Cambridge served as Continental Army headquarters and a Whig refuge. The first national flag, the Continental Great Union Flag with 13 stripes, first flew on Prospect Hill on January 1, 1776. This area is now actually Somerville, where some 4,000 British soldiers, about half of whom were Hessians, were imprisoned after their surrender at Saratoga, New York, enduring the hardship of a bleak, bitter winter. The soldiers were quartered on Prospect Hill from November 7, 1777 to October 15, 1778. Woburn was the birthplace of Benjamin Thompson, the famous scientist and statesman who fled to England during the Revolution and became a count of the Holy Roman Empire. He and Loammi Baldwin walked daily together to attend Harvard. Baldwin was an engineer and architect and promoter of the Baldwin apple which was developed in Wilmington by James Butters. In 1761, the first architect trained in America, Peter Harrison, designed Christ Church in Cambridge. In 1793, Governor John Hancock approved the nation's first major canal, the Middlesex Canal, which would run from Boston to East Chelmsford (later Lowell) on the Merrimack River, a distance of some 27 miles. In 1795, Winthrop W. Chenery introduced Holstein cattle to the county and in 1797, Amos Whittemore of Arlington invented a card machine which greatly increased the production of cotton and wool cards. The Middlesex Canal was completed in 1803 with 20 aqueducts, 48 bridges, the invention of the dump cart and the invention of the floating towpath. Arlington claims the original Uncle Sam because, during the War of 1812, meat inspector Samuel Wilson stamped his meat US. This war also brought the selling of the Whittemore card plant, Arlington's main industry. Watertown became the site of a U.S. arsenal in 1816. In 1818, Hopkinton's Joseph Walker made the nation's first pegged shoes, a technique that changed shoemaking. The 1820s saw the conception and construction of the industrial town of Lowell by the Merrimack Manufacturing Company. By the 1830s, the Boston and Lowell Railroad put the first nail in the coffin of the Middlesex Canal. Today only about half the canal can be traced and only about six of its former 27 miles hold water. Henry Wadsworth Longfellow came to Cambridge in 1837 and rented a room in an old Tory house from the impoverished widow of developer Dr. Andrew Craigie. The house became a wedding present from Longfellow's new father-in-law when he married Frances Appleton who later died accidently in the house. Longfellow taught at Harvard. His brother, who wrote hymns, also lived in Cambridge. In 1853, Ephraim W. Bull developed the Concord grape. William Munroe and Henry David Thoreau made lead pencils. In Maynard, Amory Maynard and William Knight had begun the American Woolen Company in 1847. By 1854 in Waltham, the nation was seeing its first machine-made watches. The Waltham Watch Company once employed 5,000 citizens but failed following World War II, closing in 1957. The plant is now owned by Waltham Precision Instruments and contributes to the space and defense programs as part of the high-tech community which is particularly concentrated along Route 128. In Groton, Reverend Endicott Peabody returned from Tombstone, Arizona in 1884 having pastored an Episcopal Church that received offerings from Wyatt Earp and other notable residents of that Western mining region. He founded Groton private school which would later turn out students such as Franklin Delano Roosevelt, Dean Acheson and Averell Harriman. Fort Devens (Camp Devens) was built at Ayer in 1917. Daniel Chester French's familiar statue of the Minuteman still guards the county at the Old North Bridge. The monument was French's first commissioned work, secured for him by Ralph Waldo Emerson.

## SUFFOLK COUNTY

Named for Suffolk County, England. Created: May 10, 1643 as one of three original counties. County Seat: (Shire Town) Boston. Major Events: In 1623, William Blackstone, a former Church of England minister, migrated north from Plymouth (or possibly south from Cape Ann if he came with the Dorchester group) and built a lonely hut on Beacon Hill, becoming the county's first and only white settler. When John Winthrop attempted first to settle some 900 colonists at Charlestown where fresh water was a serious problem, Blackstone graciously extended an invitation to Winthrop to settle on his side of the river. Winthrop readily accepted and the area was promptly renamed Boston, a proper English name. Blackstone had planted an orchard on present-day Boston Common. Chelsea included Rumney Marsh and Pullen Point and was called Winnisimmet. In only four years following Blackstone's termination of his hermit lifestyle, Boston had welcomed a total of 4,000 English colonists. The settlers spread out to form 20 villages around the Bay area, opened the Boston Latin School and, about five years later, moved the colony's capital from Cambridge to Boston. In 1641, a road was constructed that went from the Winnisimmet Ferry through present-day Revere (Rumney Marsh) to Salem. The city of Revere caims the ferry road to have been the first known county road in North America. In 1709, Reverend Thomas Cheever came to Rumney Marsh to teach. He had been suspended from a neighboring church for breaking two of the Ten Commandments. The following year, the Old Rumney Marsh Meeting House (Revere's first church and now the Church of Christ) was built and the pastorate filled by

Reverend Cheever until 1748. His body lies in Ye Olde Rumney Marsh Burial Grounds, as do the bodies of several Winthrops. The first mill in Rumney Marsh was petitioned as early as 1721 and built in 1734. Slade's Mill ground Chelsea corn and spices from around the world. A tidewater mill, the site was operated for well over 200 years though interrupted several times by fire. One of the old grinding wheels weighing some 1,800 pounds still remains. In 1739, Chelsea, which included Rumney Marsh and Pullen Point, was set apart from Boston as a separate, incorporated town. In 1753 in Chelsea, a small settlement at Shirley Point failed as a fishing enterprise but was used in 1765 to shelter victims of Boston's smallpox epidemic and later as a shelter for Acadian refugees. On May 27, 1775, the first naval battle and the second conflict of the Revolution was fought in Chelsea and known as the Battle of Chelsea Creek (later named the Mystic River). The men of Chelsea were moving their stock inland under orders of the Committee of Safety as the British were in search of food. The British schooner *Diana* sailed up the river and opened fire. Israel Putnam led reinforcements to the rescue who waded out and returned the fire. Cannons were used for the first time in the war and the British were forced to abandon ship and row back to Boston. Only four colonists were wounded and none were killed. The ship was stripped and burned. The pastor of the Rumney Marsh Church, Reverend Phillip Payson who served from 1757 to 1801, was known as "The Fighting Parson." Quincy Market was built in 1826 and the U.S. Customs House begun in 1834. Topped off with a clock tower in 1913, the Customs House became Boston's first skyscraper. In 1846, Rumney Marsh was set apart from Chelsea and called North Chelsea and in 1852, Pullen Point was incorporated as the town of Winthrop. The Back Bay project of Boston which involved filling in the large marsh was begun in the 1850s and took some 40 years to complete. Louis Henri Sullivan, the world-famous architect of modern buildings, was born in Boston in 1856 and later studied at MIT. Chelsea was incorporated as a city in 1857 (Boston had been incorporated as the first city in 1822). Boston Tech was chartered in 1861 but not opened until after the Civil War in 1865 with six professors and 15 students in the vicinity of Boston's Copley Square. The school was moved to Cambridge in 1916 and became Massachusetts Institute of Technology. Born in Roxbury, fighter John L. Sullivan won the world's heavyweight championship fighting with bare knuckles in 1882, an honor he never lost. In the mid-1890s, a Chelsea fire left 17,450 residents homeless. Immigrant groups would soon dominate the area. In 1918, Babe Ruth helped the Boston Red Sox baseball team win their only World Series. Meanwhile, the New England Watch and Ward Society began to keep a strict watch on new books, becoming a main force behind the nationally reported book banning of the 1920s and 1930s. Works by Hemingway and Eugene O'Neill fell victim to the pressure, as did others. Ted Williams joined the Red Sox in 1939 but the team did not win an American League pennant until 1967 with Carl Yastrzemski. Boston's attractive new City Hall was opened in 1968 as part of the new Government Center. In 1971, the Boston Patriots football team moved to Foxborough to become the New England Patriots. Chelsea's last big fire in 1973 brought the community $12 million in federal aid which was used in part to put a housing and commercial complex on the site of the U.S. Naval Hospital. The city had become a bleak jungle of junk yards, fuel tanks and waste warehouses. About 90 percent of the population was other than its original Anglo-Saxon with 16 recognized ethnic groups in residence.

**MAY 14, 1643** • The colonists saw dangers in all directions with the ever-present Indian tribes all around them, the Dutch to the southwest and the French to the north. The colonies of Massachusetts Bay, Plymouth, Connecticut and New Haven therefore formed the New England Confederation which would meet annually. It consisted of two representatives from each colony. Known as the Confederation of the United Colonies of New England, the group discussed Indian policy, foreign policy and dealings among themselves. Meeting at Boston, the Confederation was dominated by the populous Massachusetts Bay. After 1664, the Confederation was virtually inactive and was terminated in 1684 by the Crown.

**1644** • In Plymouth, Edward Winslow was elected governor for the year. But in the Bay Colony, Endecott received his "revenge" by finally winning the governor's seat from Winthrop as the La Tour affair caused a major shakeup in the voting patterns. Bradstreet and Hathorne of Essex replaced Winthrop and Dudley in the New England Confederation. In the General Court, the deputies (representative freemen elected to the General Court) continued to press against the power of the magistrates. When Goody Sherman's sow strayed, Mistress Sherman accused known profiteer Robert Keayne of impounding her wandering swine. Merchant Keayne was acquitted by the Court of Assistants but Goody Sherman appealed to the General Court which promptly reversed the decision. In turn, the assistants pronounced a negative voice against the appeal. The negative voice was upheld and the General Court finally separated into a House of Deputies and a House of Assistants. Salem's William Hathorne was the first speaker of the lower house and the assistants were officially the upper house of America's first bicameral legislature. Also contributing to the split was the program offered by the Essex Caucus designed to curb the power of the magistrates and increase the influence of the new shire of Essex. The program was defeated but the faction won the abolishment of the Standing Council, more power for the deputies in the Quarterly Court and a stricter definition of magisterial power. This same year, kernels of corn and beans were substituted for paper ballots, two adulterers were executed at Boston and a banishment law was passed against Anabaptists who did not believe in infant baptism. Anabaptists, (later Baptists) believed that baptism was for the responsible, voluntary convert. The Puritan leaders saw baptism as part of the communal ideal of the Chosen People. A denial of infant baptism smacked of Separatism which they wished to suppress. Gortonism was another "heresy" that plagued the Puritan community. Samuel Gorton, one of the founders of Rhode Island, had left a legacy of secularism and individual thought in Massachusetts Bay which many felt easily transferred to Quakerism's "inner light" and emphasis on individual interpretation. John Winthrop, Jr. completed the formation of his Company of Undertakers for the Iron Works which he established in that part of Lynn which is now Saugus. Iron ore was the most common mineral in New England, oak wood was plentiful for smelting, and iron was expensive to import and much sought after. Though this enterprise fell

apart in a few years, the men who ran it founded other iron works from which descended the iron and steel industry of the United States.

**1645** • Thomas Dudley was elected governor of the Bay, a Latin School was established at Roxbury and the Dorchester selectmen gained the authority to set the town's tax rates. In Plymouth, Bradford returned to the governor's chair and was reelected every year until 1657.

**MAY 6, 1646** • The Remonstrance and Petition to the General Court was presented, signed by Presbyterian Dr. Robert Child, Anglican Samuel Maverick and others, demanding the enfranchisement of all Englishmen in the colony without any religious qualifications. Thousands of Englishmen were residents, soldiers and taxpayers but not voters. The document also asked that all members of the Church of England who were Presbyterian in their beliefs be allowed communion in the New England churches. In England, the Civil War raged between the Anglican Cavaliers and the Puritan Roundheads but the Roundheads were split into factions of Presbyterians and Independents. English Presbyterians agreed to keep the established Church of England but wanted to make it Presbyterian in its policy. The Independents espoused Congregationalism (the New England Way) but were forced by divergent doctrines among themselves to adopt religious toleration as a principle. The New England Puritans in Massachusetts liked neither faction, Winthrop straining to remain neutral throughout the war. The Remonstrance was rejected. Child was fined, tried and fined again in 1647, after which he left for England.

**SPRING, 1646** • Winthrop gained favor once again and accepted election as the Bay Colony's governor, serving every year for the next three years. Sometime during this year, "Praying John" Eliot, teacher at the church of Roxbury, delivered his first sermon to the Indians in their own tongue.

**NOVEMBER 4, 1646** • Seriously concerned about heresy in the Bay Colony, the General Court of Massachusetts passed a law providing the death penalty for anyone who denied that the Holy Scriptures were the Word of God or that they were to be attended to by illuminated Christians.

**1647** • This year marked the first slip of the grip that church membership had on the right to vote. At town meetings, "inhabitants" had always had unlimited right of attendance and speech but could not vote as they did not qualify as a communicant of a church. Only church members in good standing could be freemen. The Township Act gave the inhabitants the right to vote in town meetings, but only to choose the selectmen and disperse land grants. The town freemen voted on colonial officers and commissioners to the Quarterly Court.

**NOVEMBER 11, 1647** • Massachusetts Bay's General Court passed America's first compulsory school law, requiring a teacher in every community of 50 families and a grammar school in every community with more than 100 families.

**1648** • As the Civil War raged in England, those wishing to relax church discipline in Massachusetts Bay petitioned the General Court for a synod in 1646. Both liberals and conservatives delayed the outcome until Puritan Oliver Cromwell seized power in England in 1648, upon which time the Massachusetts synod issued the Cambridge Platform which, instead of diluting church practices, established and defined the New England Way. While several hundred people were being hung as witches in England during the mid-1640s, Mary Jones, accused of witchcraft, was hanged this year in Charlestown.

**JUNE 1648** • The Book of General Laws and Liberties, worked on for a good while by the deputies of the Massachusetts General Court, further defined and liberalized those set forth in the Body of Liberties published in 1641. The deputies were probably influenced and inspired in part by the remonstrants of 1646.

**OCTOBER 18, 1648** • The Massachusetts General Court granted permission to the shoemakers of Boston to meet when they wished to elect officers and clerks. Thus was authorized the first labor organization in America. During this year in the town of Lynn, Obadiah Holmes of Newport was scourged 30 lashes with a three-lash whip for refusing to pay a fine of £30 for professing Baptist beliefs, mainly his protest against infant baptism.

**1649** • This year would see the passing of the noble and dedicated John Winthrop and the beheading of Charles I in England. John Endecott was chosen Massachusetts' governor and Samuel Green took over the press at Harvard from Stephen Daye. Daye had printed 22 publications over the past decade. Boston led the Bay Colony in establishing trade with the West Indies, Virginia and England, recovering from the earlier economic slump. New England's earliest staple export was salt fish. The General Court of the Bay passed legislation controlling the practice of medicine while, in England, Edward Winslow obtained a charter from the Rump Parliament for The Society for the Promoting and Propagating the Gospel of Jesus Christ in New England. This society successfully raised money from all over the mother country to fund the Indian missionary activities of John Eliot and Thomas Mayhew.

**1650** • In the Bay, John Endecott handed the governor's gavel to Thomas Dudley and Harvard College was formally chartered. Approximately 14,000 people lived within the jurisdiction of the Bay while Plymouth had finally grown to a colony of about 1,500. Governor Peter Stuyvesant of New Amsterdam concluded a treaty with the New England Confederation that established the present-day, New York-Connecticut border.

**1651** • Wishing to maintain their idea of a proper and ordered society, the Puritan leaders of the Bay issued the Sumptuary Regulations which prohibited the poorer brethren from emulating the fashions of the rich and exceeding their rank. John Endecott would once again hold the governor's office, serving until 1654. In response to Reverend John Eliot's petition, the General Court sanctioned the first praying Indian town, setting aside Natick for the converts.

**1652** • Between 1651 and 1665, John Endecott would govern the Bay every year but one. This would prove a period of stricter control and adherence to Puritan ideals as well as a decade or more of Quaker-targeted persecution. At the same time, the Puritan churches would be forced to loosen their requirements for church attendance and membership in the face of a growing apostasy as too many of the new generation walked in the self-advancing spirit of New World optimism. Control would also become more difficult as families and towns continued to spread out and occupy more distant territory. In Massachusetts Bay, both property ownership and church membership were required to gain the right to vote. As



FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

commerce continued to develop, the first bookstore opened in Boston where the colony's new mint would also soon be located. Because of currency and exchange problems, the colony decided to coin their own money, making goldsmith John Hull Master of the Mint. Hull struck coins with the aid of Robert Sanderson. This coining of currency was a strong expression of colonial independence.

**1653** • Reverend John Eliot published *A Primer or Catechism in the Massachusetts Indian Language* while he also worked on translating the Bible into this difficult, highly inflected and formerly unwritten language.

**1654** • Richard Bellingham of Essex County served one year as governor of the Bay while the General Court granted a license to one Richard Thurley to build and maintain a toll bridge over the Newbury River at Rowley.

**OCTOBER 24, 1654** • Harvard President Henry Dunster, having come in his personal studies to a position against the practice of infant baptism, voluntarily submitted his resignation to the General Court. Despite his dissent, he was let go reluctantly as he had managed through difficult times to keep the little college alive, so establishing its academic standards that Oxford and Cambridge Universities in England recognized a bachelor's degree from Harvard as equivalent to one of their own. He had drawn students from all over New England as well as from across the Atlantic. Interestingly, Harvard gained very early a reputation for liberalism as it never instituted a religious test as part of its entrance requirements. Dunster settled for the remainder of his life among intellectuals in Scituate of Plymouth Colony.

**SPRING 1655** • John Endecott replaced Richard Bellingham as governor of the Bay, serving in the office until 1665.

**JULY 1656** • The first two Quaker (Society of Friends) missionaries arrived in Boston, representing the sect that was founded by George Fox around 1650. Fox respected and used the Bible but saw the inner light of each individual soul as superior and direct revelation from God. All Quakers were equal with no need for clerical leadership. As Governor Stuyvesant had mistreated Quakers earlier in New Amsterdam, the Bostonians imprisoned the missionaries, abused and then expelled them from the Bay Colony.

**OCTOBER 14, 1656** • The new heretics inspired formal legislation from the Bays' General Court, fining anyone who dared shelter a Quaker 40 shillings and specifying physical mutilations to be performed upon any Quaker who returned to the Bay after banishment. Salem, with some 63 Friends counted as residents from 1657 to 1667, would be the center of Quaker controversy in the Bay. This year also witnessed the death of Myles Standish at his estate, "Captain's Hill," in Duxbury.

**1657** • Thomas Prince accepted election as governor of Plymouth Colony, serving annually until 1673. The stalwart founder, William Bradford, died at the age of 68, signalling the end of a unique era. As the Congregational churches in general continued to lose influence in the daily lives of the colonists and members of new generations often showed little or no interest in the church, the Bay began to make compromises, employing the first tenets of a Half-Way Convenant which allowed those who were merely baptized to vote alongside of those who were considered true converts. This was the first victory for those New England colonists who were losing interest in religious matters and who had not suffered for the Puritan faith.

**SEPTEMBER 20, 1657** • Quakers who had gained a foothold in the community began a series of church disruptions and protests.

**1658** • The General Court of the Bay prohibited Quaker meetings while several Quakers would be hanged over the next two years.

**SEPTEMBER 3, 1658** • The death of Puritan leader Oliver Cromwell in England virtually marked the end of the English Commonwealth that had been established during the Civil Wars.

**1660** • The Royalists triumphed in England with the return of the Stuart monarchy as Charles II was restored to his beheaded father's throne. The Board of Trade and Plantations was formed in London of Crown appointees to handle all colonial business. Now England would crack down on its willful colonies. Over 20,000 people now lived in Massachusetts Bay Colony while Plymouth had slowly grown to almost 2,000 residents. By contrast, all of New Netherland contained less than 8,000 settlers with less than 1,500 in New Amsterdam. In Boston, Quaker Mary Dyer fell through the gallows to her death on Boston Common.

**JUNE 10, 1661** • With Charles II now on the throne, Massachusetts Bay's General Court felt it necessary to officially define its status, liberties and relationship to the monarchy and mother country. This document and other expressions of autonomy were not popular with the King.

**AUGUST 7, 1661** • Massachusetts officially proclaimed the restoration of King Charles II to the English throne.

**SEPTEMBER 1661** • As a personal friend of William Penn, Charles II ordered Governor Endecott to stop the persecution of Quakers. Though the colony managed to defy the King's order in minor ways, the relationship between the Puritans and the Quakers stabilized in the mid-1660s. Sometime during the year, Samuel Green printed Reverend John Eliot's Indian New Testament on the press at Harvard.

**MARCH 1662** • As church membership dwindled, especially among the young men, so did the body of eligible voters, resulting in the rule of the minority over the majority without the majority's consent, a situation that made every good Englishman uncomfortable. To remedy this problem as well as bolster the flagging church, a synod of ministers agreed to an expanded Half-Way Convenant which allowed baptized but nonprofessing parents to baptize their children and allowed unconverted children of converted parents to become church members but not to take communion. Though sanctioned by the ministers, it would take some 40 years for each church to vote on the measure and for most of them to finally accept it. This year marked a significant turning point in the colonists' relationship with the local tribes as the venerable Wampanoag sachem Masssoit, who had been true to the peace established with him by the Pilgrims some forty years before, died in 1661 leaving his position as tribal chief to his son Metacom, or King Philip as the English called him. Though Philip had a weakness for fancy clothing and ran up bills in Boston, he also saw the rapid encroachment of Indian lands and rights by the white men. Despite efforts at control by the expanding colony, stray cattle overran Indian cornfields and bootleggers sold "firewater" to Philips' people. With only so much land to go around, the coming conflict was inevitable. Also as agricultural techniques improved, the Indians were no longer necessary to the colonists' survival.

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

## HAMPSHIRE COUNTY

Named for Hampshire County, England. Created: May 7, 1662 to encompass all of Western Massachusetts as the fourth county, maintaining this status until 1731. County Seat: (Shire Town) Northampton. Major Events: Early settlers hungry for good farm land went straight from Massachusetts Bay and the east coast to the rich, fertile Connecticut River Valley. The Indians called the river "Quinnitukqut" or "long, tidal river." The Dutch called it "freshwater river" but the English called it "the Great River" or "Connecticut," the longest river in New England. The area close to the river would be settled first from south to north and the outlying hill towns would be settled later. In 1653, a group of Connecticut men petitioned Massachusetts Bay for permission to establish a plantation north of Hartford. With the governor's blessing, a settlement was begun in 1654 and incorporated as the town of Northampton in 1656. Each settler received four acres of land plus a large allocation of meadowland for their stock. As the years passed, increasing evidence would be found of long-extinct residents known as dinosaurs. In 1659, religious dissension in Connecticut drove John Webster and Reverend John Russell to the oxbow north of Northampton, on the east side of the river to found Hadley. Edmund Whaley and William Goffe, members of the High Court of Justice that beheaded Charles I, fled to Hadley where they were hidden by the Reverend John Russell for 15 years. Goffe had been a colonel in Cromwell's Invincibles, a fact that would turn to a blessing for many colonists when these frontier settlements felt the brunt of King Philip's War. In 1675, some 800 Indians attacked Hadley, putting the colonists to a bloody rout until white-haired Colonel Goffe, in hiding since 1664 and unknown to the community, appeared "clad in the fashion of a former generation" to rally the beleaguered residents and fight off the attackers. In 1677, Indians killed 12 area residents and took many captive. Stephen Jennings and Benjamin White went to Quebec, sought the aid of the governor and managed to ransom their wives and children with a payment of £200. In 1683, Mary Webster of Hadley was convicted for bewitching and murdering Deacon Philip Smith. Town residents hanged Mary until she was "nearly dead," then took her down and buried her in the snow. She survived to die several years later of natural causes. Residents at South Hadley attempted to build their first meeting house beginning in 1732 but were not successful until 1737 due to competing religious factions. Opponents removed timbers from the building and hid them. The first minister was dismissed, gagged and escorted forcibly from the church. In 1738, Colonel Stoddard of Northampton settled Pelham, selling the land grant to Scotch Presbyterians from Worcester who called the area Lisburn. Pelham, incorporated as a town in 1643, would be the home of Captain Daniel Shays. Settlers moved west into the hills in the 1760s, settling the area of Goshen in 1761 where maple trees would be tapped to make maple sugar. A lead mine was opened at Westhampton in 1765, partly owned by Vermonter Ethan Allen. It would supply the makings for Revolutioanry War bullets. Reverend Enoch Hale, brother of Nathan Hale, was minister in Westhampton for 57 years. Residents took the Revolutionary War seriously as South Hadley chose four men of the town to inspect the district, insuring that no one drank East India tea. Following the Revolution, many settlers, impoverished by losses at the hands of the British and the Indians, came from Pennsylvania and Connecticut to Hampshire County, settling Middlefield in 1783. In 1782, Reverend Sam Ely led Northampton residents in storming the county courthouse to prevent the foreclosure of their farms. The courthouse was stormed again in 1786 and William Butler founded the *Hampshire Gazette* to fight against the widespread discontent. However, residents at Huntington were not generally sympathetic to the rebels' cause and, as the town had early formed a militia and stored gun powder, the rebels invaded the town and captured local militiaman, Captain John Kirkland. Agriculture would flourish in Hampshire County, especialy around Hadley which grew asparagus, apples and cigar leaf tobacco. The manufacturing of wool cloth began around Middlefield in 1794 as a cottage industry and developed into a commercial-mill industry, prompting the local raising of Saxony sheep. The canal built about this time at South Hadley Falls was the nation's first. William Cullen Bryant was also born this year in the house his grandfather had built at Cummington in 1783. When editor of the *New York Evening Post,* Bryant bought back the house in 1865. The first elastic webbing mill in America had been making shoe goring in the county since the late 1700s. Samuel Dickinson built the first brick house in Amherst in 1813 where his granddaughter Emily would be born in 1830 and remain a recluse for most of her life. In 1821, Amherst residents, including Samuel Dickinson, founded Amherst College for needy youths who wished to study for the ministry, particularly the mission field. Robert Frost would teach there for a time and Calvin Coolidge would be one of the many notable graduates. In 1822, Samuel Williston of Easthampton and his wife began covering wooden button molds with cloth. Within ten years, Williston hired over 1,000 families to work for him, financed a button-making machine, and made Easthampton the nation's largest button-manufacturing center. Mary Lyon founded the female seminary at South Hadley in 1837 that became Mount Holyoke College and the button-making Williston founded Williston Seminary in Easthampton in 1841. Massachusetts Agricultural College was established one year after the Morrill Land Grant Act of 1862. It became Massachusetts State College and then the University of Massachusetts at Amherst in 1947. In 1874, the dam burst at Williamsburg, killing 136 people and wiping out the entire industrial section of the town. Smith College opened at Northampton in 1875, having been chartered by Sophia Smith of Hatfield in 1871. The now-famous women's college began with 14 students. Clarke School for the Deaf was founded in Northampton by Alexander Graham Bell. Here Calvin Coolidge found teacher and fellow Vermonter Grace Goodhue who became his wife. Coolidge set up his law practice in Northampton and served the city as mayor, city solicitor, clerk of the courts and city councilman before his election to the state House of Representatives, the governor's office and the White House. The largest man-made body of water in the world used exclusively for drinking purposes, Quabbin Reservoir, flooded the former towns of Enfield, Greenwich, Prescott and Dana. Hampshire County shares the reservoir with Franklin and Worcester Counties and Bostonians drink much of the water. Hampshire College was chartered in 1965 and opened in 1970 to form a unique, five-college consortium in the county, making Amherst a thriving educational center.

**1663** • The Harvard Press cranked out copies of John Eliot's translation of the entire Bible into the Massachuset Indian tribal tongue.

**JANUARY 1664** • Particularly in Salem, colonists were splitting into factions led by the conservative Puritan leaders and the more liberal-minded merchants. Certain men of Salem heralded the movement to remove church membership as a voting requirement by suggesting that the franchise be broadened to include some that were not members of particular churches. With its fast-growing commercial interests, Salem would make the transition from Puritan community to Yankee town faster than most other communities. During the year, royal commissioners arrived from England to investigate the colonies. The restoration of the monarchy brought differing responses among the colonists. Few were royalists but some favored moderate compliance while others, like William Hathorne of Salem, expressed extremist positions. While the commissioners were in Massachusetts, Hathorne gathered an armed Salem militia to receive his address against the royal investigators. Hathorne was relieved of his militia command and ordered to publicly apologize. Later in the year, English ships would take New Amsterdam and all of New Netherland for King Charles II without firing a shot.

**1665** • Soon after the royal commissioners left the shores, Governor John Endecott breathed his last breath and Essex County leader Richard Bellingham became governor of the Bay Colony. Though in sympathy with Hathorne's position, he discouraged rebellious talk. Caleb Cheeshateaumuck, one of Eliot's Indian converts, graduated from Harvard but, tragically, died of tuberculosis soon afterward.

**1668** • Beverly, the town of the old planters founded by Richard Conant and his followers upon Endecott's arrival, formally broke away from Salem to establish itself as a separate town with a separate church community. Having established four counties, the General Court of Massachusetts Bay created the Board of County Commissioners.

**1670** • At the turn of the decade, an estimated 30,000 colonists inhabited the Bay Colony while Plymouth could now boast an estimated 5,300 residents.

**1673** • John Leverett, acting governor the previous year replacing Bellingham, was elected governor, serving every year until 1679 at request of Bay Colony voters. In spring elections in Plymouth, Josiah Winslow gained the governor's office to which he was returned every year until 1680.

**MAY 3, 1673** • The General Court of the Bay passed a law requiring that church doors be locked during services.

**1674** • Plymouth Colony passed a law that committed all profits from their fishing at Cape Cod to "the erecting and maintaining of a school." The funds would continue to be donated as long as there were at least eight or ten students. By this time, Reverend John Eliot had established seven "Praying Indian Towns" in Massachusetts Bay with seven new ones reported by Daniel Gookin in Nipmuc territory in the central uplands.

**1675** • Wampanoag chief King Philip's brother, Wamsutta, had been murdered by white men. Philip had begun to put together a tribal coalition against the English encroachers, appealing especially to the Nipmucs and Narragansetts. Philip's aide, Sassamon, a Harvard-educated Wampanoag who was a convert and school teacher in Natick, leaked plans of the conspiracy to Governor Winslow at Plymouth. Philip had Sassamon slain but the three murderers were caught, tried and hanged by the English, which greatly offended Philip.

**JUNE 24, 1675** • Philip attacked and burned part of Swansea village in Plymouth Colony, provoked by the Sassamon incident to strike a year earlier than he had planned. As Plymouth prepared its defenses and turned to Heaven with fasting and prayer, Philip returned several days later and killed 11 Englishmen. The Bay Colony quickly came to Plymouth's aid but Philip headed for the central uplands, joined up with Nipmucs, and then proceeded to destroy the western villages of Brookfield, Lancaster, Deerfield and others. This same year in Boston, goldsmith John Hull was named treasurer of the Bay Colony, serving until 1680.

**SEPTEMBER 9, 1675** • The New England Confederation declared war on the Indians. Fall found the westernmost settlements of both the Bay and Plymouth wiped out as the Indians burned, looted, killed, kidnapped and tortured both men and beasts. No outside help came from the other colonies or from England while Philip received help from the Narragansetts. A total of 52 out of the 90 white settlements were attacked and 12 were completely destroyed, placing the colonies in the very real danger of a resounding defeat.

**NOVEMBER 19, 1675** • Over 1,000 whites attacked some 3,000 Narraganstets in the Great Swamp Fight at South Kingstown, Rhode Island. The Englishmen were aided by friendly Indians. The colonists sustained 80 dead and 160 wounded while they managed to kill or wound some 900 Indians. The Narragansett leader, Canonchet, escaped, later ambushing Captain Michael Pierce's company near Pawtucket, leaving one Englishman and nine friendly Indians as survivors to be tortured. Some tribes remained loyal to the colonists and some remained neutral. The Praying Indians often helped as scouts and fighters but as a group, had to be protected from those whites who wished to take revenge on any Indian, no matter their loyalty. The Natick Community was moved to islands in Boston harbor in mid-winter without adequate food. Many suffered and died. Boston now had a population of about 4,000.

**APRIL 3, 1676** • Canonchet was captured and executed by a group of English and friendly Indians. The Pequots sent the Indian leader's head back to Connecticut as a token of their loyalty to the colonists. The English had learned to keep the Indians on the move and food was becoming a critical problem.

**MAY 3, 1676** • Reverend William Hubbard of Ipswich delivered a sermon on the dangers of popular rule and the wisdom of leadership by the elders of the Bay Colony in reaction to the rising democratic sentiment. The same year, writer, educator and physician Benjamin Tompson published a poem titled *New England's Crisis* which bemoaned the loss of the area's unique religious fervor and the new-found pursuit of economic and social success.

**AUGUST 12, 1676** • Concerned with their basic survival, King Philip's warriors gradually slipped away to attend to the necessary tasks of farming and fishing. Philip returned to his camp at Mount Hope where he was discovered and shot by a group of Englishmen and loyal Pocassets. It would be 20 years before the destroyed settlements were completely restored. Many civilians had been lost as well as some 500 militiamen who died of wounds, exposure or disease. The

material loss was staggering but few colonists returned to England as they had after the Pequot War. Most of those who had fought King Philip were also native Americans. The war would drag on with the Abnakis in Maine until April 12, 1678. The year 1676 would also see the passing of John Winthrop, Jr. who had been governor of Connecticut since 1659.

**1677** • As Massachusetts minds produced a medical treatise on smallpox and measles, beginning a tradition of world-renowned leadership in medicine, King Charles II put pressure on the colonies to obey the English Acts of Trade. The colonists responded that they were not represented in Parliament and thus were not to be impeded in their trade by an institution a sea away.

**1679** • Simon Bradstreet, one of the few remaining emigrants of 1630 and husband of poet Anne Dudley Bradstreet, was elected governor of the Bay Colony. The population of the area was nearing 40,000.

**1680** • In Plymouth, Thomas Hinckley was elected governor, serving each year until 1686.

**1682** • King Charles chafed over the willful Massachusetts and threatened to revoke the charter, prompting the colonists to send Thomas Dudley's son Joseph to London on their behalf. Unlike his emigrant father, Joseph was interestsed in personal power and wealth and secretly urged the King to revoke the charter and make Joseph governor of the new royal realm.

**1683** • Reacting to the pressure of the Acts of Trade, the General Court of the Bay Colony declared Boston and Salem the only legal ports of entry for foreign goods.

**OCTOBER 18, 1684** • England's High Court of Chancery officially revoked the Massachusetts Bay Charter on the grounds that, by not tolerating the Church of England and by not practicing religious freedom, the colony had violated the foundation of the charter. Cotton Mather, assistant to his father Increase Mather who was pastor of the Second Congregational Church of Boston, at 21 years of age became the first person on record to use "American" in reference to a colonist and not a native Indian. Only four of the "Praying Towns" were left as, after the war, whites were appointed to hold Indian town offices, often cheating the Indians of their land. Reservations were formed for the Indian survivors of the war who had not been parceled out as servants or sold in slavery to the West Indies.

**1685** • Charles II died, leaving the throne to his inept brother James II who proceeded to form the Dominion of New England from the English colonies of Massachusetts Bay, New Hampshire and Maine. He commissioned Joseph Dudley as the first royal governor, as Dudley headed a budding Tory party in the colonies of those who wanted closer cultural and commercial ties with England and an end to strict Puritan rule.

**JUNE 2, 1685** • The Colony of Plymouth was divided into three counties: Barnstable, Bristol and Plymouth.

### BARNSTABLE COUNTY

Named for Barnstable, England. Created: June 2, 1685 from Plymouth Colony. County Seat: (Shire Town) Barnstable. Major Events: The name Cape Cod was first given by explorer Bartolomew Gosnold during his visit in 1602. On November 2, 1620, the *Mayflower* safely rounded the Cape and made Provincetown Harbor where Pilgrim men signed the Mayflower Compact. The second night was spent off Truro where the Pilgrims went ashore at Pilgrim Spring to obtain fresh water to brew beer. On December 6 an encampment was made by 18 Pilgrim men on First Encounter Beach in Eastham. The next morning the men repelled an attack by local Indians and then explored Wellfleet Harbor. Only after some five weeks at Provincetown did the Pilgrims sail to Plymouth. About 1623 or 1624, Myles Standish explored the area of present-day Cape Cod Canal, pondering the possibility even then of a water passage across the narrow neck of land between Buzzards Bay and Cape Cod Bay. Sandwich was the first town to be settled on the Cape. The Hoxie House was built in 1637 (it still stands) and fifty other settlers came from Lynn, Duxbury and Plymouth. Reverend Joseph Hull, surveyor Austin Bearse and Thomas Dimmock were leading founders of Barnstable which was incorporated as a town in 1638. Richard Bourne of Sandwich helped the Mashpee Indians (Wampanoags) establish their land claims in perpetuity, though those claims are still being argued in court. Bourne had "Praying John" Eliot ordain him as a minister and established an Indian church. By 1674, Bourne had an Indian congregation of about 500. The Old Indian Meetinghouse was constructed ten years later in 1684. By 1686, the Cape had become part of Massachusetts Bay and the Indians were put under a board of overseers who gradually encroached upon native lands and rights. In 1798, though the Indians were required to pay taxes, a law was passed forbidding anyone to teach the Mashpee Indians to read or write "on pain of death." In 1661, Succanessett (Falmouth) was settled by Quakers led by Isaac Robinson. In 1667, crows and blackbirds destroyed enough of Eastham's crops to elicit a law that set a quota of 12 dead blackbirds or three dead crows per year for every household in the town. The birds were such a nuisance in 1695 that a bachelor was not allowed to marry if he had failed to destroy his quota. The first Cape Cod canal was cut at Orleans in 1717, allowing a boat to pass from the bay to the ocean. About 1700, Provincetown and Truro were settled. Provincetown would become a rowdy community of whalers, fishermen and "wreckers." Collecting what was left from shipwrecks was a legitimate business in the area. Here, terms like "mooncusser" and "beachcomber" were well understood as were "rum runner" and "smuggler." Part of Provincetown was actually known as Helltown. Today it is an art and tourist colony, populated year-round mostly by Portuguese who coexist with remnants of the old Yankee stock. Cape Codders were divided by the Revolutionary War. Citizens of Chatham Village joined in the tea boycott but voted against the Declaration of Independence. South of Truro in Wellfleet, a group of residents formed the country's first "Humane Society" in 1786 in order to rescue shipwreck victims. The idea quickly caught on and societies operated all over New England throughout the 1800s. They were eventually absorbed by the U.S. Coast Guard. Shipping suffered during the War of 1812 though Falmouth managed to capture a British warship and more than 20 British sailors were taken prisoner by Cape Codders at Crosby Tavern in Eastham. Cranberry raising began in earnest in Dennis in 1816 where residents discovered that the berries grew best covered lightly by sand. This successful innovation was adopted by the state's other cranberry-growing regions. From 1825 to 1888, Sandwich was prominent for Deming Jarvis' Boston and Sandwich Glass Company which manufactured the first pressed glass and lace

glass made in the nation. The famous pieces of colored glass actually required sand shipped in from the Berkshires. By 1837, there were 150 ship captains sailing from American ports who were all from Dennis. By 1850, Truro had 111 vessels and Wellfleet was second only to Gloucester as a cod and mackerel port. Wellfleet also led the country in oystering from 1830 to 1870. Wellfleet was the home of Captain Lorenzo Dow Baker who brought the first load of bananas to the U.S. in the late 1800s. The fruit was such a sensation that the United Fruit Company was founded in 1899 with Captain Baker as managing director of the Jamaica division. In 1967, descendent Reuben Baker lived in Wellfleet and worked for the United Fruit Company, traveling to Vietnam to see that the soldiers were supplied with fruit. Barnstable was known in the late 1800s for the manufacture of freight cars, an activity which lasted until 1928, and for Gray Gables Inn, which was President Grover Cleveland's summer White House during his years in office. Cleveland's visits gave impetus to the tourist and summer-resident industry that is the lifeblood of Cape Cod's present-day economy.

### BRISTOL COUNTY

Named for Bristol, England. Created: June 2, 1685 from Plymouth Colony. County Seat: (Shire Towns) New Bedford and Taunton. Major Events: Bristol's large Portuguese population generally believe that at least some of the interesting markings on Dighton Rock were made by Portuguese mariner Miguel Cortereal, whose ship wrecked off the coast when he came in search of his missing brother. According to the popular story, he made it to Assonet Neck and became a sachem of the Indians, carving his name, the date 1511 and the Portuguese Cross on the rock. The clarity of the markings may depend on the light and the point of view of the observer. The county's first settlement was at Attleborough in 1634. Taunton was incorporated as a town in 1639, built its first iron works in 1652 and constructed its first shipyard in 1699. New Bedford was settled in 1640 and would later be named by Joseph Russell to honor the Duke of Bedford. Raynham was settled in 1652 when the Leonard family built one of the nation's first iron forges which they operated for over 100 years. Rehoboth witnessed the founding of the nation's fourth Baptist church but controversies with the Congregationalists drove the group of Baptists to Swansea under Obadiah Holmes in 1667. It was in Swansea that the first blood was shed to begin King Philip's War. Westport and Acushnet were attacked and Dartmouth destroyed but Raynham was spared because the Leonard's forge had repaired Philip's weapons and provided him with tools. Whaling began in New Bedford when Quaker John Rotch bought ten acres of waterfront in 1765 and launched the industry in the town. At one point, New Bedford would become the fourth largest port in the nation. The first ship to be launched by the town's new ship-building industry was the *Dartmouth* in 1767. Six years later the ship sat in Boston Harbor and lost a cargo of British tea to angry colonists. According to many historians, on May 14, 1775, the first naval clash of the Revolutionary War occurred off the New Bedford-Fairhaven coast within sight of Fort Phoenix. A boat of New Bedford men rode out to recover two captured sloops of Martha's Vineyard from the British ship *Falcon*. In 1778, British ships attacked Fall River but Colonel Joseph Durfee rallied his militia on Main Street to repulse the British soldiers, losing only two men. The retreating "jack tars" burned Thomas Borden's house and mills. On September 5, 1778, New Bedford was attacked by 5,000 British soldiers, carried by the British navy, who overcame Fort Phoenix and burned everything in the town but Tory property. The first jewelry made in Attleborough was allegedly crafted by "The Frenchmen" in 1780 who, if the story is correct, launched what is today "The Nation's Number One Jewelry Manufacturing Center." By the late 1700s, Captain Paul Cuffee of Westport, son of a freed black slave, had earned a fortune at sea but had no rights of citizenship. In protest, he refused to pay the required personal property tax and was subsequently the first Negro to be granted the same rights as a white citizen of Massachusetts. About the same time, the son of an African chief was purchased by Henry Bowers of Somerset. Because of his rebellious spirit, the slave was shipped out on a whaling or trading vessel but managed to escape in Haiti. The former slave became Toussaint L'Ouverture, emperor of Haiti. In 1812, the Robinsons opened the nation's first metal-button factory as Robinson, Jones and Company. The first power loom began to weave in Fall River in 1817 and New Bedford surpassed Nantucket in 1820 as the world's pre-eminent whaling port. In 1840, Albert Tifft and William Whiting started a jewelry business in the back of an Attleborough blacksmith shop. By 1866, Whiting Manufacturing Company was well-known for standard silverware. Taunton Manufacturing Company of 1823 rolled copper and iron and manufactured cotton and wool. The Taunton mills polluted the Taunton River, spoiling the famous April herring runs. Artist William Bradford was born in Fairhaven a direct descendent of the great Pilgrim father. He grew up to paint Arctic expeditions firsthand. In 1824, Isaac Babbitt and John Crossman first produced the pewter-like Britannia ware while Reed and Barton founded a silver-plate factory. Wamsutta Mills was chartered at New Bedford in 1846 and whaling merchant Jonathan Bourne opened shop in the port town in 1848. Abolition sentiment was strong in the area because of the Quaker population. An express messenger rode all night from Boston bringing news of the Fugitive Slave Law in 1851 and the town bell was rung to warn the hiding fugitives. New Bedford would be an Underground Railway station during the Civil War and the port's ships would help blockade Southern ports. In Fairhaven, where Herman Melville had helped crew the whaler *Acushnet* in 1841, grocery clerk Henry Huttleston Rogers returned from the 1857 Pennsylvania oil fields a multi-millionaire. When he donated the town hall, the cornerstone was laid by none other than Mark Twain (Samuel Clements) whom he had earlier saved from bankruptcy. Clements convinced Rogers to finance Helen Keller's education at Radcliffe College. Also in the late 1800s, Joshua Slocum would rebuild the sloop *Spray* at Fairhaven and sail it around the world, becoming the first man to accomplish that feat alone. Fall River's Sunday School teacher Lizzie Borden would be tried and acquitted for the axe murders of her parents and would live comfortably on her inheritance for forty years. The first cotton mill in Fall River, started by Colonel Durfee of Revolutionary War fame, helped transform the port town into a textile mill city from 1871 to the 1930s. In 1900, Fall River had over 100 mills and four million spindles.

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

## PLYMOUTH COUNTY

Named for Plymouth, England. Created: June 2, 1685 from Plymouth Colony. County Seat: (Shire Town) Plymouth. Major Events: What is now Kingston was formerly called Plymouth Town and was settled in 1620 by passengers of the *Mayflower, Fortune* and *Ann.* John Oldham and John Lyford were expelled in 1624 and founded what became Hull where fishing would develop into a highly successful industry. In 1628, Captain Myles Standish settled what became Duxbury with his three boys. Duxbury would become the second town in the county in 1637 and, from 1812 to 1865, a shipbuilding center featuring the yards of Ezra Weston. Governor Edward Winslow helped establish Marshfield and the first white child born in Massachusetts, Peregrine White, lived there after his marriage. Born November 20, 1620 on the *Mayflower,* White occupies the same burial ground as does Daniel Webster who later made Marshfield his home. By 1672, Andrew Ford, Jr. was clearing the first land in future Abington but was interrupted by the growing Indian troubles. Many of the settlements would suffer during the actual conflict of 1675 and 1676. Scituate was attacked and burned as was Hingham. Following the attack on Hingham, formerly friendly Indians attacked Norwell on May 20, 1676, killing several residents and burning some of the town buildings. Following King Philip's War, Abington was settled in 1680 and the Old Ship Church was constructed by ships' carpenters in 1681. Hingham's first meetinghouse, it is the oldest church in continuous use in America, and one of the first to welcome Unitarianism. Still an independent British colony in 1685, Plymouth divided into three counties as settlements had increased and spread out. As then stated, Plymouth County would consist of six towns: "Plimouth, Duxbury, Scituate, Marshfield, Bridgewater and Middleborough!" Then in 1686, Plymouth Colony, consisting of three counties, was annexed into the recently formed Dominion of New England. By 1690 the new county of Plymouth had a population of 3,055 with the town of Scituate its largest community at 865 residents. From 1690 to the mid-1800s, whaling and shipbuilding would be major industries. In 1691, the existence of Plymouth Colony came to an end as its three counties were made a part of Massachussets Bay. In 1734, the church at Halifax claimed the nation's first Sunday School. Ironmaking was a prominent activity in Bridgewater where cannons would be forged for the Revolutionary War, as would pieces for the iron-clad *Monitor* of the Civil War. When David Potter of Plympton was called to fight in the Revolution, Deborah Sampson determined to go with him and, disguised as "Robert Shurtleff," fought in two major campaigns under Captain Webb of Holden. Wounded at Tarrytown, she dressed the wound herself and carried the bullet the rest of her life. But during the Yorktown campaign, she was treated for a fever and was discovered. However, the doctor kept her secret and sent her to General Washington with a letter where she was honorably discharged. Later as president, Washington awarded her lands and a pension. She married Benjamin Gannett of Sharon in 1784. Scituate launched the *Columbia* in 1787, which became the first American ship to circle the globe. In 1792, Massachusetts Governor John Hancock chartered the Halifax Militia Company as the state's first militia unit; it was the first unit to muster for the Civil War. In 1803, the towns of Hingham and Hull refused to be annexed to Norfolk County and joined Plymouth County from Suffolk County. In 1810, General Benjamin Lincoln was buried at Hingham. He had married Mary Cushing in Hanson, accepted Cornwallis' sword at Yorktown and chased down Daniel Shays and his army to end Shays Rebellion. Cranberries became a commercial crop in the 1820s. Today, Carver is the cranberry-producing center of the nation with over 3,000 acres of cranberry bogs. Lavinia Bump was born in Middleborough in the mid-1800s. Though she had four six-foot brothers, she and her sister Mini were midgets. After traveling with P.T. Barnum, she opened a refreshment stand with her second husband, Tom Thumb (Charles Stratton) and they built a dwarf-size house across from the Bump home in Middleborough. After Tom died in a fire, Lavinia married an Italian Papal Count. A major shoe-manufacturing center, Brockton is said to have shod half the Union army. In 1893, the town developed a sewage system for inland cities that was copied around the country. It was also the site of the country's first central power station. The birthplace of heavyweight champion Rocky Marciano, Brockton had 60 shoe factories manned by 30,000 workers in 1929. In 1907, the nation's first 12-cylinder car was made in Abington by H.H. Buffum.

**JUNE 6, 1686** • Joseph Dudley returned to Massachusetts Bay (now part of the Dominion of New England), bringing with him Robert Ratcliffe, an Anglican minister who held on this day the first Anglican service in Boston. Massachusetts' coining of money was halted and not resumed until 1775, though the first bank in the colonies was chartered. Dudley clashed with English customs official Edward Randolph, refusing to divide the proceeds obtained from confiscating illegal imports.

**DECEMBER 1686** • James II replaced Joseph Dudley with the former governor of New York, Sir Edmund Andros, whose strict tax measures had fomented a revolt among the Manhattan merchants. James then annexed Plymouth Colony, virtually independent for 66 years, to the Dominion. Plymouth's Governor Hinckley was forced to abdicate a position that no longer existed.

**1687** • Governor Andros arrived at his new post as governor of the Dominion of New England, which soon also included Rhode Island and Connecticut.

**1688** • James II added New York and the Jersey colonies to his Dominion of New England, spurred by considerations of defense as well as a desire to uniformly govern the wayward cubs, as he had knowledge of French designs upon the area. Meanwhile, Andros, now governor-general of everything English north of Delaware, declared all land titles of the New Englanders void to be restored only for a burdensome price. He levied taxes without consent, required an annual quit-rent from every settler and provided no money for schools, jailing any town officer who protested. Even greedy Boston merchants who had thought to profit from the Crown's presence were squeezed by Andros' opportunistic council. Andros set aside the General Court, forbade town meetings except one a year to elect officers, and refused to allow the collection of tithes for the clergy. He also turned the Congregational meetinghouse of Boston's Old South Church into a place of Anglican worship until the first wooden building for King's Chapel could be erected at Tremont and School

Streets. This was New England's first Anglican (Episcopal) Church. The New Canaan was now a paradise lost and the New England Yankees saw it all as a "Popish Plot." Despite all this, the famous elementary reader, the *New England Primer*, would soon be on the printing press, possibly issued as early as this year.

**NOVEMBER 5, 1688** • The Dutchman, Prince William of Orange, had married James II's Protestant daughter Mary and was now invited by Protestant English leaders to leave Holland and save England from the oppressor. William landed on this date with a small army. There was no need for fighting as James was deserted by almost everyone and, in a matter of weeks, fled the country. William had thus effected the "Glorious Revolution of 1688," without shedding a drop of blood.

**JANUARY 1689** • Parliament officially pronounced Protestants William and Mary to be the new joint sovereigns and promptly adopted a Declaration of Rights which would later influence the formation of America's own Bill of Rights.

**APRIL 4, 1689** • A ship from England sailed into Boston Harbor with the news of the Protestant Revolution and a decree from William and Mary that all magistrates unjustly removed were to resume their former duties. Acting in such concert that it must have been secretly planned, the citizens of town and country arose in Massachusetts, throwing Andros and his major officials in jail and reinstating the now 86-year-old Simon Bradstreet to his interrupted term as governor of Massachusetts Bay, re-electing all the former officials. The colonists issued the "Declaration of the Gentlemen, Merchants and Inhabitants" drafted by Reverend Cotton Mather to re-instate the old charter and dissolve the Dominion. As soon as news spread, the other colonies "trotted after the Bay horse" and re-instated their former governments. In Plymouth, Thomas Hinckley returned to the governor's chair to serve until 1692.

**JUNE 30, 1689** • Services were first held in King's Chapel (Anglican) which Andros had ordered to be built and which continued under Rector Samuel Myles, son of the Baptist minister at Rehoboth.

**SUMMER 1689** • French officers turned their attention from New York to New England, leading Indian raiding parties to attack settlements in New Hampshire and Maine. The destruction of French Canada became the goal of the Massachusetts Bay for the next 70 years. Pastor of the Puritan church in Boston, Cotton Mather wrote an essay called *Memorable Providences Relating to Witchcraft and Possessions* which would create much of the later hysteria in Salem over what Mather called a "plot against the country by witchcraft."

**1690** • Massachusetts Bay had grown to a population of about 50,000 while Plymouth Colony could now claim almost 7,500. The first effort at a newspaper in Massachusetts was made this year in the form of *Publick Occurrences Both Forreign and Domestick*. The shipyards of the many harbors along the coast and the rivers grew busier and whaling would prevail as a major industry to about 1840. Boston controlled over 40 percent of the carrying capacity of all colonial shipping.

**FEBRUARY 3, 1690** • Soldiers would have to be paid to fight the French in Canada so Massachusetts Bay issued the first paper money to be printed in the colonies. King William's War against the French would last until 1699 in New England.

**MAY 1690** • Sir William Phips, knighted by James II for discovering and delivering the largest amount of gold and silver bullion ever recovered from a sunken ship, led a small naval force from Boston to capture Port Royal, returning with the French governor as prisoner and substantial French loot.

**OCTOBER 7, 1690** • Over-confident and under-supplied, a fleet of Boston merchant vessels led by Phips and carrying 2,200 volunteers, mostly fishermen, failed to take Quebec. After Phips' retreat, William and Mary decided that the Bay Colony was indeed not competent in military matters. The mercantilist British trading system that had developed was also too important not to have control over the colonies.

**1691** • The royal sovereigns drew up a new charter for Massachusetts which incorporated both the Bay and Plymouth Colonies into one entity, thus ending the independent existence of Plymouth, Hinckley serving as its last governor. The Reverend Increase Mather of Boston helped negotiate the charter in England, seeing to it that nearly all members of the government were Congregationalists. The royal governor would preside, appointed by the Crown. The General Court would be retained with the upper house as the Governor's Council and the deputies of the lower house able to nominate the members of the upper house. The Congregational church establishment and Harvard College seminary would remain intact but religious toleration would be enforced and there would no longer be a religious qualification to vote. Even so, the "New England Way" would remain the central cement of Massachusetts' town government into the first part of the 1800s. The royal governor would have authority over newly combined Massachusetts and Maine. Connecticut and Rhode Island continued undisturbed under their old charters and New Hampshire became a separate royal province. King William's War continued with the French and the Indians. The resulting paper money and war expenses imposed a burden of inflation and debt on the colonies, and the frontier was not safe for farmers or crops.

**MAY 16, 1692** • Appointed as the new royal governor of Massachusetts, Sir William Phips turned his interest reluctantly from Quebec to the matter of delivering and instituting the new Province Charter. Inaugurated on this day in Boston, he was soon made aware of a reported witchcraft epidemic in Salem where the stern and hostile Reverend Samuel Parris presided over the town church. Armed with information from Cotton Mather's *Memorable Providences*, the preacher's own daughter and several of her friends decided to accuse Parris' West Indian slave girl, Tibuta, of witchcraft. Tibuta had often related grisly tales of island voodoo to the girls who began to suffer from their imaginations. The town physician examined the girls and pronounced them as bewitched. Due to a sound flogging, Tibuta "admitted" bewitching the girls but accused two women of the community as being in league with her. Phips appointed a court to deal with the matter. William Stoughton was the chief justice, Judge Samuel Sewall was a jurist and the panel included four judges from Boston. According to Thomas Brattle, later treasurer of Harvard, "rude and barbarous methods" were used to extract confessions. Those who "confessed and repented" were usually not executed and often accused others to save their own lives. Tibuta and the other two women were among those hanged.

**JUNE 10, 1692** • Bridget Bishop's death warrant was dated this day as she was hanged for "consorting with the devil." A

total of 19 men and women were hanged, including the congregation's former minister, Reverend George Burroughs, who had taken a pulpit in Maine. An elderly farmer, Giles Corey, refused to plead in order to assure his heirs posssession of his property and was literally pressed to death by stones placed on his chest to extract a confession. The panicked judges admitted "spectral evidence" which included visions, dreams and the ability to accuse a person not known to the accuser.

**OCTOBER 12, 1692** • In a letter to a clergyman, Brattle confirmed that, in addition to the 19 hanged, seven more were condemned and some 50 or more were in jail as confessors. He criticized the judges for ignoring obvious lies concocted by witnesses and for pronouncing sentences on the basis of the "afflicted's" reactions to the look and touch of the accused. Brattle also reported that many went to the gallows strongly espousing their innocence but with prayer and forgiveness for their accusers. The wife of Pastor Hale of the town of Beverly joined the accused as did the attractive wife of Governor Phips. This certainly brought Phips to his senses and the court was disbanded, 150 prisoners being released from jail, in agreement with the Reverend Increase Mather (father of Cotton Mather) and other members of the clergy. From the short reign of Andros and from the bitter trials of Salem, the colony would recover slowly. King William's War dragged on with the French, leaving the outer colonial settlements in constant danger. In the meantime, the General Court decided to authorize clergymen to perform marriages as, up to this point, they were performed only by the local magistrate as a civil matter.

**1693** • The last execution was performed of a person accused of witchcraft in Massachusetts.

**1694** • Governor Phips returned to England, dying there the next year. Judge William Stoughton became acting governor of Massachusetts and served until 1699. A "codfish aristocracy" of prospering merchants and tradesmen developed in Boston as these people became enchanted with the latest fashions from London. The churches began to exhibit less of the austerity of the old Puritan meetinghouse and more of the pretentiousness of London architecture. Many clergymen, Cotton Mather included, felt the inner tug to return to the strong and simple ways of the Puritan fathers while longing to achieve notoriety in the fast-moving world of a growing British Empire.

**JUNE 22, 1695** • Two more counties, Dukes and Nantucket, were added to the structure of the provincial government.

## DUKES COUNTY

Named in honor of the Duke of York and Albany, second son of Charles I, who succeeded his brother Charles II to the throne in 1685. Created: June 22, 1695 from the island of Martha's Vineyard, including Chappaquiddick Island, and the thirteen Elizabeth Islands of the town of Gosnold. County Seat: (Shire Town) Edgartown. Major Events: Wampanoag Indians inhabited Martha's Vineyard when Watertown Merchant Thomas Mayhew, Sr. purchased what later became the entire county in 1640 for a price of £40. Gosnold, or the Elizabeth Islands, were settled in 1641. Explorer Bartholomew Gosnold had gathered sassafras there on Cuttyhunk Island in 1602. Oak Bluffs, Tisbury and Edgartown were settled the following year in 1642. Edgartown was called Nunnepog or "fresh pond," then later named for Edgar, Son of James II (Duke of York). In 1646, Thomas Mayhew called Oak Bluffs the "Easternmost Chop of Holmes' Hole," granting the area to John Dagget. Tisbury was the original "Holmes' Hole." By 1659, Christiantown was a reservation for Praying Indians converted by Reverend Thomas Mayhew, Jr. In 1669, West Tisbury was settled and named for the English birthplace of Thomas Mayhew, Sr. Gay Head was settled the same year. Today the town's population of just over 100 are all descendants of the original Wampanoag residents. In 1671, Chilmark, Tisbury and the Elizabeth Islands were formally granted by patent to Thomas Mayhew, Sr. who received the rights of feudal lordship to Tisbury Manor, as it was called. Settlers were to pay quit-rents. In 1685, Reverend Thomas Mayhew, Jr. sold his inherited privileges and, in 1695, the islands became a county of Massachusetts Bay Province. In 1711, the Society for Propagating the Gospel bought lands at Gay Head to reserve for the sole use of the Indians, accounting for today's population of Wampanoag descendants. Whaling and fishing became prominent occupations for the islands' residents. Stately, white, captains' mansions still grace North Water Street in Edgartown and the Dukes County Historical Society there has portraits of 110 sea captains. The county had some 24 whaling vessels prior to the Revolutionary War. The Gay Head Light was built in 1799 and rebuilt in 1859. Some residents raised sheep and some did pursue agriculture, including raising cranberries. The invasion of summer visitors began in 1835 with the first Methodist camp meeting in an old oak grove on the high bluffs, seven miles from town. The meetings were part of the Second Great Awakening sweeping across New England. Attendees slept in family tents on straw. By August 1859, the meeting at Martha's Vineyard had become the largest in the world, tallying more than 12,000 participants one Sunday that month. That was also the same year that a man from Providence, Rhode Island had a little cottage shipped in to replace the family's tent. The cottage was decorated with elaborate wood carvings and started a craze of wooden "gingerbread" cottages with Gothic-styled double doors. Twenty years later, the Methodists' camp meeting tent was replaced by the present-day, glass-sided tabernacle. The *Vineyard* Gazette had been founded in 1846, the East Chop Lighthouse had been built in 1869 and Penikese Island had been given to Professor Louis Agassiz with a $50,000 endowment to establish a state game refuge in 1873. In the 1870s, a group of Edgartown sea captains saw more opportunity in real estate development than in the fast-fading whaling industry. They built one of the first planned resorts in the nation, next to the Methodist Camp, billed it as "Cottage City," and laid a narrow-gauge railroad from the huge hotel complex to the Katama beach. In 1883, fire destroyed the center of the town of Tisbury. In 1907, the state of Massachusetts bought Penikese Island for a leper colony but the project was soon abandoned. The 1970s brought the state its first licensed winery, Chicama Vineyard at West Tisbury. The "On-Time" ferry takes visitors to Chappaquiddick Island which is East or Down Island. Gay Head is West or Up Island. These commonly used terms were nautical and related to the longitude of the locations.

## NANTUCKET COUNTY

Named for an Indian word *nantican* meaning "at the promontory" or *nanticut* meaning "far away land" or "nantuck"

meaning "sandy, sterile soil tempted no one." Created: June 22, 1695 from the island of Nantucket. County Seat: (Shire Town) Nantucket. Major Events: Nantucket was inhabited by about 700 Nauset Indians who proved friendly and hospitable to arriving white men. The island was charted by Captain Bartholomew Gosnold in 1602 and by Captain John Smith in 1614 and later given by Charles I of England to Lord Sterling whose agent sold Nantucket and two, small adjacent islands to Thomas Mayhew in 1641. A well-to-do merchant of Watertown, Mayhew paid £40 for the island and considered using it to pasture sheep but changed his mind and ignored his holding for 18 years. For £30 and two beaver hats, one for himself and one for his wife, Mayhew sold nine tenths of Nantucket in July, 1659 to nine "Proprietors of the Common and Undivided Lands of Nantucket." Ben Franklin's grandfather Folger served as interpreter during the negotiatons with Nantucket's Indian residents for the purchase of the land. The proprietors or "whole-share" families were from Amesbury and Salisbury and looked to get out from under the strict, legalistic demands of John Wintrop's interpretation of the Puritan "city on a hill." The nine original purchasers were Tristram Coffin, Thomas Macy, Christopher Hussey, Richard Wayne, Thomas Bernard, Peter Coffin, Stephen Greenleafe, John Sayne and William Pike. Thomas Macy of Salisbury had been fined £5 for offering temporary shelter from the rain to several Quakers. In the fall of 1659, Macy set out for Nantucket in an open boat with his wife, five children, Edward Starbuck and 13-year-old Isaac Coleman, rowing around Cape Cod, missing the Great Harbor and landing at Madaket where he established a farm at the west end of the island with the aid of the friendly Indians. Years later, Rowland Hussey Macy, bearing the names of two Nantucket proprietors, would establish a Manhattan haberdashery that would grow into the world's largest department store. Other proprietors, with Peter Folger from Martha's Vineyard, arrived in June, 1661. (Ben Franklin's mother would be a Nantucket Folger.) Several families moved to the North Shore around the harbor of Capaum Pond and established the first white settlement, which they called Sherburne. The open harbor of Capaum would eventually fill in and the island's main town of Nantucket would grow on the shores of the Great Harbor. The island would be a part of York Province until 1692 when it was officially ceded to Massachusetts and made a county in 1695. The island early attracted a growing number of settlers and two political factions developed. The proprietors or "whole-share" men were led by Tristram Coffin while the newcomers of "half-share" men were represented by John Gardner. The proprietors owned most of the land but the newcomers felt they had equal stake in the island and wanted democratic governmental procedures. The feud was softened, if not ended, by the marriage of Coffin's grandson Jethro to Gardner's daughter Mary in 1686 for whom the island's "oldest house" was built. The house was built with lumber from the Coffin's sawmill on land that was a gift from the Gardner family. Tristram Coffin died in 1681 and did not witness the joining of the two feuding families. As early as the 1670s, white settlers and Indians had joined forces to hunt right whales which were a small species visible from lookout stations on shore. Indians manned the boats with the whites and shared in the meat and other products. In the 1690s, the industrious little island attracted Quakers to its realm of religious freedom and Quaker philosophy won the minds and hearts of most of the islanders. In 1712, Captain Christopher Hussey's small sloop was blown far offshore by a gale where the crew sighted and captured a sperm whale which they soon discovered offered the very finest in spermaceti oil for lamps and fine wax candles. Islanders then built larger vessels, caulked to sail where others would fail, and began shipping the oil of the sperm whale to Boston, Newport and England. In 1746, one of four, wind-driven grinding mills was built by seaman Nathan Wilbur, one of which still stands. By 1768, the island had 125 ocean-going whaling ships and by 1774, a fleet of 150 whalers were sailing the seas from the Arctic to the Falklands. During the Revolutionary War, few ships survived the British blockade. Some 1,600 Nantucket men were lost along with 80 percent of the fleet. Many of the seamen died aboard prison ships. During the winters of the War, wood and provisions were scarce for surviving islanders. Oil prices were low following the War and cheaper, tallow candles popular which softened the market for expensive spermaceti. In 1787, a group of Nantucket whaling men left to pursue their craft in Nova Scotia, England and France but returned to Nantucket because of the French Revolution. In 1791, a Nantucket whaler rounded Cape Horn and returned with a bountiful catch of Pacific Ocean sperm whales. Prices rose and, along with Nantucket's shipbuilding, nail and wool manufacturing industries, kept the island in its first golden era for 21 years. Then, in the War of 1812, the British captured 11 Nantucket vessels. The Quaker island declared neutrality but hard times returned and many fled the island. But the second golden era was ushered in following the last conflict with the British and, by 1830, Nantucket's port was second in Massachusetts only to Boston and growing New Bedford and was a major port-of-call for transatlantic packets and coastal vessels. In 1841, when Herman Melville's Ishmael of *Moby Dick* boarded the *Pequod,* there were over 30 spermaceti candle factories in town and a population reaching 9,000 or more. By 1846, the last of several destructive fires had wreaked its havoc and the new, larger whaling vessels had to be lightened and floated across the sandbar at the mouth of the Great Harbor on "camels" or floating drydocks. The sperm whale was becoming scarce and New Bedford's whaling industry was increasingly competitive. Coal gas was being used in European lamps and the California gold rush lured 14 Nantucket ships to the fields in 1849. Oil would soon be discovered in Pennsylvania and the Civil War would take its own toll. The last Nantucket whaler, the *Oak,* left to find a giant sperm whale in 1869 but never returned to port. The island's population dwindled to 3,201 by 1875 but a new and profitable industry was developing from the thousands of recent city dwellers who looked to Nantucket as a prime vacation retreat. The current summer population now swells to some 40,000.

**1697** • King William ended the war in Europe but left the New World colonies to fight for two more years on their own. Massachusetts and New York were united under one governor until 1701. Judge Samuel Sewall stood before the congregations of Boston and repented his acceptance of "spectral evidence" in the Salem trials that resulted in the execution of innocent people. The entire jury and one of the "afflicted girls" also recanted their charges and asked forgiveness of the families.

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

**1698** • The Massachusetts General Court passed a law establishing that the child of a slave would automatically be considered a slave by birth.

**1699** • Richard Coote, Earl of Nellomont, took over as governor of Massachusetts, serving until 1700. The General Court passed a law designed to avoid the spread of infectious diseases.

**1700** • The Province of Massachusetts boasted from 56,000 to 80,000 inhabitants (depending on the estimate) with most towns consisting of 200 to 300 families. The Puritans had originally envisioned that the maximum town size should be about 100 families. In the period from 1700 to 1770, a total of 168 new towns would be incorporated. As the need for defense diminished, decentralization increased. William Stoughton once again was appointed acting governor, serving until 1701. Judge Sewall published *The Selling of Joseph* which protested slavery in Massachusetts.

**1701** • During this year, the province was governed by the Executive Council after the death of Governor Stoughton while Reverend Cotton Mather of Boston's Second Congregational Church published *A Christian at His Calling* which dealt with the Christian in the business world. The Board of Trade in London recommended to the House of Commons that the entire colonial system be overhauled, decreasing the power of the local assemblies and increasing the power of the Crown.

**1702** • The Crown appointed Joseph Dudley as the new governor and he served until 1715. Before the House of Commons could act upon the recommendations of the Board of Trade, King William died and was peacefully succeeded by Queen Anne, his sister-in-law. Trade continued to increase in the province as Massachusetts' ships stopped in Africa and the West Indies as well as England, Scotland and Ireland. This trading activity would be increasingly regulated by the series of Trade and Navigation Acts first issued by the Crown in 1650. Boston's printing presses now turned out more material than any other English city except London. Two months after Queen Anne gained the throne, England plunged into war with France and Spain, a conflict referred to in the colonies as Queen Anne's War. The New England frontier was once again attacked by Abnaki Indians led by the French. Deerfield was destroyed and many of its residents carried off. Maine's coastal settlements were wiped out for the third time. Governor Dudley, acting on advice from the Reverend Solomon Stoddard of Northampton, established a frontier patrol equipped with snowshoes and moccasins.

**APRIL 24, 1704** • This date marked the appearance of the *Boston New-Letter,* a weekly that would prove to be the first, successful American newspaper. It continued to be published weekly until the American Revolution.

**JANUARY 17, 1706** • Benjamin Franklin was born in Boston where he attended school until the age of ten. Working first in a tallow shop, he later apprenticed as a printer to his half-brother James, leaving Boston for Philadelphia at age 17.

**1707** • French privateers preyed upon New England fishing boats, inspiring an unsuccessful attack by Massachusetts on Port Royal, the French base in Acadia. In England, the Act of Unity joined Scotland to the Empire.

**1710** • A second attack on Port Royal by Massachusetts was successful, goading Governor Dudley to press England for the wherewithal to throw France, once and for all, out of Canada. Conspiring with General Francis Nicholson of New York, Dudley sent four sachems of the Iroquois Confederacy to London in full Indian dress to obtain the Queen's support.

**1711** • The theatrical ploy worked but the ensuing operation against Quebec was a disaster for a variety of reasons. Meanwhile, the General Court in Boston reversed the attainders against most of the Salem witchcraft victims and voted reparations to the families to cover their court costs.

**1713** • The Treaty of Utrecht ended the war, won Newfoundland and Nova Scotia for England, and presided over thirty years of peace between the European powers. The war convincingly demonstrated the importance of naval power and promoted England from a major, sea-going contender to undisputed ruler of the ocean waves. Cotton Mather's exploration of astronomy, botany and physics as well as theology won him election to the Royal Society in London.

**1714** • Queen Anne died, leaving the throne, peace and an extended empire to George I while, in Boston, King's Chapel installed the nation's first pipe organ.

**1715** • Following Joseph Dudley, the Executive Council administered the province until William Tailer was named acting governor, serving until 1716.

**1716** • Samuel Shute, newly appointed governor, arrived to find a House of Representatives that, according to him, had greater powers than the House of Commons. Non-English immigrants from Scotland, Ireland, Germany and France continued to pour into New England and the other colonies, bringing Massachusett's population to over 90,000 and swelling Boston to a seaport of about 18,000 inhabitants.

**1717** • Reverend John Wise, a Congregational minister in Ipswich of Essex County, published *A Vindication of the Government of New-England Churches* to defend the democracy and autonomy of each local congregation against the proffered plans of Cotton Mather and some other clergymen to establish an association which would assume a certain amount of central control over Puritan church government.

**SUMMER 1721** • The *Boston Gazette,* founded by William Booker, was in its third year of production when a ship from the West Indies docked in Boston Harbor, manned by a crew infected with smallpox. The seaport reeled under a serious smallpox epidemic. Reverend Cotton Mather had read in the publication of the Royal Society how healthy people could be inoculated with the pus of an infected person in order to prevent the spread of the disease. He convinced Dr. Zabdiel Boylston to inoculate some 250 people, all but six of whom recovered, while fully half of those uninoculated residents who caught the disease died. The alien practice provoked much protest, led by the newspaper published by Benjamin Franklin's half-brother. However, Dr. Boylston repeated the process during the next epidemic, again demonstrating its successful performance.

**1722** • Shute returned to England and William Demmer became acting governor. Shute complained that the House of Representatives had complete power to set the governor's and lieutenant governor's salaries, reporting that the colonists failed to pay him properly at first, then refused to pay him at all. Religious tolerance and liberalism continued to gain acceptance in cosmopolitan Boston. Cotton Mather proudly admitted Baptists, Lutherans, Anglicans and Presbyterians to communion with the Second Congregational Church. But the old ways remained strong in the more rural towns and

villages where residents upheld, if not always the substance of Puritanism, at least the outward forms of the faith of the fathers. At Yale Commencement, the Rector Reverend Timothy Cutler ended with a quote from the Anglican Book of Prayer. This would not do at Connecticut's Puritan Seminary. Confessing Anglican theology, the Rector was dismissed. He returned to England for an Oxford degree and Anglican ordination and then came back to the colonies to fill the pulpit of Christ Church in Boston.

**1723** • Laxity was growing everywhere, even at Harvard seminary. A committee headed by Judge Sewall reported this year that "There has been a practice of general immoralities particularly stealing, lying, swearing, idleness, picking of locks, and too frequent use of strong drink." An early publication of Benjamin Franklin would also attack the frivolity and luxury indulged in by Harvard students.

**1727** • George I died and was succeeded by his son George II, the last English king to actually lead his army in conflict on the battlefield.

**1728** • William Burret became governor of the province for the period of one year.

**1729** • William Demmer returned as acting governor to serve only until 1730.

**1730** • Population estimates for the time range from 114,000 to over 150,000 residents in Massachusetts. William Tailer was called upon to act as governor until the crown appointee, Jonathan Belcher, took the position, serving until 1741. Belcher was a native of the colony and attempted unsuccessfully to serve both the wishes of the Crown and the interests of his fellow colonists. Massachusetts' first paper mill began to turn cloth scraps into paper as it started operations on the Neponset River in Milton.

**APRIL 5, 1731** • Westward settlement and organization urged the formation of Worcester County.

## WORCESTER COUNTY

Named for Worcester, England. Created: April 5, 1731 from Middlesex, Suffolk and Hampshire Counties. County Seat: (Shire Towns) Worcester and Fitchburg. Major Events: Parts of this inland area were visited by Englishmen as early as 1633, followed by "Prayin' John" Eliot who visited the Quaboag Indians in the area of Brookfield in 1655. Five years later, that land was granted to Ipswich residents by the General Court and Brookfield was founded as Quaboag in 1664. Lancaster became the county's first incorporated town in 1653. Called Quinshepauge, Mendon was burned during King Philip's War and later stood against the discontented farmers of Shays Rebellion. In 1669, a tract of 20 acres was purchased in the area of present-day Worcester to be reserved as common open space, the first tract to be bought for such a purpose in America. Daniel Gookin and Reverend John Eliot visited the Nipmuck Indians here in 1674 and Gookin returned with a small group of settlers in 1682. After fleeing to safety in 1702 during Queen Anne's War, the settlers returned in 1712 to be joined by about 200 more colonists by 1717. From this shaky beginning, Worcester has grown to be the second largest city in New England. The Eleazer Brown family were the first settlers of Hubbardston where the Hubbardston Nonesuch apple was discovered in 1790. When the county was formed in 1731, the first eight towns were taken from Middlesex County, including Worcester, Lancaster, Westborough, Shrewsbury, Southborough, Leicester, Rutland and Lunenburg. The Mendon, Woodstock, Oxford, Sutton and Uxbridge towns were taken from Suffolk County and Brookfield was taken from Hampshire. In 1748, Woodstock revolted and joined the colony of Connecticut. The matter was agreed to by all parties following the Revolution. The First Parish meeting house was founded in Ashby in 1767. Now Unitarian, the church's Willard Clock is hand wound by the town's salaried clock winder. John Chapman (Johnny Appleseed) was born in Leominster in 1775 where Obadia Hills began making horn combs in 1770. By 1845, Leominster would boast of 24 comb factories. During the 1770s, Isaiah Thomas published *The Massachusetts Spy* in Worcester as an effective tool to unite anti-British sentiment. Following the War, in 1791, it was a Worcester court that decided that the Bill of Rights applied also to Negro slaves. Meanwhile, Mother Ann Lee came to Harvard, the northeastern tip of the county, in 1781 and set up the Harvard Shaker Village for the United Society of Believers in Christ's Second Appearing. The society flourished in Harvard from 1791 to 1918, practicing celibacy, communism and the rhythmic worship dances for which the name, "Shaker," was awarded. Universalism crossed the Atlantic to Oxford in 1792 when the church was built there as the first Universalist house of worship in the nation. The following year the stage began running from Boston to Fitchburg. James M. Comee's home became the first Gardner chair factory in 1805, while the first cotton mill appeared at Blackstone in 1809 followed by the first woolen mill in 1914. Back in Worcester, printer Isaiah Thomas founded the American Antiquarian Society in 1812 as an independent research library. Today it holds two-thirds of all known items printed in the United States from 1639 to 1821. The *Farmer's Almanac* was now a part of West Boylston's industry as Robert Bailey Thomas had moved to "the old Shrewsbury Leg" (which later became Sterling and then West Boylston) and opened a book bindery in his father's home, originating what was to be a popular publication. Erastus Bigelow, born in West Boylston in 1814, invented the power loom for carpet weaving. Bigelow Carpets would be made in Clinton from 1848 to 1933. The Blackstone Canal was built in 1828 but closed in 1848, replaced by the railroad. American Optical Company was founded in 1833 in Southbridge, the "birthplace of the American optical industry." In 1841, Universalist minister Adin Ballou bought land for the Hopedale Fraternal Community, another experiment in communal living. E.D. Draper succeeded Ballou as president of the society, which he proceeded to dissolve in order to establish a textile machinery plant. Back in Harvard in 1843 where the Shaker community still existed, transcendentalist Bronson Alcott commenced his own social-religious experiment at Fruitlands Farmhouse on Prospect Hill. Called New Eden, the community observed the sanctity of all life, even trying to pull their own plows in order not to exploit an animal. The experiment lasted six months. In 1844, Philander Derby designed the Boston rocker in Gardner. Two years later, on September 30, 1846, dentist William Thomas Green Morton performed a deep tooth extraction, assisted by Dr. Charles T. Jackson, on a patient anesthetized with ether. A month later, the dentists assisted a public demonstration of the procedure during a major operation at Massachusetts General Hospital. In 1852, the Catholic congregation at Blackstone was divided

as St. Pauls' Church was built on the border between Massachusetts and Rhode Island. Half the congregation sat in one state while the other half sat across the border. A Charlton gravestone, etched "1860," marks the passing of James Capen "Grizzly" Adams, a Massachusetts native who left his trade of shoe making at the age of 45 to hunt and befriend bears in the Rocky Mountains. Adams' fame spread when he toured with P.T. Barnum. In the earlier 1800s, Sterling had been home to young Mary Sawyer who made a pet out of a weak lamb that required special attention. The lamb followed Mary to the Reedstone Hill School one day and hid under her desk. The famous rhyme "Mary Had a Little Lamb" was written by John Roulstone who was living nearby with his uncle. In 1868, Laroy S. Starret founded the company in Athol that is today a world leader in producing precision measuring instruments. By 1870, Milford had two of the nation's largest boot factories and Reverend Patrick Cuddahy had discovered the nation's first pink granite. By 1890, Leicester produced one-fourth of all wool cards manufactured in the United States and, in 1903, Alfred Augustus Marshall began growing apples in Fitchburg. In 1920, East Brookfield was incorporated as the youngest town in Massachusetts and on March 16, 1926, Worcester native Dr. Robert H. Goddard launched the world's first liquid-fueled rocket from Pakachoag Hill in Auburn. The Worcester Foundation for Experimental Biology in Shrewsbury pioneered oral contraceptives in a county that is today the scene of international bike races and a residence for a myriad of immigrant groups. Bolton welcomed the Nashoba Valley Winery in 1985. During the devastating drought of 1986 in the nation's Southeast, Worcester farmers shipped thousands of hay bales to the beleaguered states in an attempt to save livestock in Georgia, Alabama, and North and South Carolina.

**DECEMBER 23, 1732** • Governor Belcher addressed a letter to the Board of Trade in London concerning the fact that the lower house of the Massachusetts General Court, or General Assembly as he called it, held the power of the purse and used it to get their way with the royal representatives. He pointed out that the Crown's officers were becoming useless figureheads.

**DECEMBER 25, 1733** • The Molasses Act, passed by Parliament under Prime Minister Walpole, specified that, after this date, there would be a tax on all rum or other spirits produced in the colonies and upon all non-English molasses or syrup products imported into the colonies. This struck heavily at New England's thriving trade with both the Spanish and French West Indies as well as at one of its leading industries—rum distilling. The New Englanders would circumvent what could otherwise have been a disastrous policy by smuggling, bribing the English customs officials and importing cheap French rum.

**1734** • The Reverend Jonathan Edwards of the Puritan church in Northampton along the Connecticut River, witnessed, even that far west, what he saw as: a continual decline in church attendance; the growing practice of outward but empty forms of piety and religiosity; and a return by those few who were still interested in their souls to beliefs in salvation through the efforts of man. In addition, the Church of England was aggressively seeking converts in the colony while a movement of humanistic liberalism managed to gain its own audience of colonial churches. To these last two rival movements, the strongly Calvinistic Edwards would add a third which would grow to be known as the Great Awakening. He began to preach revival sermons to his congregation, emphasizing his belief in the sovereignty of God and God's pure, unmerited grace which, Edwards claimed, brought sinners to a saving belief in the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ. His sermons also graphically portrayed the pit of hell and fiery torments that were the eternal destiny of those who rejected Christ. Though other clergymen were preaching similar sermons, it was Edwards who was recognized on both sides of the Atlantic as a brilliant scholar, and it was in Northampton that a remarkable spiritual awakening was most visible.

**SPRING 1735** • The church at Northampton had some 300 new members as people flocked to profess conversion and became thoroughly absorbed in the fundamental truths of Christianity as expounded by Edwards.

**OCTOBER 30, 1735** • Future President John Adams was born in the town of Braintree, inheriting a family name that would long grace the annals of Massachusetts and American history. His father was of a long line of farmers but acquired some notice by marrying Susanna Boylston, daughter of a prominent New England family. The family house where John was born still stands at 133 Franklin Street in what is now the city of Quincy. Also during the year, Paul Revere was born and the *Boston Evening Post* appeared.

**1736** • Jonathan Edwards chronicled the Northampton revival in a pamphlet called *A Faithful Narrative of the Surprising Work of God in the Conversion of Many Hundred Souls in Northampton.* This account would be widely circulated and read with great interest. In England, Parliament passed a law against the prosecution of individuals as witches.

**1738** • John Wesley, a missionary from England to the Indians of colonial Georgia, was joined by George Whitefield. Here, Whitefield read Edwards' *A Faithful Narrative,* from which he received his inspiration to join the revival preachers. Meanwhile, Wesley returned to England, was truly converted, and launched Methodism.

**1740** • Although Calvinistic in his views, Whitefield developed an emotionally appealing, down-to-earth style of preaching which greatly contrasted with the dignified and intellectual approach used by both the Puritan and Anglican pastors. Coming to Massachusetts, he preached for a month in Boston and converted hundreds of people from all walks of life. His New England crusade lasted 75 days, took him 800 miles by horse or carriage and drew crowds of 20,000 excited souls at a sitting. During that time he delivered 175 sermons. The Massachusetts clergymen by and large vigorously opposed the movement, though a significant minority began themselves to preach revival sermons. The result was the creation of "New Light" and "Old Light" churches. The New Lights returned to Calvinistic doctrine but with a new, individual spirituality as opposed to the old, corporate Puritan view of one town, one church, one faith. Massachusetts was now genuinely pluralistic. Many of the New Light churches eventually became Baptist or Methodist. At the same time, even American Anglicans were fighting the Church of England missionaries' request for an American bishop. England wisely did not respond to the petition. Reaction among certain offended, influential residents of

orthampton to the Great Awakening forced Jonathan dwards to move with his wife and eight children to ockbridge in the Berkshire Hills, becoming a missionary a small Indian reservation. His writings would continue be noted on both sides of the Atlantic. John Adams' older ousin, Samuel, also a Boston native, graduated from Harvard the same time his father, a prominent brewer, was involved romoting the Massachusetts Land Bank. This was a scheme evised to make paper money loans to farmers backed by the alue of their land. Since England banned the colonial minting f money as well as the export of English coin to America, ie colonies were always short of a practical medium of change and resorted to paper money which normally roduced inflation. Meanwhile, the Jews of England had ained sufficient power to convince George II to confer tizenship on Jews in the American colonies, even though ie Jews in England would not receive such a privilege. rotestants, Quakers and Jews, under the Act of 1740, were l granted rights of citizenship but only in the colonies. atholics were still excluded. The Crown's motive was purely conomic in nature as an increased citizenry meant economic rowth in the colonies.

**'41** • The Crown appointed William Shirley as governor of lassachusetts. He served until 1749. Hard-money advocates id merchants who normally made colonial loans persuaded arliament to outlaw the Land Bank using a law of 1720. This tion was a severe financial blow to Samuel Adams' father.

**'42** • Faneuil Hall was completed from the plans of colonial ortrait painter John Smibert. Above would be Boston's town all and below, a public market. Boston received the structure a gift from city merchant Peter Faneuil.

**'43** • At the age of 21, Samuel Adams presented a master's esis at Harvard on the right of revolution. He also thwarted forts of the Land Banks' creditors to attach his property.

**'45** • King George's War raged against France, the third of ie four French wars, giving Massachusetts citizens one more pportunity to try their own hand at throwing the French out Canada. Governor Shirley sent a force of 4,000 against ouisburg on Cape Breton Island, transported by an armada just under 100 ships. Some 50 days and 9,000 cannonballs ter, the French surrendered the gateway to the St. Lawrence iver to Massachusetts. The colony was gloriously proud of eir victory won for the Crown and were infused with a new irit of British patriotism.

**'46** • Massachusetts had about 5,000 blacks living among total population that ranged between 150,000 and 200,000. ew England ships actually participated in only a small share the slave trade which was carried on mainly by the colonies the South and by the English. New England frontier towns ffered once more from raids made by French and Indians, is time in retaliation for the victory at Louisburg. Boston as literally saved by the storms and scurvy that ravaged a rge French fleet sent to regain Louisburg and burn the Mass-husetts capital. The fleet returned to France minus 3,000 ldiers and sailors, including the French Admiral, without ing a shot. The Puritans considered it an answer to prayer.

**'48** • The treaty that ended King George's War agnanimously returned the hard-won Louisburg to the ench, a shocking scorn of Massachusetts' patriotism made en worse by Parliament's reimbursement of most, not all, Massachusetts' expenses.

**1749** • Lieutenant Governor Spencer Phips became acting governor of the province, serving until 1753.

**1750** • The General Court passed "An Act to Prevent Stage Plays and Other Theatrical Entertainments" which imposed a fine of £20 on anyone who allowed their premises to be used as a stage and a fine of £5 on anyone who attended or acted in a production.

**1752** • Thomas Hutchinson, former representative and speaker of the General Court in Boston and now a member of the Governor's Council, accepted appointment as a judge of probate and common pleas in Suffolk County. Suffolk County then included Boston and 18 other towns. Hutchinson was a Boston native, descended form a long line of shrewd English merchants, and distantly related to Anne Hutchinson, the Antinomian. When in the legislature, he had led the victorious hard-money advocates in the fight against the Land Bank and paper currency, a position which he credited for Samuel Adams' animosity towards him. Hutchinson developed a somewhat idealized vision of an English Massachusetts that embodied the traditions with which he identified and his role in the history of the glorious province. He had entered Harvard at the age of 12 and begun his fortune through his own investments.

**1753** • Military strategist William Shirley again became governor of the colony and served in the office until 1756.

**1754** • The American West was a jewel coveted by England, France and Spain though it was also a frontier still too savage for permanent, peaceful settlement. In order to move west, the colonists needed protection against the Indians and the French who continued to instigate brutal raids. The colonies, ready for another war before the Europeans were, agreed to send representatives to the Albany Congress which was called to promote intercolonial military cooperation. Behind the plan of colonial union was Benjamin Franklin, now of Philadelphia, and Thomas Hutchinson. Seven of the 13 colonies attended but neither the Crown nor any of the colonial assemblies would ratify the proposal. The colonies were still too independent, closely guarding their control over their own affairs.

**1755** • The French and Indian War in the colonies was actually part of the Seven Years' War in Europe. Governor Shirley of Massachusetts failed in an effort to take Fort Niagara but Colonial John Winslow of Massachusetts won the French Fort Beausejour at the Bay of Fundy in Nova Scotia.

**1756** • The Earl of Loudoun was sent to take Shirley's place as the British Commander in the colonies and Lieutenant Governor Spencer Phips again took over as acting governor of the province until 1757. The war was going badly for the British on both sides of the ocean and Massachusetts theologian Jonathan Edwards wrote "what will become of us God only knows."

**APRIL 1757** • The Executive Council administered the affairs of the province until August.

**AUGUST 1757** • The new royal governor of the colony was Thomas Pownall but he served only until 1760.

**1758** • The tide of war would turn as William Pitt became Secretary of State and Prime Minister of England and turned his attention to Canada and the American West.

**1760** • As provincial Massachusetts grew to over 200,000 inhabitants, Lieutenant Governor Thomas Hutchinson acted

as governor until Sir Francis Bernard arrived to serve as royal governor. Bernard would serve until 1769. Hutchinson was appointed by the Crown to the post of chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas of Massachusetts, a position coveted by the elder James Otis. Hutchinson credited this episode for turning the young James Otis against him. Meanwhile, William Pitt ordered that the Molasses Act of 1733 be strictly enforced (which it had never been). England's basic policy toward its colonies was to settle the Western question, enforce the Acts of Trade and Navigation, and collect taxes from the colonists which would help pay the war debts and provide for continuing defense of the colonies.

### BERKSHIRE COUNTY

Named for Berkshire County, England. Created: May 28, 1760 from Hampshire County. County Seats: (Shire Towns) Lenox and Pittsfield. Major Events: The hill towns of Berkshire County were not generally settled until the 1700s. Major Talcott and his men captured a group of fleeing Marragansettt Indians during King Philip's War at the old Indian Fort in present-day Great Barrington. That was the last Indian fight in the area, though the Great Road that ran through the town was used in the French and Indian War. Many of the first Berkshire settlers were Dutch rather than English. Mount Washington is the state's smallest town in population and tries to be the first American town to report its vote during a presidential election. Citizens of Mount Washington vote right after sunrise. The General Court granted the site of present-day Stockbridge for an Indian mission school in 1734. The area was home to the Mukhekanew Indians from whom local settlers learned to make maple sugar. Stockbridge was settled in 1734 but was limited by the General Court to four white families. Reverend Jonathan Edwards came to teach at the mission in 1751 when he was forced from his Northampton pulpit during the latter part of the Great Awakening. Fort Massachusetts was built at North Adams in 1744 and attacked two years later by some 500 French soliders with about 300 Indians who burned the fort and the settlement. In 1765, Rhode Island Quakers replaced the Connecticut Congregationalists who never managed to build a permanent community there. The "area west of Fort Massachusetts" referred to later by Colonel Ephraim Williams was settled about 1749. The colonel died in 1755 a victim of the French and Indian War, and bequeathed money for the establishment of a free school upon the condition that the northwestern tip of Massachusetts be named Williamstown. Partridgefield was named Peru in 1770. This town is the highest inhabited village in the state. The poor were sold at auction here into the 1830s. Shadrach Pierce auctioned Abagail Thayer for 90 cents per week in 1807. She was thus offered every year for almost 30 years. The Sheffield Resolves denouncing Parliament were issued in 1773. The Stockbridge Indians were the only tribe to serve in the Revolution and the first tribe to receive United States citizenship but they were later moved west, eventually to Wisconsin. The final skirmish of Shays Rebellion occurred at Sheffield in 1787. About 90 rebels freed debtors from the Great Barrington jail and fled but were overtaken at Sheffield where one-third of the group was killed. The free school at Williamstown finally opened in 1790 and was chartered three years later as Williams College, the state's second college. The second mill to be built in the nation was erected in the 1700s on the Konkapot River at New Marlborough where paper was made from straw. The community also became a station for the Red Bird Stagecoach line which ran stages from Hartford to Albany. In 1801, Arthur Schofield started one of the nation's first woolen mills in Pittsfield while Zenas Crane established the state's first paper mill west of the Connecticut River in Dalton. By 1807, Elkanah Watson had brought Merino sheep to Pittsfield. Watson founded the Berkshire Agricultural Society which organized the first county agricultural fair in America in 1811. Pittsfield became the state's woolen-manufacturing center for several decades, where Schofield invented a wool-carding machine and began to manufacture looms. Susan B. Anthony was born in Adams in 1820 while William Cullen Bryant practiced law in Great Barrington. The 1840s brought French Canadians and Italians to the county and, in 1846, Crane Mills began manufacturing United States currency on their own special paper, produced only for that purpose. Ezra Cornell put the county's first telegraph station at Great Barrington in 1848 and a Berkshire Unitarian minister, Edmund H. Sears, wrote the now-famous Christmas hymn, "It Came Upon a Midnight Clear," in 1849. Sears was a native of Sandisfield. The county seat was moved from Lenox to Pittsfield in the 1860s and the Hoosac Tunnel was completed in 1875. At the time, it was the second-longest tunnel in the world. Three years later, North Adams separated from Adams and incorporated under its present name. Before World War I, the writings of Henry Ward Beecher, Nathaniel Hawthorne, Catherine Sedgewick, Oliver Wendell Holmes, Herman Melville and Henry Wadsworth Longfellow attracted wealthy Massachusetts, Connecticut and New York residents to the Berkshires as summer residents who often established large estates, built mansions and contributed a number of institutions to various communities. The war and income tax drove many away but they have since been replaced by artists, dancers, writers, musicians and tourists. Tanglewood, the summer home of the Boston Symphony, was donated in 1934 and today's Berkshire Music Festival lasts six weeks every summer.

**FEBRUARY 1761** • While chief justice, Hutchinson strengthened his Tory ties and opposed a measure to enlarge representation in the legislature as well as supported the issuance of writs of assistance to customs officials. These writs granted the officials very general powers of search and seizure, greatly angering the colonists whose smuggling activities were highly developed. The colonists cared naught about a trader's flag, only about his goods. At this time the young James Otis, a West Barnstable native and Harvard graduate, held office as the king's advocate general. He renounced his position in order to argue the case against writs of assistance in court before the judges and Chief Justice Hutchinson. Otis claimed the writs were too general, virtually allowing anyone to search anyone else's business or home, a situation ripe for abuse. He progressed to pronouncing the writs unconstitutional and defended each man's right to life, liberty and property, asserting the rights to be inherent and inalienable. John Adams called him a "flame of fire" and, though full of admiration, was somewhat disturbed at the strength with which Otis argued also the rights of Negroes. Adams favored gradual abolition of slavery but Otis was revolutionary and radical in his approach to freedom for everyone. "Then and there,"

later wrote Adams, "the child Independence was born."

**MAY, 1761** • Otis' defense of the Boston merchants gained him much notice and was the foundation for his eventual reputation as possibly the most influential colonial leader in the revolutionary movement. He was elected from Boston to the General Court.

**1761** • While a group of lawyers organized the Suffolk County Bar Association, Professor John Winthrop of Harvard, teacher of physics, chemistry and astronomy, took his students to Newfoundland to see a transit of Venus. He also taught that earthquakes were purely physical phenomena and not, he said, heavenly omens.

**1762** • The war was going too well for the British. Pitt in his zeal exceeded George III's traditional and noble concept of conquest, leading to his dismissal. George III then proceeded to pursue peace negotiations. Faneuil Hall burned but would soon be rebuilt according to its original plan.

**FEBRUARY 1763** • The Treaty of Paris awarded England all of North America west of Louisiana, from the Gulf of Mexico to upper Canada. Spain received French Louisiana in return for Florida. Also during the year, Thomas Secker, Archbishop of Canterbury, would again raise the hated question of colonial bishops. Pamphlets and sermons flew in response between Congregationalists, Presbyterians and Anglicans, and Samuel Adams used the issue to fuel the fire of discontent and to align the colonial clergy with the Whig Party.

**OCTOBER 7, 1763** • In response to a well-organized Indian campaign under Pontiac, England's new Prime Minister, George Grenville, decided to limit westward movement as a way to cap the expense of protecting the colonies. The West came under military rule and settlement was banned west of a Proclamation Line drawn down the crest of the Appalachian Mountains. Instead of looking at this as probably a temporary measure, the colonists interpreted it as a new policy of the Crown which restricted their freedom and economic opportunity. As in other cases, the law was defied by many. The English also decided the same year to station 10,000 British troops in the colonies at a cost of £350,000 per year, one-third of which should be paid by the Americans.

**APRIL 5, 1764** • Grenville continued what he considered to be a reasonable and moderate policy of offsetting a heavy war debt and mounting defense costs. The colonies, he decided, should: one, pay their fair share of expenses necessary for their own protection and, two, fulfill their proper economic role within the newly expanded Empire. The new Sugar Act was actually milder than the Molasses Act of 1733, cutting in half the duty to be paid on French and Spanish molasses. But it also levied new taxes on sugar and forbade the importation of rum. Besides interfering with the established triangular trade pattern developed by New England, the act threatened to drain more hard money from the colonies, which were squeezed even further by another act forbidding the printing of paper money throughout English America. An additional reform of the customs service attempted to crack down on smugglers while England continued its repressive policy of banning manufacturing in the colonies and requiring the purchase of English goods.

**MAY 24, 1764** • The Boston town meeting seethed with indignant colonists who protested the Sugar Act on the grounds of taxation without representation. A pleased Sam Adams wrote the Boston instructions against the act.

**SUMMER, 1764** • James Otis published a pamphlet entitled *The Rights of the British Colonies Asserted and Proved.* In it he expounded on theories of governmental forms, expanded his earlier arguments regarding the rights of the individual, considered the advantages of American representation in Parliament (though arguing for the superior policy of the colonies' own legislative powers), negated any difference between what was called internal and external taxation and denounced taxation without representation. The "colonists, black and white, born here," he advanced, "are freeborn British subjects." The General Court of Massachusetts formally endorsed the pamphlet and shipped copies of it off to London.

**AUGUST 1764** • Boston merchants met and agreed that they would boycott lace and ruffles from England.

**SEPTEMBER 1764** • Boston town mechanics took notice of the merchants' action and agreed to wear only leather work clothes manufactured in Massachusetts. Meanwhile, as the heady ale of independence first began to brew, the young lawyer John Adams married the daughter of a Weymouth minister, Abigail Smith. She would later become one of the first American promoters of women's suffrage.

**1765** • Massachusetts boasted a population estimated at some 240,000. While Governor Bernard fashioned a design for Harvard Hall, colonists dealt with a new revenue act which had been a year in the making.

**MARCH 22, 1765** • Parliament passed Grenville's Stamp Act which, taking effect on November 1, would require that almost anything printed must appear on special stamped paper shipped from London. Colonial Americans would be selected as stamp distributors who would distribute the paper and collect the taxes which Grenville hoped would amount to one-third of the funds needed for American defense.

**MAY 1765** • American newspapers were full of details concerning the ensuing Stamp Act, arousing towns and villages throughout Massachusetts.

**JUNE 6, 1765** • The Assembly decided to propose to the General Court an intercolonial meeting to establish unified resistance to the Stamp Act.

**JUNE 8, 1765** • The General Court drafted a circular letter to each colonial legislature calling for a Stamp Act Congress to meet in New York City, consisting of representatives from each colony.

**AUGUST 1765** • A month of upheaval on both sides of the ocean, August saw the fall of Grenville's ministry as George III wearied of his Prime Minister's nagging and pious sense of duty, and bristled at Grenville's regency bill which excluded the King's mother from the government. Grenville was replaced by the young leader of the Old Whigs, the Marquess of Rockingham. In Massachusetts, the revolutionary Sam Adams was instrumental in forming the middle-class farmers and artisans into action-oriented groups who called themselves the Sons of Liberty, ready to resist the Stamp Act "to the last extremity." These groups would spread throughout the colonies. After learning from the newspapers that Grenville had appointed the well-to-do Andrew Oliver as Boston's stamp distributor, the mob stoned and pillaged his house, setting an example for the rest of the colonies to follow. The next day Oliver was visited by a group of men who explained that to avoid further damage, Oliver would do well to renounce

the forthcoming commission which he did immediately and then again when it formally arrived. This riotous action against Oliver was approved by "the principal people of the town," according to Governor Bernard. Then the highly effective night violence was also turned on the Comptroller of Customs, one of the officers of the admiralty court, and on Lieutenant-Governor Hutchinson whose ancestral mansion was horribly ransacked and looted and all but destroyed. Hutchinson himself barely escaped the temper of the mob, as they wished to kill him. The greatest loss of all was the burning of Hutchinson's careful and large collection of original manuscripts regarding Massachusetts' history. In the light of day, most Bostonians recoiled at the latest "anarchy" and "abominable outrages and excesses on the persons or property of others." Even those who had longest preached on the right of revolution and against British policy, such as Jonathan Mayhew, though they were reluctant to identify the offenders, were loath to sanction the latest violence. They did not, however, make any offer to compensate the victims and they took great pains to divide the still-approved action against Oliver from the other incidents. This was the last of such pointed vengeance, with ensuing acts of resistance controlled to the point of lulling Hutchinson into believing that "his Massachusetts" was returning to normal. Hutchinson always professed a sincere loyalty to Massachusetts as did the colonists to the Crown. But the colonists could not reconcile Hutchinson's expressed loyalty and affection with his growing Tory sentiments. The citizens of Massachusetts in general took pride in being British subjects and part of the western world's greatest empire. But they also saw themselves as equal in every way to their brethren in Britain. In the area of self-government, they were actually more advanced than their English counterparts. They would gladly give allegiance to the King and contribute to the Empire as long as they were essentially left alone to manage their own daily affairs, practice their own religions and pursue their own fortunes. Even if they had adequate representation in Parliament, it was just too far away to be a practical governmental arrangement. In England, Parliament had gained supremacy over the King and the nobility, providing a welcome and supportive parallel for the colonial legislatures to exercise control over the colonies' royal governors. But, although the colonists gave lip service to the supremacy of Parliament over the Empire, the rub came when the colonists believed that Parliament was riding roughshod over their own legislatures. Parliament, they believed, had the right to supervise trade but not to tax. Taxation without representation was, in the colonists' minds, a direct attack on their power and their property.

**OCTOBER 14, 1765** • John Adams drew up the instructions for Braintree's representative to the General Court, charging that: 1) the Stamp Act would drain specie from the colonies in a time of scarce money and post-war recession; 2) the Courts of Admiralty, responsible for trying those guilty of transgressing the Acts of Navigation and Trade, had only one judge and no jury; and 3) the act was unconstitutional as well as burdensome. To Adams' surprise, it was only a matter of months before 40 other Massachusetts towns had copied and adopted the Braintree Instructions.

**OCTOBER 7-24, 1765** • The Stamp Act Congress drew representatives from nine colonies and would be the first intercolonial congress to meet in America, a foundation for those to come. "The Declarations" were adopted on October 19 and additional petitions were prepared, though not all the delegates would sign even these moderate and mild protestations. Parliament merely rejected them.

**NOVEMBER 1, 1765** • The day the Stamp Act was to go into effect, the colonists determined to proceed as if it were never proposed and the stamped paper lay unused as business carried on as usual. The most effective resistance came from the merchants who had all agreed to boycott British goods.

**JANUARY 17, 1766** • America's nonimportation agreements at a time of postwar recession adversely affected London merchants, who petitioned Parliament to repeal the Stamp Act.

**MARCH 18, 1766** • Rockingham used the economic situation as an excuse to repeal the Stamp Act but Parliament insisted on passing the Declaratory Act which affirmed their right to make laws and statutes binding the colonists "in all cases whatsoever." This last phrase was Rockingham's vague way of appeasing both those who thought the phrase did not include the right to tax and those who thought it did. In addition, the molasses duty was lowered again to only one penny per gallon.

**SUMMER, 1766** • England learned of the colonists' resistance to the billeting act, passed during Grenville's ministry, which required that each province provide food and shelter for those troops stationed there. The colonists protested by providing inadequate food and supplies and calling them gifts.

**JULY 1766** • The Rockingham ministry having passed from favor, William Pitt returned to power as Prime Minister. Pitt was popular with the colonists as he opposed Parliament's right to tax the Americans and pushed for the repeal of the Stamp Act. But he did not like the fact that his troops were not being properly fed. Pitt's failing health left Charles Townsend, Chancellor of the Exchequer, with a good deal of power, as Pitt often retired to the health resort at Bath.

**JUNE-JULY 1767** • Townsend ingratiated himself to English taxpayers by seeing that the English land tax was reduced and promising to fill the gap with revenue from the American colonies. Benjamin Franklin had earlier, during the Stamp Act controversy, stretched the truth with Parliament by saying that the colonists only objected to "internal" taxation. So Townsend determined to slap the provinces with "external" import duties on glass, lead, paper, paints and tea. The duties were to be collected in America and the entire system would now be run by a Board of Customs Commissioners stationed in Boston. While the Townsend Acts were being passed in Parliament, Abigail Adams gave birth to a son named John Quincy.

**OCTOBER 28, 1767** • At a town meeting, Boston merchants led resistance to the duties designed to raise revenue which they declared were an illegal "granting" of their property for tax purposes and not a mere trade regulation. They drew up a list of British goods, mainly luxury items, which would be boycotted as of December 31.

**NOVEMBER 5, 1767** • The customs commissioners arrived in Boston and the colonists soon felt that they were a greedy, malicious lot and perhaps England's worst decision regarding her willful provinces.

**JANUARY 1768** • Lord Hillsborough was appointed to a newly created office, Secretary of State for the Colonies, as part of the Grafton ministry. The Duke of Grafton led in the place of the ill and absent Pitt.

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

**FEBRUARY 11, 1768** • While the merchants braced to boycott, the Massachusetts General Court had Sam Adams and James Otis draft a circular letter to protest taxation without representation. The circulation of the letter among the colonies would prompt Governor Bernard to dissolve the Massachusetts legislature which voted 92 to 17 against rescinding the letter.

**MARCH 1768** • Boston merchants agreed to expand and extend their boycott if they were joined by New York and Philadelphia merchants.

**MAY 9, 1768** • John Hancock was a 31-year-old merchant prince who had taken over the House of Hancock at the age of 27, upon the death of his uncle, the richest merchant in Boston. The Harvard graduate was the major contributor to Sam Adams' war chest and the activities of the Sons of Liberty. So admiring was he of Adams that he commissioned the "Great Agitator's" portrait to hang in his drawing room. On this day, Hancock's sloop *Liberty* had entered Boston Harbor from Madiera carrying 25 casks of wine. Carefully following the customs laws, the ship paid the required duty and proceeded to load whale oil and tar. The tricky and manipulative customs commissioners had been allowing ships to give bond when they cleared to leave the harbor instead of before they loaded their cargo, and this was what the *Liberty* did. But the commissioners were angry with Hancock for previously protecting his legal rights and physically removing two minor customs officials from below decks of his ship *Lydia* where they officials had no right to be.

**JUNE 10, 1768** • The *Liberty* was seized for failing to give bond before loading. This act of the commissioners was seen as so insidious that it raised a mob of angry citizens who scared the commissioners out of Boston to Castle William, the fortress in the harbor. The commissioners had pled for troops since their arrival but now their plea was in earnest. Secretary Hillsborough, still fuming over the circular letter and Boston's defiance, heeded the request and prepared to send four regiments of British regulars from Halifax and England.

**AUGUST 1, 1768** • Boston merchants decided to act independently of the other colonies and drafted a far-reaching agreement not to import anything from England except for salt, coals, fishing and weaving tools, and ammunition. This strict boycott, which included the items to be dutied under the Townsend Acts, would go into effect Janaury 1, 1769 and last for a full year. Nonimportation agreements were later issued by merchants of other New England towns. These measures would successfully reduce English imports by half during 1768 and 1769.

**SEPTEMBER 13, 1768** • With the General Court barred from meeting by Governor Bernard, the Boston town meeting drafted resolutions to define their rights and called a Convention of Towns to meet instead.

**SEPTEMBER 22, 1768** • Representatives of some 100 towns from eastern and central Massachusetts and southern Maine met in Fanueil Hall to protest the quartering in Boston of troops who were on their way from Halifax and England. Though the importance of the meeting was summarily dismissed by Bernard and Hutchinson, the action demonstrated the colonists' belief that they had the right to assemble and speak in spite of the orders of the royal officers.

**SEPTEMBER 29, 1768** • The first regiments of British regulars arrived without incident to keep order in the feisty town of Boston.

**1769** • Boston remained relatively calm, so much so that Governor Bernard could find no excuse to declare martial law or employ the regulars against an uprising, despite the newspapers' incessant denunciations of himself, the commissioners and the troops. Hostility on the part of the colonists was obvious and harassment of the soliders was continual but nothing occurred that warranted troop action. Two of the four regiments were recalled to Halifax. Governor Bernard left and Hutchinson took over as acting governor. James Otis was struck on the head with a cutless wielded by a customs official, henceforth rendering Otis harmlessly insane with only occasional lucid intervals.

**1770** • George Whitefield would die this year in Newburyport, while William Billings of Boston published *The New England Psalm Singer,* a popular collection of church music.

**FEBRUARY 1770** • In England, the Duke of Grafton returned and Lord North, who had replaced the deceased Charles Townsend as Chancellor of the Exchequer in 1676, was chosen by George III to build a new ministry to keep the Old Whigs in power and demonstrate loyalty to the King rather than to the House of Commons. George found loyalty in Lord North but lost the colonies in the outcome.

**MARCH 5, 1770** • Lord North, with the King's support, succeeded in repealing the Townsend Acts except for the tax on tea which was left to remind the colonists of the supremacy of Parliament. Also, the customs commissioners would remain to enforce the Acts of Trade. Meanwhile, in Boston the radicals abused the soldiers in every way they could imagine short of a riot. Weekly, *The Journal of Public Occurrences* contrived scandalous stories about the redcoats who, for the most part, wished to be friendly toward the citizens. Instead, they were ambushed, clubbed and pelted with snowballs or stones. Citizens who invited a British officer to dinner were graphically warned of their error. An ugly incident had occurred at a local ropewalk where a few soldiers had taken part-time jobs to replace striking workers and supplement their own meager pay. As a result, on this evening of the formal repeal of the Townsend duties, a group of what John Adams later described as "a motley rabble of saucy boys, negroes and mulattoes, Irish teagues and outlandish Jack tars" gathered and ambushed several soldiers, beating them severely. According to the account of Thomas Gage, the British commander-in-chief of the troops stationed in America, several mobs formed and one tried to provoke the main guard, all of whom ignored the mob and remained quiet. With no results there, the mob fell on the lone sentinel of the customhouse. His calls for help along with reports of a few concerned citizens brought a sergeant and 12 soldiers followed by a Captain Preston. The captain actually stood between the troops and the mob, who proceeded to dare the soldiers to fire, pushing against the bayonets and trying to land as many blows with their clubs as their reach would allow. The mob pelted the soldiers with stones, bricks, ice, snowballs and repugnant language. When one of the rabble landed a particularly heavy blow on a soldier, the soldier fired. The captain turned to see who fired and received a blow on his arm that was meant for his head. With shouts of "fire," the mob grew bolder thinking that the British had only fired powder. Deciding their lives were truly in danger, several

soldiers fired, one after the other. Five colonists would die, including a sailor and mulatto Crispus Attucks who was reported to be the most aggressive member of the mob. Six more were wounded but no shots were fired at the soldiers. As more soldiers and citizens poured out of their barracks and homes to see the excitement, Hutchinson stepped out on the balcony of the Town House and, promising due course of law, appealed to the crowd to go home. Town selectmen circulated through the mob, also encouraging the citizens to go home and further violence was averted. Through much effort on Hutchinson's part and because Sam Adams wanted England to see Bostonians as principled, law-abiding citizens, the soldiers received a remarkably fair trial. They were defended by John Adams and Josiah Quincy, Jr. Six were acquitted and two were convicted of manslaughter and branded on the hand. Meanwhile the radicals labeled the incident "the Boston Massacre" and milked it for every ounce of popular resentment they could draw. The colonial Whigs would establish an annual oration as a memorial tradition, holding up the "Massacre" as the logical outcome of stationing standing troops among loyal citizens. The Fifth of March would continue to be observed until it was replaced by the Fourth of July.

**SUMMER 1770** • The Townsend duties had been repealed (except for tea), Lord North was conciliatory, and the nonimportation agreements began to collapse as economic prosperity began to build. Colonists submitted to the tea and molasses duties and concentrated on trade and personal gain. Both John Hancock and John Adams thought better of agitation and decided to pursue quieter lifestyles.

**1771** • The ministry of Lord North and Colonial Secretary Hillsborough decided to appoint native Bostonian Hutchinson as the provincial governor of Massachusetts. Customs officials relaxed their practices and the harbor teemed with activity. The year would see the collection of £8,921 in customs duties, almost twice that collected in New York. From 1770 to 1773, Boston would import almost half a million pounds of tea. A shortage of corn and wheat in England would heighten demand for American commodities and English specie would be shipped to the colonies for the first time. In 1771, the population of Boston was about 15,000. The number of indentured servants had declined and children were leaving home earlier to seek their own way in a world of increasing opportunity and changing skills. The new economic patterns gave opportunity to men of no property such as sailors, hired workers in shops and those who sought to train as artisans. Between 1687 and 1771, the population of Boston doubled while the number of men without property quadrupled, though they did not form a cohesive class. They were allowed to hold certain town offices and responsibilities and participate in town business. In 1687, 85 percent of Boston real-estate holdings were assessed between two and ten pounds. In 1771, the same percentage ranged from 12 to 200 pounds. During this time, the share of the taxable wealth of the community controlled by the lower half of the propertied population declined from 12 to ten percent. By 1771, the wealthiest 25 percent of the taxable population controlled 78 percent of the assessed wealth of Boston. Rising land values had chased farmers from the city. Middle-class artisans, shopkeepers and traders lived better than their seventeenth-century counterparts but actually controlled a smaller percentage of the total wealth. In 1698, a total of 261 Bostonians out of a population of about 6,000 owned shares in a seagoing vessel. In the first years of the 1700s, almost one-third of Boston's adult male population owned at least part of a trading vessel. By 1771, less than five percent of the taxable population held shares in shipping of ten tons or more, even though the total tonnage owned by Bostonians had doubled since 1698. The top quarter of the population in terms of total assets held 90 percent of Boston's tonnage. Merchant prince John Hancock's taxable wealth totaled £18,000 while James Otis was assessed at £2,040. In contrast, a taxable estate of £40 qualified William Barret to be elected the town's Measurer of Coal Baskets. The wealth, particularly in Boston, had increased; there was more capital and currency available and, in turn, greater specialization in the economic structure.

**MARCH 5, 1772** • This year, revolutionary Joseph Warren treated the second annual memorial gathering to radical rhetoric of the times' best ornamental style, denouncing the far-away, unknown Parliament that enslaved the colonists by sovereignly imposing taxes and robbing them of their property. He also reminded the faithful of those British soldiers who had been "acquitted of murder" for the "massacre" and the cries from the soil of their fathers' blood and hard-won liberty. In general, most colonists strove not to obtain freedom but to retain the freedom they already enjoyed, upon which they felt the British government to be infringing. Especially in Massachusetts, colonists had freedom of speech, assembly and press, no guilds or feudal system or nobility, and widespread land ownership. Most were of English blood and Puritan, or at least Protestant, sentiment. These few common threads and a common enemy would eventually pull together a contentious, divisive and locally focused group of colonies.

**JUNE 13, 1772** • The new Governor, Hutchinson, removed the meeting of the Assembly (the representative portion of the General Court) to Cambridge into the halls of Harvard to put a little distance between the legislature and Boston's radical element. Here the young students could leave their studies to hear the oratory of James Otis and Joseph Warren and become radicals themselves. The question arose as to who was to pay the governor's salary. The colonial legislature had always paid it and that gave them some control over a Crown-appointed official but now the Crown, it seemed, would pay the governor itself and out of the customs revenues. Now suspicious of any Parliamentary move, the colonists saw this as one more effort to subjugate their power and liberty. Samuel and John Adams both cried out against the new measure in the town meeting, the General Court and the *Boston Gazette*. But the clamor died down by summer because few farmers across the province really cared and were glad to have Hutchinson's luxuries paid for elsewhere. Hutchinson was now happily independent of the Assembly.

**AUGUST. 1772** • Lord Dartmouth replaced Hillsborough as England's Secretary of State for the Colonies.

**NOVEMBER 2, 1772** • News had arrived that the Crown would pay the salaries of the judges also. This was an excellent opportunity for Sam Adams to regain the influence that he had lost during the complacency of prosperity. For some time, Adams had been formulating a plan to form committees of correspondence to keep the Whig cause alive in the colonies. Hutchinson refused to call the General Court to discuss the new issue of the judges' salaries, so Adams convinced the



*FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS* ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

Boston town meeting to adopt his idea. The town body established a 21-man standing Committee of Correspondence to draft a document listing colonial rights and the infractions thereof, to communicate this to other towns and invite the formation of similar committees and statements. This was in essence a revival of the Sons of Liberty (Hutchinson called them the Sons of Sedition) but in a legal form with the blessing of the town meetings.

**NOVEMBER 20, 1772** • As a member of the Committee, Sam Adams drafted the soon-to-be-famous Boston Pamphlet which drew on all that had been written on both sides of the ocean regarding human liberty. His rhetoric on the rights of the colonists as natural men, Christians and British subjects, laid the foundation for all of the Revolutionary documents to come. The pamphlet was widely circulated and, to Hutchinson's great surprise and dismay, stirred support, excitement and a unified resistance.

**DECEMBER 1772** • A packet of private letters that had been surreptitiously obtained were shipped from England by Benjamin Franklin. Written in earlier years by colonial governors and other high officials, the papers included several letters by Hutchinson. Though Franklin expressly ordered that they be kept from the newspapers, in the coming months, every colonist who could read (Massachusetts had a particularly high rate of literacy) discovered the close relationship between the actions of the British government and the requests of the royal officials. As a result, hatred for Hutchinson would greatly increase.

**JANUARY 6, 1773** • Hutchinson stood before the entire General Court of 200 councilors and representatives to deliver a carefully prepared speech that would closely define the constitutional question of colonists' rights but, instead of bringing a group of chastened colonists to their loyal British senses, it would explode in the governor's face. He explained that their claims had no basis in the Massachusetts Charter, and that when a subject emigrated from England, that subject no longer had a right to direct representation in Parliament but Parliament rightfully retained supremacy over the Empire and its subjects. Hutchinson stepped off the end of the gangplank when he said "I know of no line that can be drawn between the supreme authority of Parliament and the total independence of the colonies." The gauntlet was thrown. The delegates were shocked. Hutchinson never dreamed that instead of submitting to Parliament and returning to reason that the colonists would "regretfully" entertain the "unhappy Alternative" and choose the latter road. John Adams was "amazed at the Governor, for forcing on this Controversy."

**MARCH 1773** • Sam Adams' idea for committees of correspondence spread to the towns of Massachusetts and then to the other colonies. The Virginia House of Burgesses proposed that all colonies adopt the movement in order quickly to share their views on any new act of Parliament.

**MAY 10, 1773** • Parliament acted in the interests of the financially troubled British East India Company. The colonists were importing and paying duty on a large amount of English tea but were smuggling an even larger amount from Holland. Smuggled tea was cheaper than the other because of the English export duties and the several middlemen that British tea was required to go through. Parliament removed both the English export duties and the sales restrictions, leaving only the Townsend duty which was collected in America. This allowed the British East India Company to sell tea directly to certain American retailers (consignees) at a cheaper price than they could smuggle it. Tea-loving colonists would now have access to cheaper tea but the American wholesalers and retailers who were not consignees would be left out of a large and important piece of business. The Tea Act of 1773 would steep a bitter brew on both sides of the Atlantic.

**JUNE 1773** • The impact of Hutchinson's letters, which asserted that the colonists did not have equal rights with Englishmen, spurred the House of Representatives (the Assembly of the General Court), to condemn Governor Hutchinson and his brother-in-law, Lieutenant-Governor Andrew Oliver, by a vote of 101 to five. The Assembly requested that the officials be removed from office. As his fellow colonists had turned on him for his beliefs and the Crown had frowned on him for his behavior, Hutchinson longed to gain an opportunity to vindicate himself.

**SUMMER-FALL 1773** • Merchants who would be left out of the sweet, new tea deal rose with the radicals' support in a bitter cry of "monopoly" and warned the colonists that they were being duped into paying the Townsend duty and that, when the East India Company had put all of the tea merchants out of business, the Company would jack up their price. Two of the consignees were Hutchinson's own sons and all were colonists whom the British Company deemed "safe." First brought before a public meeting at Boston's Liberty Tree (so named by the Sons of Liberty) called by Boston's North End Caucus and then challenged formally by the resolves of the town meeting, the consignees resisted and stood firm. They would not renounce their commissions. When the tea ships arrived in the harbor, the Committee of Correspondence called for a Meeting of the People, inviting the surrounding towns to join Boston in a boycott of the tea. The colonists decided that they wanted the tea shipped back to England, which it would have been by mid-December if the duty was not paid. The colonists refused to pay the duty and Hutchinson, believing he was acting as Parliament would wish him to, refused to allow the ships to leave the harbor without unloading their cargoes and collecting the duty. Law required that once the ships entered the customs limits, the duty must be paid.

**NOVEMBER 5-6, 1773** • A Boston town meeting endorsed the position taken by Philadelphia in October against the Tea Act. The Philadelphia Resolutions of October would be formally printed in January, 1774, saying that "it is the duty of every American to oppose this attempt . . . by the East India Company . . ." or be "an enemy to his country." Boston colonists also resolved that the tea should not be landed.

**DECEMBER 16, 1773** • Some 7,000 people filled Old South Church and Washington Street on this rainy morning. The Meeting of the People tried one last time to convince Hutchinson to agree to dismiss the ships from the harbor but he stood firm. With the statement "This meeting can do nothing further to save the country," Sam Adams signaled perhaps 60 volunteers who would dress as Mohawk Indians and Negroes and, that evening, would toss 342 big chests of tea, weighing 90,000 pounds and worth £9,000, overboard to "steep" in the harbor. As the old folksong *Revolutionary Tea* would chronicle, the colonists "poured out every pound in the dark and boiling tide," saying to Mother England, "Your

tea you may have when 'tis steeped enough, But never a tax from me." Oddly enough, this dramatic and somewhat childish act accomplished what beaten soldiers, ignored taxes, inflammatory rhetoric and endless petitions had not. Boston's Tea Party forced England's hand and finally brought the showdown for which Sam Adams had worked so desperately for so long. Control was kept. The only property destroyed was the tea and one brass padlock, dutifully replaced. The next day, John Adams would write to James Warren that "the Dye is cast: The People have passed the River and cutt away the Bridge:. . . .This is the grandest Event, which has ever yet happened." The people of Massachusetts as well as the other colonies rallied behind Boston's leadership.

**FEBRUARY 4, 1774** • In England, the cabinet met and the attorney general was asked if he thought the late action of the colonists amounted to high treason. The still-conciliatory Lord North wished to avoid trouble but the King was furious and hurt that his colonists would behave toward him in such a manner. Even normally pro-American English public opinion was aroused. The King would also speak for Parliament when he wrote to Lord North that "The dye is now cast. The Colonies must either submit or triumph."

**MARCH 31, 1774** • Parliament, determined to make an example of Boston in order to bring the colonies into proper submission, closed Boston Harbor. No loading or unloading of goods was to take place anywhere in the harbor. The British thought that this action would soon have the desired results and, then the harbor would be reopened. The move was opposed by the Old Whigs and the English merchants.

**APRIL 9, 1774** • Lord Dartmouth, colonial secretary, wrote to General Thomas Gage who had returned to England from his command in the colonies. The letter explained that martial law would be imposed in Massachusetts, that Hutchinson would be removed as governor and that Gage was to be the new military governor. Gage was to return immediately to Boston, close the port and move the seat of government to Salem. The Tea Party villains were to be found and prosecuted and the governor's council was not necessarily to be trusted. If the town buckled under, its privileges would be restored.

**MAY 20, 1774** • What became known as the Coercive or Intolerable Acts continued as the King sealed the Administration of Justice Act which stated that royal officials in America charged with capital crimes would be transferred to England for trial. The Massachusetts Government Act, passed the same day, nullified the Massachusetts Charter of 1692 and gave sweeping powers to the royal governor. The governor would appoint the Governor's Council, all judges and all sheriffs who would in turn appoint all juries. The town meetings would be held only once a year to handle strictly local matters, and were to be authorized by the governor.

**MAY 23, 1774** • The last of the series of Coercive Acts, the Quartering Act, became law, allowing colonial governors to commandeer unoccupied but privately owned buildings to quarter British troops, many of whom had been forced to sleep on Boston Common. This same day, New York's Committee of Fifty-one drafted a response to the circular letter sent by Boston's Committee of Correspondence which called for a trade boycott of Great Britain. New York did not wish to stop trade but did think that the situation with England required a "congress of deputies from the colonies in general. . ., assembled without delay. . .."

**JUNE 1, 1774** • The port at Boston was officially closed and the Quartering Act became effective the following day. The harbor would remain closed until the destroyed tea was paid for, the duty paid and an apology submitted. As the water was Boston's lifeblood, the act took only weeks to produce large-scale unemployment and shortages of food and supplies. The other colonies would rally to send provisions to the city under siege. Hutchinson departed for England never to return. He died in Croydon on June 3, 1780, leaving behind him *The History of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay* and *The Witchcraft Delusion of 1692*, as well as his diary, speeches and letters.

**SUMMER 1774** • The new laws did not stop town meetings. The colonists decided, in order to be certain of widespread support and not be divided over economic consequences, to call county conventions. Eight of the 11 Massachusetts counties held conventions. Barnstable was still under the control of Hutchinson's Tory allies. These county meetings served as a loose, insurgent government until the autumn of the year. The groups effectively nullified the Massachusetts Government Act, prevented any courts from sitting under the new law, and recommended the activation of town militias and the storage of military supplies. As 12 colonies had established Committees of Correspondence, it was arranged that a Continental Congress would meet in Philadelphia in September, all in blatant defiance of the new laws and military regime in Massachusetts. Meanwhile, Boston's old rival Salem put aside ancient animosities and offered its harbor facilities to Boston merchants. Wheat arrived along with meat on the hoof and cash contributions including £50 from a Virginia planter named George Washington.

**SEPTEMBER 1, 1774** • Boston was full of redcoats, 4,000 British regulars, as a result of the harbor blockade. Learning that gunpowder had been collected at Mystic, the British marched this night to the Mystic River above Charlestown and destroyed the cache. Immediately the countryside rang with the cries that Boston was under attack, that cannonballs were destroying the city and that blood ran in the streets. The next morning about 3,000 minutemen stood defiantly on the common at Cambridge with the news of 10,000 more only 20 miles away and closing. By that evening, reports were received of some 40,000 to 50,000 militiamen surrounding Boston. Alarms had sounded as far west as the Connecticut Valley. The people were ready but the rumor was false and the action premature if the colonists were to have any punch at all against what was currently the world's greatest empire. Fortunately for the colonists, action would come later.

**SEPTEMBER 5, 1774** • The First Continental Congress convened at Philadelphia, a gathering of 55 representative of 12 colonies from New Hampshire to South Carolina (Maine was part of Massachusetts). From Massachusetts came the cousins, John and Sam Adams. While John dined sumptuously and greatly enjoyed the Philadelphians' hospitality, Joseph Galloway observed of Sam Adams that "He eats little, drinks little, sleeps little, thinks much, and is most decisive and indefatigable in the pursuit of his objects." On September 9, Suffolk County, Massachusetts had passed the Suffolk Resolves which stated that the colonists had no obligation to obey the Coercive Acts. About two weeks later, the Congess approved the resolutions which also called for the stoppage of trade, preparation for war and the formation of the free state of Massachusetts until and unless the Coercive



 ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

Acts were repealed. The news of the Suffolk County Convention had arrived in the saddlebags of Paul Revere, the Boston silversmith and political cartoonist of French Huguenot (Calvinist) ancestry who was on his third ride to carry news of important events to other colonies.

**OCTOBER 7, 1774** • Defying the orders of Parliament, the General Court's Assembly met in Concord and declared itself a Provincial Congress, naming Paul Revere as official courier to the Continental Congress. A Committee of Safety was formed under the leadership of John Hancock to collect guns and ammunition and organize the militia for action. The Provincial Congress now served as the government of Massachusetts.

**OCTOBER 14, 1774** • The Continental Congress adopted a statement declaring colonial rights and grievances.

**OCTOBER 20, 1774** • The 12 colonies of the Congress agreed to the nonimportation and nonconsumption of English goods and the nonexportation of colonial resources or products to England. The Association, as it was called, would cut off imports as of December 1 and exports as of the next September 10 if the Coercive Acts were not repealed by that time. Congress also agreed not to drink imported tea, madeira, or port wine. Local rum was permissible. If by May 10, 1775 their grievances had not been redressed, the Congress would meet again. They adjourned on October 22. Meanwhile the colonists refused to supply Gage's soldiers and the British general was forced to bring help and supplies from Nova Scotia and New York to build barracks to winter his troops.

**DECEMBER 8, 1774** • The First Massachusetts Provincial Congress adopted a set of resolutions to "encourage agriculture, manufactures, and economy, so as to render this state as independent of every other state as the nature of our country will admit." The citizens were also called upon to use local and colonial manufactures in preference to all others.

**JANUARY 20, 1775** • Across the ocean, the Earl of Chatham (William Pitt) rose to suggest to the House of Lords that the British troops be removed from Boston. The Americans had many friends in England and the Old Whigs would have given the colonists much of what they wanted but they were not in power. English merchants petitioned Parliament to repeal the Coercive Acts. Conciliatory bills were proposed but not passed.

**FEBRUARY 1, 1775** • The Second Massachusetts Provincial Congress, still under the leadership of John Hancock, held its meeting in Cambridge and continued to prepare the colony for war.

**FEBRUARY 26, 1775** • British troops attempted to seize the military supplies stored at Salem but were turned back without violence.

**MARCH 22, 1775** • The Second Provincial Congress moved to Concord and continued their business until four days before the fateful shot was fired that reverberated "around the world." On this same day, in the House of Commons, Edmund Burke delivered his famous "Speech on Conciliation with America," wishing to reconcile British superiority with American liberty and proposing that the right of Parliament to tax was valid but not worth the cost of military suppression of loyal subjects.

**MARCH 30, 1775** • Parliament passed the New England Restraining Act which limited trade with New England to England and Ireland alone and banned New England fishermen from the Grand Banks off Nova Scotia and Newfoundland. But blood would spill before the news of this latest disciplinary action reached the colonies.

**APRIL 5, 1775** • The Massachusetts Provincial Congress adopted 53 articles of war under the leadership of President Joseph Warren.

**APRIL 18, 1775** • General Gage had stalled as long as his government would allow. He wanted more troops for a show of strength but was refused. He desired no confrontation but was ordered to act. He conceived a secret plan to seize the military supplies stored by the Provincial Congress at Concord, some 20 miles west of Boston, a much longer march than that to Mystic. Lieutenant Colonel Francis Smith opened sealed orders this night for the operation that he would command. Colonists guessed that the busy redcoats had Concord in mind. Gage also intended to send his "lobsterbacks" to Lexington, where Sam Adams and John Hancock had fled following Parliament's order that they be brought to England for trial. The two fugitives had taken refuge in the home of the Reverend Mr. Jonas Clarke. This night of the 18th, Hancock's future wife Dorothy Quincy brought the two men "a fine salmon for their dinner." The immediate question for the colonists was the route of the British. Would they take the longer land route through Roxbury and Brookline or would they row across the mouth of the Charles River to Charlestown? The 700 British regulars gathered around the rowboats under the watchful eyes of the colonial spies. Revere received the intelligence and went to find Joseph Newman, sexton of the Episcopal Christ Church (North Church), who had climbed out the window of his mother's house which was full of English officers who were billeted there. As a boy, Revere had been a bellringer at North Church, the highest edifice in the city. Revere sent Newman up to the North Church steeple to place the two lanterns which signalled to the waiting Committee of Safety in Charlestown that the approach was by sea. One lantern would have indicated the land route. As the Provincial Congress' official courier, Revere accepted the patriotic offer of a local woman's petticoat to muffle his oars while he rowed across the Charles to a waiting horse that belonged to the Deacon John Larkin of Boston. William Dawes, Jr. rode from Cambridge and the two messengers both headed for Lexington to warn the countryside, alert Adams and Hancock, and move muskets, powder and important papers out of reach of the British. Pursued by a British patrol, Dawes fell off his horse, lost his watch but escaped. Revere reached Lexington, warned Hancock and Adams and aided Hancock's clerk John Lovell in hiding Hancock's trunk which contained subversive papers. Revere struck off for Concord but was captured by another British patrol who took his horse and then let him go. He hurried back to Lexington on foot where he ran into Dr. Samuel Prescott who was returning home from a late courting session. The good doctor agreed to warn Concord and was the only rider to reach the town. The British marched on relentlessly through the night while the patriots managed to move the majority of their military stores. As word spread, minutemen mustered as far away as New Hampshire and Connecticut. About 70 members of the Lexington militia gathered in Buckman's Tavern for a tankard of rum as the British approached in the pre-dawn light. "Lobsterbacks are down the rud, apiece" came the word from the lookouts and the men

assembled under Captain John Parker on Lexington Green, mustered in a line parallel to the path of the redcoats. Colonel Smith's regulars were halted as the rising sun revealed the grim faces of the company of minutemen, under orders to stand their ground. Captain Parker had also instructed his men not to "fire unless fired upon, but if they mean to have a war let it begin here." British Major John Pitcairn called to the men on the Green, saying "Disperse, ye rebels, ye villians, disperse, disperse in the name of the King. Lay down your arms." As the order was accompanied by the click of many British musket hammers in the front ranks, the grumbling rebels prepared to disperse. But from behind a stone wall came a shot and a flash of powder. Was it a rum-emboldened citizen? Was it an agent planted by Sam Adams? Whoever it was, the fall of his hammer started a revolution, though the people whose blood flowed from British bullets still only wanted equal rights and self-government under a common King. Except for a few visionaries like Sam Adams, independence was not a goal. The shot triggered others by the British and when the smoke cleared, eight citizens of Lexington lay dead or mortally wounded, ten lay wounded but would recover, and the others managed to return fire and make their escape. Jonathan Harrington crawled to his house at Harrington and Bedford Streets and died at his wife's feet on his own doorstep. The British continued on to Concord, six miles further west. There they found and destroyed what remained of the colonial cache. The warnings, reports and the British activity and smoke brought some 450 militiamen to North Bridge under Major John Butterick. Several more colonists would die but the surprised redcoats were repulsed. Their original mission accomplished, at least in part, the British retreated to Boston. They had only destroyed a small quantity of arms and had not found Hancock or Adams, but they would pay a heavy toll for the lives they took. After the first organized attack on British troops was made at Concord, other sniping began by the Americans at Meriam's Corner and continued through the countryside on the Redcoat's long march back to the harbor town. The British would have 73 die and almost 200 wounded. The Americans lost 49 lives and cared for nearly 50 wounded soldiers. In 1842, a 91-year-old veteran of Concord was asked why he went to fight the British that day. "We always had governed ourselves," was his simple answer, "and we always meant to. They didn't mean we should."

**MAY 10, 1775** • The Second Continental Congress convened as planned at Philadelphia with both Adamses and John Hancock present. In light of the death of former president, Peyton Randolph, John Hancock was chosen by the body to wield the gavel. Envoys were sent to England, Canada and the Indians, and a provincial army and navy were created. Meanwhile, Gage received his long-awaited reinforcements, swelling his ranks to 10,000, not including Admiral Graves' fleet. Gage was also joined by Generals Howe, Clinton and Burgoyne.

**JUNE 15, 1775** • John Adams nominated Virginian George Washington as commander-in-chief of the Army of the United Colonies, an action which sorely disappointed John Hancock, who nurtured the ambition, himself, for the office. Hancock would be appointed major general of the Massachusetts militia but, again, his hopes of leading troops against the British in Rhode Island were never realized. Adams' action represented the formation of a Massachusetts-Virginia alliance in the Congress which would help forge future events. Loyalty to the King was still strong and the actions of the Congress were taken in his name. The redcoats were said to represent the stubborn ministers and bad counselors of the King. The Americans still hoped for the return of such friends as Lord Chatham (William Pitt) and the voice of reason. Only the Adamses with Virginia's Lees, Pennsylvania's Franklin and South Carolina's Gadsden favored independence but they dared not yet lift up the idea.

**JUNE 17, 1775** • Militiamen had flocked by the thousands to surround the British army in Boston. Gage offered pardons to everyone, except Hancock and Sam Adams, who would lay down their arms. The colonists answered by fortifying Breed's Hill on the night of the 16th. Colonial officer William Prescott had been sent to occupy Bunker Hill which was just to the north in Charlestown but confused the two hills. The next day, some 2,200 British regulars twice attacked the hill and twice were repulsed with heavy casualties. An estimated 3,200 of the colonials took part in the battle but, after the second wave of British regulars retreated, the Americans ran out of powder. A third wave of British troops gained the hill and surmounted the pile of stones that formed the breastworks. As musket stocks shattered in combat, the stones became the Americans' weapon of last resort. The battle drew to a close as nearly half, 1,054, of the disciplined redcoats lay dead or wounded. "A dear bought victory," wrote General Clinton. The colonists counted only 441 dead or wounded. Among the dead were American orator and physician Joseph Warren and British officer Major John Pitcairn. The British won the day but at a terrible cost and the Americans showed a spirit that the surprised British had not seen in the French Wars. Though the hill was lost, the Americans had gained a spiritual victory and learned that they could effectively face the Empire's army.

**JUNE 23, 1775** • General George Washington left Philadelphia on his way to Boston to assume command of the Continental Army (as it was popularly known) from General Artemas Ward. On the way, he would hear of the spirited clash which came to be known as the Battle of Bunker Hill. More British officers lost their lives there than in the remaining portion of the war. It was also the last of the real fighting to take place in Massachusetts.

**JULY 3, 1775** • Washington arrived in Cambridge to take command of some 15,000 undisciplined, untrained militiamen and began the arduous task of molding them into an army. Massachusetts' Provincial Congress, meeting in nearby Watertown (temporary seat of state government), ordered that every district in the colony should henceforth be a town.

**JULY 8, 1775** • The Continental Congress drafted the Olive Branch Petition which called upon the King to stop the war, repeal the Coercive Acts and restore harmony between these mother and daughter countries. Two copies were sent to the colonial envoys in England.

**AUGUST 23, 1775** • The King refused to receive a petition from a rebel group, proclaiming that a general rebellion existed and that "utmost endeavors" should be made "to suppress such rebellion, and to bring the traitors to justice."

**OCTOBER 1775** • The Continental Congress formed the Continental Navy and authorized the building of 13 frigates. George Washington commissioned the U.S. Navy's first ship.



FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1982

General John Glover's privateer schooner *Hannah*, in Beverly, Massachusetts. *Hannah* with her crew of Marbleheaders was the first vessel to fly the Continental flag.

**NOVEMBER 16, 1775** • Once again Edmund Burke submitted a proposal to the House of Commons calling for reconciliation but it was defeated by a two to one ratio. Several prominent Englishmen, including Lord Barrington, the secretary of war, urged that the troops be brought home and the colonies allowed to choose either independence or their own terms for remaining in the Empire. If voices of reason had prevailed or cycles of power been different, there may never have been a Revolutionary War or an independent nation across the water. But George III would not yield to an American rebellion anymore than his great-grandfather or grandfather had yielded to the Scots rebellions of 1715 and 1745.

**NOVEMBER 27, 1775** • Abigail Adams wrote to her much-missed husband John in Philadelphia of her fears concerning the new government and the form it would take. "I am more and more convinced that man is a dangerous creature; and that power," she wrote, "whether vested in many or a few, is ever grasping. . . ."

**DECEMBER 22, 1775** • Parliament passed an act which prohibited any type of trade or commerce with the Thirteen Colonies, declaring all colonial vessels subject to seizure and colonial seamen liable to impressment in the British navy. Boston was under seige by the Americans and the British troops were content to winter there. The Queen's Light Dragons ripped the pews from the Old South Church and used it for an indoor riding arena. The city became a refuge to Tory citizens while Cambridge was headquarters for the Continental Army and a Whig stronghold. Continental revenge was taken on the Episcopal Christ Church in Cambridge.

**JANUARY 1, 1776** • A new flag sporting thirteen stripes (Georgia had joined the fray) but with the Union Jack in the canton was raised over the American camp in Cambridge.

**JANUARY 23, 1776** • The Continental Congress urged Massachusetts' General Court to issue a proclamation ousting the royal governor which they did on this day. The "Proclamation of the Great and General Court" also acknowledged the election of a Council and exhorted the people to lead "sober, religious and peaceable lives. . . ."

**MARCH 2, 1776** • The Americans had been supplied with cannons from British Fort Ticonderoga, captured ten months earlier by the Vermonters. These they mounted on Dorchester Heights and began the bombardment of Boston. News had arrived in Massachusetts of Parliament's trade ban, as had copies of a bold treatise on natural human rights and the evils of monarchy written by an English Quaker recently of Philadelphia named Thomas Paine. The pamphlet was entitled *Common Sense* and would receive wide readership throughout the colonies, shocking many whose thoughts had never entertained life without a king or rights in terms other than "those of Englishmen." Paine drew upon the ideas of English philosopher John Locke whose treatise on "government by the consent of the governed" was composed to defend the removal of the English king in the 1640s and again in 1688. Those who read widest and thought deepest struggled the most with the political ramifications of the current events. But Paine lifted colonial actions above the level of local experience. "The cause of America," he wrote, "is in a great measure the cause of all mankind."

**MARCH 17, 1776** • General Howe was tempted to attack the heights from which the cannonballs flew but remembered the result of the British assault on Breed's Hill and decided to remove the army to Halifax, Nova Scotia. The Tories also wisely left, scattering to Canada, England and the West Indies. Still sovereign of the seas, the British navy accomplished this feat in less than two weeks while Washington helplessly watched. Boston was free again and even the Continental Army would soon leave for New York. Meanwhile the long occupation and the presence of so many troops led to looting and vandalism and an outbreak of smallpox. Though born in Massachusetts, the military action of the Revolution would move to New York and other colonies while those who tended the home fires of the Bay State would wage a war of economy, supply and survival.

**MARCH 31, 1776** • Abigail Adams wrote these instructions to her lawyer husband: "In the new code of laws which I suppose it will be necessary for you to make I desire you would remember the ladies and be more generous and favorable to them than your ancestors."

**MAY 1776** • The Continental Congress encouraged the colonies to form their own state governments and two million livres in aid was approved for the Americans by France and Spain.

**SUMMER 1776** • Demonstrating that Massachusetts had not descended into anarchy as the British expected, the Provincial Congress reopened the courts which had been closed by the Coercive Acts.

**JULY 2, 1776** • The Continental Congress in Philadelphia adopted Virginia's proposal of independence and declared the United Colonies free and independent states. John Adams thought that this date would be the annual day of celebration which he felt certain would be observed henceforth with much "pomp and parade." But the following day he wrote to his wife Abigail, "The People will have unbounded Power. And the People are extremely addicted to Corruption and Venality, as well as the Great. . . .I must submit all my Hopes and Fears, to an overruling Providence, . . .unfashionable as the Faith may be."

**JULY 4, 1776** • The Congress of the new United States adopted the Declaration of Independence penned largely by Thomas Jefferson and signed upon its passage only by John Hancock, president of the proceedings. The rest would sign a special parchment copy later. Hancock, singled out with Sam Adams as a wanted man in England, deliberately made his signature large enough for the King to read without his glasses.

**MID-JULY 1776** • The Declaration was received in Boston, unanimously approved and read from the balcony of the Old State House. It was readily embraced by the many Massachusetts townspeople whose town meetings had already pledged to support independence "with their lives and fortunes. . . ." During the conflict, Massachusetts towns formed committees of correspondence, voted bounties for volunteer service in the army, sent out their militias and provided arms, ammunition and supplies to the soldiers. Town government was the core of military activity. Across the water in England, a supporter of George III saluted the importance of Massachusetts' effective employment and continual development of town government by saying that "The town meeting at Boston is the hot-bed of sedition. It is there that all their

in response to MA voters being fed up

dangerous insurrections are engendered; it is there that the flame of discord and rebellion was first lighted up and disseminated over the Provinces."

**SEPTEMBER 17, 1776** • The Massachusetts House of Representatives of the General Court asked the towns for permission to draft a new constitution for Massachusetts now that its charter was essentially void.

**OCTOBER 22, 1776** • In considering the proposal of the General Court, the town of Concord agreed that a new constitution was vital, but resolved that the people in a statewide constitutional convention should frame the state government and not the existing government apart from the people. Because of this issue and the question of representation, the towns rejected this offer as well as the draft submitted by the General Court in 1778.

**WINTER 1776** • Massachusetts merchants and seamen found a new occupation during the struggle with England. American privateers would capture 342 British merchantmen during this year alone. During the entire course of the war, Boston would commission 365 vessels as privateers and Salem's harbor would welcome 445 prizes won at sea. The war would also be a civil war as almost one-third of the American population was loyalist.

**JANUARY 13, 1777** • The blacks of Massachusetts presented a petition to the House of Representatives of the General Court claiming the newly declared natural and unalienable rights of man and asking that any Negro child born in the state no longer be held as a slave when that child reached the age of 21.

**NOVEMBER 17, 1777** • The Continental Congress offered the Articles of Confederation to the states for their individual ratification. This "loose friendship" had no strength to govern the independent-minded states. The following year, the Congress resolved that any officer of the new United States who attended a play would lose his office.

**FEBRUARY 6, 1778** • John Adams and Silas Deane had joined Benjamin Franklin in France in 1777 in order to achieve recognition and aid from Britain's old rival. On this day, the French signed two treaties with the Americans, one of amity and commerce and the other of alliance.

**FEBRUARY 17, 1778** • In England, Lord North pushed his new conciliatory bill through Parliament and prepared to send a commission to America headed by the Earl of Carlisle who was authorized to offer the Americans everything they wanted save "open and avowed Independence." Washington later advised the Congress to ignore the Carlisle Commission and hold out for independence.

**SPRING, 1778** • Disregarding the towns' advice that a popularly elected convention draft a constitution, the General Court proceeded to draft their own version which was defeated by the voters five to one. News arrived of the French alliance in May.

**JULY 1778** • A fleet of French ships carrying French soldiers arrived in the newly declared American states with naval supply contracts that were eagerly gobbled up by Boston merchants who welcomed France's cold, hard cash. Privateering continued with great fervor out of Boston, Salem and Beverly by the Cabots, Lees and Derbys as well as Bostonians John Codman, Stephen Higginson and Thomas Russell, among others. Writing to his cousin Sam Adams from France, John Adams advised strongly against acquiring heavy war debts, as all the European nations were doing, but instead to urge the people to pay taxes and keep the value of the currency and the country's credit respectable. Although the Congress tried, it was not strong enough to convince the still locally-focused states to contribute what was needed. By December, Washington would complain bitterly about "a great and accumulated debt, ruined finances, depreciated money, and want of credit. . . ." Also during the year, in Andover, Samuel Phillips established Phillips Andover Academy, the oldest incorporated school in America.

**1779** • Reverend John Murray established America's first Universalist Church at Gloucester. Having come from England in 1770, he would later be recognized as the father of organized Universalism. He taught his followers to embrace the ideas of the universal fatherhood of God, the brotherhood of man, and universal salvation, doctrines in opposition to the Puritan faith.

**FEBRUARY 19, 1779** • The General Court passed a resolve requesting the townspeople of Massachusetts to vote whether or not to hold a constitutional convention. The idea passed, by a ratio of two to one. The Bay State would be the last to formulate and adopt a state constitution but, today, it is the only state still operating under its original document which, with its separation of powers and bill of rights, became part of the foundation for the great federal document to come. Yankee experience and New England's long-practiced traditions of self-government and popular representation had tremendous influence on the formation of the new country.

**JUNE 1779** • France finally convinced Spain to join the war against Great Britain though Spain became more of a complication than an ally. There was enough confidence in the American cause by this time to draw a large number of loyalists (Tories) back to Boston and on across Massachusetts. Unless they were particularly prominent, they usually managed to regain much of their property but not the right to vote, though even this was returned in certain cases.

**SEPTEMBER 1, 1779** • The state constitutional convention met in Boston, attended by the Adamses, John Hancock and a new generation represented by Benjamin Lincoln and Caleb Strong. James Bowdoin was elected president of the proceedings which involved 293 delegates representing 190 towns.

**WINTER 1779-80** • The Massachusetts navy was wiped out in an attack on the British base at Castine, Maine.

**MAY 4, 1780** • A group of Harvard graduates chartered the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and elected James Bowdoin as president of the Boston-based organization.

**JUNE 16, 1780** • John Adams drafted the new state constitution, including a preamble and a "Declaration of the Rights of the Inhabitants of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts." Representation was the touchiest question in the state. The senate was structured to represent more heavily the richer and more populous areas of the east. The lower house would consist of one delegate from each incorporated town, regardless of its size. All electors of both houses were to meet relatively low property requirements which disfranchised some of the poor in Worcester and the western counties. Senators also had to meet a property requirement of £300 in land or £600 in combined property. The governor would be called "His Excellency" and must own a Massachusetts freehold worth at least £1,000 and "declare himself to be of the Christian religion." Public support for education was also written into

the carefully crafted document. Also, the judiciary would interpret this constitution as abolishing slavery in the Commonwealth.

**OCTOBER, 1780** • An election was called and John Hancock, who had long courted the support of the masses with generous gifts to towns and churches, was chosen the state's first governor. Boston's harbor continued to grow busier during the war with 455 ships from all over the world docked in her harbor and some 1,200 vessels involved in coastal traffic operating from the city's port.

**MARCH 1, 1781** • Maryland finally joined the rest of the states in ratifying the Articles of Confederation. Up to this point, Congress had been operating without any kind of constitution. This same year, at the age of 14, John Quincy Adams became secretary to Francis Dana, the American minister to Russia.

**OCTOBER 17, 1781** • General Washington and the French cornered English General Cornwallis at Yorktown, Virginia and essentially ended the long and bitter war.

**SUMMER 1782** • John Adams won a treaty with the Netherlands, who had entered the war in 1780, which earned him the title "Washington of Negotiations." Massachusetts carried out its new hard-money policy to pay war debts in specie, bringing rapid deflation welcomed by the mercantilists and generally hated by the farmers.

**OCTOBER 1782** • John Adams arrived in Paris from The Hague to enter into negotiations that were already underway by representatives Franklin and John Jay with England, France and Spain. Adams was responsible for retention of American fishing rights off the coast of Newfoundland. The treaty also gained the Americans access to the Mississippi River from its source to its mouth and set the northern, western and southern boundaries for the new nation. Adams helped accomplish this by disregarding instructions to obey the French in all matters and negotiating a separate peace. His son, John Quincy, served as his personal secretary.

**SEPTEMBER 3, 1783** • The final peace treaty with England, giving Americans a western border at the Mississippi instead of the Appalachians as the Europeans had wished, was signed.

**NOVEMBER 25, 1783** • The British soldiers pulled out of New York City but retained control of several northern outposts along the Great Lakes to the irritation of the new country. During the year in Massachusetts, Nathaniel Jennison was indicted for assaulting Quock Walker, a black who, Jennison said, was his slave. Jennison claimed that he was within his rights. Chief Justice Cushing recorded a verdict never officially reported, citing that the new Constitution of Massachusetts was worded to be inconsistent with slavery and pronouncing Jennison guilty and Walker free. This essentially ended slavery in Massachusetts. Soon after the war ended, Tory Dr. John Jeffries of Boston, who had left to serve as a surgeon in the British army, completed the first balloon crossing of the English Channel before returning to Boston on amicable terms and setting up what became a large medical practice. Harvard's medical school was founded with three professors and began to produce an average annual class of two doctors.

**1784** • Never was there more hard money in Massachusetts than there was immediately following the withdrawal of the British troops. But an influx of European goods and the disruption of trading patterns soon drained large amounts of the coinage from the state. In Beverly, the Cabot family set up a small, cotton-spinning factory and developed trade in the Baltic region, carrying tobacco, flour and rum to exchange for Swedish iron and Russian sailcloth and hemp. The first bank was established in Boston but the whaling and codfishing industries were practically ruined. Ironically, this was the year of the famous Sacred Cod, presented to the General Court by Boston merchant Jonathan Rowe and still hanging over the public gallery today as a symbol of the importance of the fishing industry to the state. Due to Virginia's recent cession of Ohio (Northwest) territory to Congress, the question arose whether or not the "colonial" lands to the west should be slave or free. Rufus King of Massachusetts introduced an antislavery resolution for the new territory but it sat undebated on the secretary's docket. The Massachusetts legislature meanwhile re-enacted the antitheater act of 1750.

**1785** • John Adams accepted the post as first American minister to Great Britain and his son, John Quincy, returned home from Europe to attend Harvard. The poorer agrarian section of the country, particularly the small farmers in Massachusetts, were feeling the squeeze of the trade disruption and the drain of specie, the heavy war debts (public and private) and the nagging envy inspired by those merchants who had grown rich. In Worcester County alone, 92 debtors were imprisoned during the year.

**MARCH 1785** • The tradition of annual spring elections persisted and James Bowdoin became the state's second governor. Hancock temporarily retired for "reasons of health" which was often thought to be an excuse to duck strong or contrary political winds. The issues of taxation and currency had to be faced. Bowdoin faced the issue of debt by raising taxes to retire the debt in 15 years. This put added strain on the poor and already debt-ridden.

**APRIL 1785** • Massachusetts ceded all of its land claims west of the state of New York to the United States Congress.

**JULY 1785** • Realizing that trade sanctions by Massachusetts against England would merely direct trade to other competing U.S. ports, the General Court passed resolutions calling for a convention to revise the Articles of Confederation in order to give the central government enough power to impose a countrywide sanction.

**1786** • While the South recovered more quickly, Massachusetts' exports were still only one-quarter of what they had been in 1774. North Africa's Barbary Pirates added to the problem by seizing or demanding tribute from Massachusetts ships bound for Morocco, Algiers, Tripoli and Tunis with cargos of fish and flour. This once-lucrative market was no longer profitable under such war-like conditions. Thomas Jefferson of Virginia suggested to John Adams that the country send an American naval force but the government was too weak and too debt-laden to solve the problem. Faring better with New York than with Africa, Massachusetts Yankees worked out the Old Pre-emption Line Agreement with the Yorkers which gave Massachusetts the right to sell their former claims in what was now the state of New York. America's first native composer, William Billings, founded the Stoughton Musical Society. Responsible for *The New England Psalm Singer* and *The Suffolk Harmony,* he was the first American to use the pitch pipe in churches and introduced a spirited style of singing in great contrast to the older Puritan plainsong.

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

**MARCH 3, 1786** • Revolutionary generals Rufus Putnam and Samuel H. Parsons and doctor of divinity Manasseh Cutler helped form the Ohio Company in Boston. As directors of the company, the men would purchase land in the west and promote settlement, beginning the New England movement to Ohio. They felt that the temperate climate and fertile land of the Ohio River Valley offered more to New Englanders than the "northern frozen deserts" of Nova Scotia, Canada and Newfoundland.

**MARCH 23, 1786** • The new Massachusetts legislature passed its first general act "regulating Towns, setting forth their Power, and for the Choice of Town-Officers, and for repealing all laws heretofore made for that purpose," thus replacing the town act of 1692. About 283 districts, towns and plantations existed at this time in Massachusetts with a total population of over 350,000. This year, the town of Bridgewater in Plymouth County would be known for the development of machinery for manufacturing cotton products.

**AUGUST 1786** • Farmers in many counties were hurting from debt laws, hating Bowdoin's taxes and haunting the legislature for paper money that would depreciate (bringing inflation, the debtor's friend), and for a tender act which would allow the farmers to pay debts with produce or script issued on the value of their land. Late in the month at Hatfield, in central Hampshire County, delegates from 50 of the 57 towns met to chronicle objections to the new state constitution and make requests for economic measures by the legislature. They felt, as they would later when the federal Constitution was up for ratification, that the agricultural community was being discriminated against. Clearly populist in their sentiments, they wanted to abolish the senate and the debtor courts, directly elect all officers and print paper money. Within a few days, over a thousand armed farmers seized the courthouse at Northampton and put a temporary end to the courts of General Sessions and Common Pleas. These beleaguered people also wanted "stay laws" to prevent mortgage foreclosures by their creditors.

**SEPTEMBER 26, 1786** • Revolutionary War hero Captain Daniel Shays, a Pelham farmer, gained much greater fame in leading the popular rebellion. He was thrust from the ranks to guide the rioters in preventing the traveling Supreme Court from sitting at Springfield, even though Governor Bowdoin had loaded the courthouse with 600 loyal Massachusetts militiamen. Though not all revolted, most debtors across the state supported the movement and, ironically, formed committees of correspondence between counties to communicate on the issue. Samuel Adams, now a respectable member of the state council and a senator, threatened to hang anyone who dared use the methods he invented in 1774. The debtors merely wanted the same type of legal relief that had been granted to their kind in other states, and that had been passed in the Massachusetts House but vetoed by the Senate.

**JANUARY 25, 1787** • Uprisings had occurred at Worcester, Concord and elsewhere. The rebels had retreated through the snow and cold from Cambridge, losing some to exposure. On this day, Shays, Eli Parsons and Luke Day led 1,100 rebels against the Springfield arsenal but were beaten back by loyal militia and artillery under Major General Shepard. A force of 4,400 men funded by rich Boston merchants (the state treasury was very low) hurried to the scene under General Benjamin Lincoln in time to pursue Shays and the rebels to Petersham.

**FEBRUARY 4, 1787** • Marching 30 miles in a single night through deep snow and bitter winds, Lincoln's men routed the rebel force. Shays escaped to Vermont and though others tried to continue the movement, spring brought peace, new elections and a growing realization that the central government must be strengthened. Congress had begun to raise troops to aid Massachusetts but was obliged to pretend that they were needed to fight Indians and was fearful of the consequences should the soldier's pay not be raised.

**SPRING 1787** • Ungrateful for Bowdoin's stoic leadership through the financial crisis, the electorate returned a willing John Hancock to the governor's chair. Shays and the other rebel leaders would be pardoned from execution and only a few would serve jail terms. Relief legislation would be passed by the new legislature as prosperity began to return.

**May 25, 1787** • The Philadelphia Convention of 12 states (Rhode Island boycotted) met to revise the Articles of Confederation but the concerns and past experiences of the delegates pushed debate far beyond the points at hand and forged a totally new document for which there existed little precedent, though Virginia and Massachusetts documents greatly influenced the result. Samuel Adams stayed home and John and Abigail Adams remained at his ministerial post in England. Massachusetts' most prominent delegates were Elbridge Gerry and Rufus King.

**JULY 13, 1787** • Boston's Dr. Manasseh Cutler of the Ohio Company had come before Congress in New York that summer to buy land in the Ohio River Valley, offering for payment certificates of public indebtedness. Congress, including Massachusetts delegate Nathan Dane, had been working on the Northwest Ordinance and Dane later claimed a good deal of the authorship as the document was based in great part on the Massachusetts Constitution of 1780. Included was the clause Rufus King had introduced earlier prohibiting slavery or involuntary servitude in the territory, agreed to by the Southern states because, according to Grayson of Virginia, the states did not wish tobacco or indigo grown north of the Ohio River as well as other political reasons. A few days after the passage of the Ordinance on this date, Dr. Cutler concluded a land deal which he described as "the greatest private contract ever made in America." In the years to follow, New Englanders would take their ideas of self-government and education to the western territory.

**SEPTEMBER 17, 1787** • The new federal Constitution was completed and offered to the individual states, which were allowed one vote apiece. Nine votes were needed to organize the new government. The Massachusetts economy continued to improve as trade expanded to new areas of the globe. During the year, Boston sent the ship *Columbia* and the sloop *Washington* around the cape of South America in a new trade pattern which began with traffic along the northwest coast, exchanging trinkets for furs much wanted in China (it was hard to please the Chinese with Boston goods), continued to Hawaii and China and finished around Africa and thus the world. Not to be outdone, Salem merchants sailed their sturdy ships around Africa to India, Indonesia and China. The state's first cotton mill began production in Beverly. Massachusetts accepted one million dollars in return for six million acres of its New York lands, purchased by Oliver Phelps and Nathaniel Gorham.

**FEBRUARY 6, 1788** • When Massachusetts' ratifying convention met early in the year, it was obvious that the majority was Anti-Federalist and thus opposed to the new federal Constitution. State Federalists were led by Rufus King, Nathaniel Gorham, Caleb Strong, Fisher Ames, Theophilus Parsons and James Bowdoin. Sam Adams was Anti-Federalist and John Hancock waited to see which way the most favorable wind would blow. John Adams was still in England but would resign in disgust later in the year without his desired commercial treaty, and return home. Several leading Federalists convinced Hancock that his support of the new government might very well gain him the vice-presidency, and Federalist shipwrights who had been promised contracts by Federalist merchants convinced their old friend Sam Adams to change his mind. Though elected president of the convention, Hancock waited for three weeks to take his seat, offering as he did a proposal for immediate ratification with an accompanying recommendation for amendments that would secure the rights of the people. Sam Adams approved and the U.S. Constitution was ratified 187 to 168. Massachusetts entered the Union on this day as the sixth state. All but one of the states that eventually followed the Bay State in ratification also suggested the same basic amendments.

**JUNE 1788** • The legislature (still called the General Court) granted official pardons to the recent rebels, Daniel Shays and Eli Parsons.

**NOVEMBER 2, 1788** • A former French chaplain performed the first Catholic mass openly celebrated in Boston. This year, George Richard Minot would publish his *History of Shays's Rebellion* while Nicholas Pike at Newburyport contributed *A New and Complete System* which became the standard American arithmetic text.

**APRIL 30, 1789** • George Washington took the oath of office as president of the United States and John Adams, with 34 of the 69 second votes of the presidential electors, took office as the vice-president.

**SEPTEMBER 1789** • President Washington named Major General Henry Knox, the former Massachusetts bookseller who had tried to calm the crowd of the Boston Massacre and who had brought the artillery from Fort Ticonderoga to bombard Boston, as the nation's first secretary of war. Massachusetts citizen Samuel Osgood was chosen the first postmaster general. William Cushing of Scituate would be the first associate justice appointed to the new Supreme Court. During the year, the new president visited Boston as part of a general tour of the new nation. Governor Hancock refused to call on Washington, insisting that the governor (His Excellency) of Massachusetts was a more important personage than the president of the United States. In the realm of world trade, Boston's *Atlantic* sailed to Bombay and Calcutta and the *Franklin* became the first American ship to reach Japan. Nathan Reed had invented a steam-propelled paddle boat which began trips between Danvers and Beverly. In West Springfield, a horse was born to owner Justin Morgan who was a schoolteacher and singing master. Named "Figure" by his owner, the dark red bay stallion with black points grew to be a mere 14 hands tall but could outwork, outpull and outrun (in a quarter-mile race) all comers. Taken to Vermont at the age of two, the horse became known as "Justin Morgan;" the foundation sire of the Morgan horse, a truly American breed. In Worcester, William Hill Brown published *The Power of Sympathy,* the first American novel.

**1790** • Almost 379,000 people lived in Massachusetts. In a period of 20 days, Salem's custom house recorded three ships from Canton, seven from the West Indies and seven from Lisbon and Cadiz. England could never enforce its ban on America's trade with the British West Indies so the channels began to open wider. In Newburyport, Jacob Perkins contrived a machine that would cut and produce two hundred thousand nails a day. He went on to revolutionize the cotton-printing industry with a process for transferring engraved patterns from a small, steel cylinder to copper.

**1791** • Harvard graduate, historian and Congregational minister Jeremy Belknap founded America's first historical association, the Massachusetts Historical Society, in Boston.

**DECEMBER 15, 1791** • As suggested by Massachusetts and a number of other states, ten amendments to the federal Constitution, known as the Bill of Rights, officially became the law of the land.

**1792** • Paul Revere, designer of the first issue of Continental currency, the first official seal of the colonies and the Massachusetts State Seal, opened the Boston bell foundry with his son Joseph Warren Revere. Between the two, they would cast almost 400 church bells, "powerful and mellow." In 1911, there were 78 Revere bells still in use. In the tower of King's Chapel, the largest and most famous bell, weighing over 2,000 pounds still hangs. Joseph Harper, manager of The New Exhibition Room on Hawley Street in Boston, was arrested but released on a technicality for holding a variety show and performances of Shakespeare's plays. Despite the law, Boston theater was finally off to a start. Meanwhile, John Adams was re-elected vice-president and the first layman was elected to the Board of Overseers at Harvard.

**1793** • Samuel Adams became acting governor upon the death of John Hancock. In Williamstown, in the northwest corner of the state, Harvard received its first competition. Williams College was chartered and supported by a grant in the will of Colonel Ephraim Williams. Eli Whitney, born in Westboro in 1765, invented the cotton gin and later devised a system of manufacturing interchangeable gun parts. Religion and politics were still a holy union in Massachusetts and the conservative political posture supported a desire to return to older, Puritan religious values. The religious consciousness of the times was manifested in several directions. One was a Second Great Awakening called the "Revival" which would last for several decades. The Baptists enjoyed tremendous growth during this period and eventually became the nation's largest Protestant denomination.

## NORFOLK COUNTY

Named for Norfolk County, England. Created: March 26, 1793 from Suffolk County as the twelfth county in the state. County Seat: (Shire Town) Dedham. Major Events: Weymouth became the state's second oldest settlement in 1622 as a small fishing and farming outpost. Quincy began in 1625 on Massachusetts Bay and quickly evolved into Thomas Morton's Merrymount. Settlers established themselves to the west on the Charles River in 1635, petitioning to incorporated as a town called Contentment in 1636. It would later be called Dedham. Jonathan Fairbanks built his house there the same year and it still stands today as America's oldest home. Reverend John Eliot established a Praying Indian Town on

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

Pegan Hill, named for the Pegan Indians, in present-day Dover. The area that would become Brookline was settled in 1638 and, in 1640, Franklin Street was laid out in Quincy as a road from Boston to Plymouth. This was the same year that the Old Colony Boundary Line was marked between the colonies of Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth Bay. The nation's second oldest boundary line, it apparently ran from just south of Cohasset to just south of Plainville, approximating today's southern boundary of Norfolk County. John Winthrop, Jr. built the nation's first iron furnace in Quincy in 1644 and the townspeople of Dedham established the nation's first free public school and supported it with general taxation of Dedham's residents. During King Philips' War of 1675 to 1676, more than half of Medfield was burned as was Wrentham. Many colonists fled to the safety of towns like Dedham. The Baker house was built in Westwood which was first called Clapboard Trees or the Third Parish of Dedham. Several generations of Bakers would occupy the house including Betsey Metcalf Baker who, it is claimed, devised a way of splitting and braiding straw to make bonnets, producing the nation's first straw bonnet and inaugurating what started as a popular cottage industry but grew into one of the area's staple factory products. When Medway was incorporated as a town in 1713, Jacob Bartlett moved further south to settle No Man's Land or what later became Bellingham in 1719. Medway was so isolated that it refused to send representatives to the General Court for 13 years. In 1721, Dr. Zabdiel Boylston of Brookline inoculated his son and two slaves for smallpox, the first doctor to use the controversial procedure as a protection against the often fatal illness. Abigail Smith was born in Weymouth in 1744 the daughter of the Reverend William Smith. She would later become Abigail Adams, the wife of the future president who was born in Quincy. Quincy would also be the birthplace of John Hancock and John Quincy Adams and the site of a world-famous granite quarry. The granite was transported by horse-drawn railway to the Neponset River on what is thought to be the nation's first commercial railway. In 1763, the state's first known census was taken in Medway. When Medfield was chosen to be the county seat, it refused the honor as the townspeople thought the distraction of the court house would distrupt the industry of the town. Dedham became the county seat and Brookline left Suffolk County to join Norfolk. Two years later, Brookline petitioned the state Supreme Court to rejoin Suffolk County but the petition was denied, leaving Brookline an "island" member of Norfolk. Canton became the site of Paul Revere's foundry in 1808 and later his powder mill. During the Revolution and the War of 1812, Canton would provide muskets and powder to American soldiers. Plymouth Rubber today occupies the original site of the Revere foundry. The name Canton was a result of the active China trade carried on by the area merchants. In 1803, Cohasset, Hingham and Hull were to be annexed to Norfolk County from Suffolk but Hingham and Hull refused and won entrance to Plymouth County, leaving Cohasset the second "island" member of Norfolk. Because of the many shipwrecks off Cohasset's rocky coast, the first U.S. lifeboat station was established on Pleasant Beach in 1807. Minot's Light would follow in 1850. A significant decision was handed down by the Massachusetts Supreme Court in 1818 awarding the Dedham Parish rather than the church fellowship the right to elect the church ministers. This ruling opened the doors wide for encroaching Unitarianism. In 1833, China trader Robert Bennet Forbes built a mansion for his mother in Milton which is now the Museum of the America China Trade. Forbes had gone to sea at the tender age of 13 and was captain of an opium storeship by the time he was 19. Opium became the product Yankees found to be most effective in bartering for Chinese tea and silks. In 1834, the Canton viaduct was constructed by artist James Whistler's father. James Clapp established the Clapp Shoe Company in Weymouth in 1853 and the company lasted four generations. Beginning in 1870, Boston tried unsuccessfully for the first of six times to annex the wealthy, residential community of Brookline as a plum for its tax coffers. Brookline remains the state's largest town, refusing to convert to city government. First called Muddy River Hamlet, Brookline became the "Town of Millionaires" in the early 1900s and the birthplace of John F. Kennedy in 1917. In 1871, Henry Fowle Durant founded a Female Seminary which opened in 1875 for "the glory of God" in what was still Natick and the massive estate of Samuel Welles. Welles' grandson-in-law, H. Hollis Hunnewell, bought the estate in 1881, incorporated it as a town and named it Wellesley. Developing an expertise with marine engines in the late 1880s, the Quincy Fore River Shipyards turned out 36 destroyers for World War I and the carrier *Lexington* for World War II. General Dynamics would build the first surface nuclear ship here. Wall Street economist Roger Babson of Wellesley Hills founded Babson Institute in Wellesley in 1919 as a specialized business college. In 1925, Howard Johnson bought a local drugstore in Quincy to begin making "an ice cream I can call my own." Quincy is the modern-day headquarters for Howard Johnson Corporation.

**FEBRUARY 3, 1794** • The new Boston Theater opening included "a grand symphony by Signor Haydn."

**SPRING 1794** • Samuel Adams was elected governor of the Commonwealth while the "Federal era" and the war between France and England brought prosperity flowing into Massachusetts and Boston as never before, creating vast new opportunities for shipping and trading. The newly appointed U.S. Armory at Springfield would become the major source of U.S. military rifles and a center for weapons design and manufacturing. In Hampshire County, a canal was constructed to bypass South Hadley's Falls on the Connecticut River. George Washington appointed John Quincy Adams as the U.S. minister to the Netherlands.

**JUNE 26, 1794** • The General Court ratified the Eleventh Amendment to the U.S. Constitution, curbing the power of the federal judiciary in relation to the states.

**1795** • The Haymarket Theater was constructed and even though the Boston Theater was bankrupt after its first year, lively competition would continue between the two theaters until the Haymarket was torn down in 1803.

**1796** • Two-term Vice-President John Adams was elected the second president of the United States, to take office in the following spring. In Massachusetts, each congressional district voted for two citizens as presidential electors. Any candidate receiving the majority of the popular vote automatically became the district's single elector. If a majority was not achieved in a district, the legislature chose between the two persons with the highest number of votes. In Boston, the Boston

Dispensary was created to provide medical aid for the poor.

**SPRING 1797** • The spring elections saw Increase Sumner, a Federalist, elected governor of the Commonwealth. The state's textile industry would receive a boost during the year as Asa Whittemore invented a machine to make cards for carding wool. The invention became the foundation for a hundred subsequent patents and "operated as if it had a soul."

**JUNE 22, 1797** • The General Court passed a detailed Quarantine Act to protect citizens from the ravages of smallpox, the plague and any other highly contagious fever or malady. Also in June, a report reached President Adams that more than 300 American vessels had been captured by ships flying a French flag. Neutral ships seized by the British were at least compensated and British regulations were livable. Thus, the Federalists supported: 1) Great Britian, 2) the practical and realistic wisdom of man's political experience and 3) government by those of education and property who knew best how to govern. The Democratic-Republicans favored: 1) France, 2) the purity of man's reason and 3) government by the many.

**OCTOBER 21, 1797** • George Claghorn was commissioned to build the *U.S.S. Constitution* at Hart's shipyard in Boston. The 1,576-ton frigate was one of the first three ships of the new U.S. Navy. The vessel cost $302,718 and was fitted with copper bolts and brass fittings manufactured by Paul Revere using his own new and cheaper techniques, though the copper sheeting for the hulls had to be imported from England. Launched on this day, the ship stuck on the ways but otherwise was successfully put to sea.

**SPRING 1798** • News of the XYZ Affair, in which France attempted to exact tribute money from the U.S. in exchange for the privilege of negotiation, infuriated Congress, stunned the Republicans and fueled Adams' creation and development of the new U.S. Navy which would perform admirably over the next year in the undeclared naval war with France.

**SUMMER 1798** • Reacting against the minor immigration to America by refugees from the French Revolution and the Irish rebellion, President Adams and the Federalists passed four Alien and Sedition Acts which raised a furor over their constitutionality and the First Amendment, and led to the triumph of the Democratic-Republicans in the election of 1800. Massachusetts' conservative "Essex Junto," led by Federalists Fisher Ames, George Cabot, Theophilus Parsons and Adams' Secretary of War Timothy Pickering, pushed for a declared war with France.

**FEBRUARY 9, 1799** • The Massachusetts Senate replied against the resolutions of Virginia and Kentucky declaring the Alien and Sedition Acts unconstitutional. Still strongly Federalist, Massachusetts declared the "acts of Congress. . . not only constitutional but expedient and necessary."

**FEBRUARY 13, 1799** • Boston became the first town in Massachusetts to establish a board of health. During the year, Lieutenant-Governor Moses Gill stepped up to act as governor until 1800.

**1800** • Though sixty-five years of age, Paul Revere was intent on establishing a rolling mill to make copper sheeting. To gain water power, he moved to Canton on the Neponset River and converted an old slitting mill into America's first rolling mill. The census reported a state population of 422,845 with Boston having grown to about 25,000 residents. The state's Federalist faction was only represented by about 25,000 votes but its strength lay in that these were the professional and mercantile classes, the landed and wealthy, the clergy, judges, lawyers and town officials. About half the state was Democratic-Republican in sentiment but only represented by some 20,000 votes because of property qualifications. Prosperity had not yet greatly disseminated as most clergy and lawyers lived frugally. Boston now had two local banks and one branch of the Bank of the United States.

**SPRING 1800** • Federalist Caleb Strong was elected governor of the Commonwealth. On May 13, Samuel Dexter was appointed secretary of war in President Adams' cabinet.

**FALL 1800** • Democratic-Republican Thomas Jefferson was elected president, defeating Federalist John Adams and panicking the staunch Federalists in Massachusetts. Before Adams left office in early 1801, he would make 16 last-minute appointments of Federalists to federal judgeships and other posts, which infuriated Jefferson. A protest by one of the appointees would lead to *Marbury vs. Madison* and the doctrine of judicial review.

**1801** • Before retiring to his family home in Quincy, John Adams made Samuel Dexter of Dedham secretary of the treasury. Republican and later Massachusetts governor, Levi Lincoln, was named U.S. attorney general as soon as Jefferson took office. The new administration merely shifted power from New England's mercantile aristocracy to the agrarian aristocracy of the South and West. In reality, Jefferson was no more ready than the Federalists to turn the government over to the masses, believing that they first must be educated to govern. He was, however, strongly supportive of state and local governments against the Federalist belief in a strong central government.

**1802** • At Harvard, Dr. Benjamin Waterhouse used and promoted the Jenner vaccination technique which would replace the innoculations against smallpox. Salem native Nathaniel Bowditch revised John Moore's work into *The New American Practical Navigator* which remains the standard work on navigation.

**1803** • Having been defeated for U.S. congressman from Massachusetts the previous year, John Quincy Adams gained a seat in the U.S. Senate through election by the Massachusetts legislature. At first considered a Federalist, the young Adams would soon show a political independence that would characterize his career. Harvard, the Congregational seminary, was by now equally divided, faculty and trustees, between the orthodox Congregationalists and the new Unitarians. The death of David Tappan, uncle of the later abolitionists Arthur and Lewis Tappan, left vacant the Hollis Professorship of Divinity at Harvard, a position which would grant majority to one side or the other. This same year, the future Unitarian leader William Ellery Channing gained the influencial pastorate of Federal Street Church in Boston.

**JUNE 6, 1803** • In contrast to the liberal Unitarian movement, the election sermon of Jedediah Morse, pastor of the Congregational church at Charlestown, enjoined his congregation to "guard against the insidious encroachments of *innovation*. . . ." Morse was also known as "the father of American geography," writing a number of textbooks which earned him a living.

**MARCH 4, 1804** • A letter from Timothy Pickering to Rufus King expounded the New England Federalists' desire to rouse New England and possibly New York to secession from the

Union in light of the Louisiana Purchase which would create a coalition of Republican southerners and westerners, far outnumbering the northeastern Federalists.

**1805** • In Boston, Charles Bulfinch added a third story to historic Faneuil Hall, the Revolutionary meeting place, town hall and public market. Bulfinch doubled the original 40-foot width. The famous grasshopper weathervane was modeled by Shem Drowne. In Cambridge, the debate over Tappan's vacancy at Harvard had heated the hallowed halls for two years when the Unitarians finally won by filling the professorship with Hingham's minister, Henry Ware. Ware had followed Dr. Ebenezer Gay who was the third minister of the First Parish Meetinghouse (the "Old Ship") at Hingham. Gay was known as the "first American Unitarian" and Ware had continued his teaching. Scandal erupted at First Church in Cambridge as the members switched from Congregationalism to Unitarianism, turning from their pulpit the Reverend Abiel Holmes, writer of the *Annals of America,* father of Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes of Harvard Medical School and grandfather of future Supreme Court Justice Oliver Wendell Holmes, Jr. When the Unitarians pushed their new-found majority by replacing the acting, orthodox president of Harvard with a Unitarian, all of the Calvinists resigned, abandoning Harvard to its new role as the beacon of liberal theology. This same year, James Otis' sister, Mercy Warren, published an Anti-Federalist history of the American Revolution which infuriated John Adams.

**1806** • Federalist Theophilus Parsons was appointed chief justice of Massachusetts' Supreme Court, serving until 1813.

**SPRING 1807** • Republican success on the domestic front, including the Louisiana Purchase, swung the gubernatorial election in Massachusetts to Democratic-Republican James Sullivan. Sullivan would call for an American system of general public education, urging that "Where the mass of people are ignorant, poor and miserable, there is no public opinion excepting what is the offspring of fear." Sullivan was of Irish Catholic stock but there was no priest in Maine (part of Massachusetts until 1820) so that he was not really a practicing Catholic. Also during the year, the father of Ralph Waldo Emerson founded the Anthology Club which became the famous Boston Athenaeum. Today, the Athenaeum contains some 450,000 volumes including much of George Washington's private library and books published in the South during the Civil War.

**DECEMBER 22, 1807** • Many Massachusetts merchantmen had managed to continue making profits despite the Napoleanic Wars and the impressment of more than 1,500 American seamen into the British navy. Stubbornly maintaining neutrality and trade with both countries, American shipping prospered even though many vessels were seized under the acts passed by the warring British and French. Wishing to avoid war and to force the european cousins to respect American neutrality, President Jefferson persuaded Congress to pass the Embargo Act which prohibited all American trade with foreign ports. Though this was a cruel blow to Massachusetts' economy, Senator John Quincy Adams nevertheless supported the Act as he had supported the Louisiana Purchase and the impeachment of certain Federalist judges. For this behavior, Adams was publicly denounced by the Federalists in New England where trade stagnated and ships rotted at the docks.

**1808** • During the next two years, Paul Revere and his son would produce copper plates for Robert Fulton's steamboat boilers. Revere's copper already shone from Bulfinch's State House Dome. In a new, four-story brick building in Andover, Harvard's recent orthodox faculty and board members opened a rival theological seminary with support from Calvinist Congregationalists in Newburyport, Salem and Andover. The school would flourish and grow to become a center for the Second Great Awakening in Massachusetts. Democratic-Republican Levi Lincoln stepped up to act as governor until the election of 1809, and the Middlesex Canal was finally completed.

**JUNE 1808** • John Quincy Adams, abandoned by the Federalists, was defeated in his second bid for a U.S. Senate seat. Thinking his political career to be over, he accepted a professorship of rhetoric and oratory at Harvard.

**FALL, 1808** • As it had done in 1800, Massachusetts reverted to legislative appointment of electors for the presidential election in order to counter the Democratic-Republicans. Formerly a Federalist, James Madison ran as a Democratic-Republican, defeating the Federalists' Pinckney whose legacy remains on a street sign in Boston.

**FEBRUARY 1809** • Renewed Federalist strength in Massachusetts and popular outcries combined to force the Republicans to repeal the Embargo Act days before Jefferson left office.

**MARCH 1809** • The new administration oversaw Congress' enactment of the Non-Intercourse Act which kept trade open with every country except France and England. However, Massachusetts' shipping would continue to suffer under various on-and-off restrictions and maneuverings between the three countries, which would finally result in war by 1812.

**SPRING 1809** • The Federalists managed to win the gubernatorial office for Christopher Gore. The year would also see the unionization of Boston's printers and the appointment of John Quincy Adams as minister to Russia.

**APRIL 19, 1810** • A report on manufacturing submitted by Albert Gallatin to the U.S. House of Representatives recorded that the shoe manufacturers in Lynn were producing 100,000 pairs of women's shoes annually while the soap and tallow industry of Roxbury boasted a yearly production of 370,000 pounds of candles, 380,000 pounds of brown soap and 50,000 pounds of windsor and fancy soap, returning a profit of 15 percent on invested capital of $100,000. Nantucket and New Bedford combined with Hudson, New York to provide the entire domestic consumption and export of spermaceti oil and candles. Four cotton factories were reported in Middlesex County, 17 in Worcester, 13 in Bristol, and ten in Norfolk. Ten other factories brought the state total at this time to 54. Martha's Vineyard reported exports of 9,000 pairs of stockings per year. Carding machines worked by water were plentiful in the East but about two-thirds of the clothing worn in the United States was still made by families with a cottage business. Hat manufacturing in Boston was capitalized at about $3 million, employing 4,000 and producing about 1,550,000 hats per year, most of which were "fine hats worth, on an average, $4 each. . . ." In addition, a new hat establishment had just begun production on the Charles River. The "interruption of commerce" was credited with inspiring the manufacturing of hemp in Massachusetts. The iron industry included 13 rolling and slitting mills in Massachusetts, and Revere's foundry at Canton was mentioned as the only

copper-rolling mill in the country, though, the report added, "the owners seem to be principally employed in casting bells and other articles." Boston was also said to have manufacturing establishments for tinware and plated ware as well as glass manufacturing that made "crown glass equal to any imported," though the salt works in Massachusetts were reported to be declining due to foreign imports. Other manufacturers were pursued in the state at the time but were not delineated in the report.

**SPRING 1810** • Possibly because of the passage in May of Macon's Bill No. 2 which lifted for a time all restrictions on trade, the Democratic-Republicans managed to elect Elbridge Gerry to the governor's office where he would serve until 1812. The census taken during the year would tally 472,040 inhabitants in Massachusetts. About this time, Boston music publisher and engraver Johann Christian Gottlieb Graupner founded the Phil-harmonic Society. A native Prussian, Graupner had served as first oboist under Haydn. He directed the weekly Saturday concerts of what was to become the Boston Philharmonic Orchestra.

**JANUARY 14, 1811** • Josiah Quincy III, U.S. congressman from Massachusetts since 1805 and leader of the Federalist minority, spoke against the entrance of Louisiana into the Union. An opponent of the expansionist policies of Jefferson and Madison, Quincy believed that the new states would cause an imbalance (especially the decline of the Federalist party) which was dangerous to the Constitution. He called for the secession of those states opposed to the bill which would grant statehood to Louisiana.

**1811** • Joseph Story, founder of Harvard Law School and cofounder with Chancellor James Kent of the American equity system, was appointed to the U.S. Supreme Court where he served until his death in 1845. John Quincy Adams declined appointment to the Court. An important development for Massachusetts seamen was the lighthouse light designed by Cape Cod resident Winslow Lewis.

## FRANKLIN COUNTY

Named in honor of Benjamin Franklin. Created: June 24, 1811 from Hampshire County. County Seat: (Shire Town) Greenfield. Major Events: Deerfield was laid out in the Pocumtuck Valley as early as 1665 but the first settler did not appear until 1669 when Samuel Hinsdell of Dedham came to farm where the Pocumtuc Indians had successfully raised corn, tobacco and pumpkins. The same year, the area that would become Sunderland was first granted to a number of Hadley residents and Squakheag (Northfield) was settled by 14 families from Northampton and Hadley. This settlement, as others in the area, would be twice abandoned. In 1675, following Indian raids at Springfield and Hadley, some 80 men from Essex County and about the same number of Deerfield men, mobilized from King Philip's War, stopped to pick grapes on Sugarloaf Mountain in South Deerfield and were surprised by Indians who dealt the settlers their worst defeat of the conflict. The Bloody Brook Massacre emptied several towns with Deerfield homes remaining empty for seven years. The site of a 1676 skirmish between colonists and Indians became Falls Flight Township (Bernardston). In 1688, Reverend John Williams brought his family to Deerfield to pastor the community, lured by the offer of 16 "cow-commons" of meadowland and a lot with a 42-foot by 20-foot house. Indian troubles greatly retarded settlement in this frontier county which would endure hostilities often during the French and Indian Wars. The worst and most infamous raid was during Queen Anne's War in February, 1704. All but one house and the church in Deerfield was burned. A total of 49 residents were murdered and 111 were taken captive, including the Reverend Williams' family, minus the two Williams children who died in the raid. Most captives were brought alive to Canada though Mrs. Williams was tomahawked on the journey's second day. The pastor published *The Redeemed Captive Returned to Zion* in 1707. This gruesome incident was one of the reasons for Massachusetts' later attacks on Canada and the colony's preoccupation with throwing the French out of Canada. Northfield was settled for the third time, this time permanently, in 1714. Incorporated as a town in 1723, Northfield would join many other western Massachusetts towns in raising Merino sheep. The year 1735 brought general peace to the countryside when Provincial Governor Jonathan Belcher signed a treaty with the Indians. What would become Warwich was a 1735 land grant to descendants of 39 Roxbury soldiers who fought in the Canadian campaign of 1690 under Captain Gardner. The area was first called Leyden in honor of the Separatists' town of refuge in Holland. Four forts were built in the area of Falls Town (Bernardston) which was settled in 1738. Charlemont was settled in 1742 and first called Boston Township No. 1, then Chickley's Town and later Charley Mounty. Today, it sits on Route 2, the Mohawk Trail. William Dorrell was born in Leyden in 1752, growing up to form a cult of Dorrellites, preaching free love and the sanctity of all life. The cult was vigorously suppressed and Dorrell starved himself to death at the age of 94. Rowe was settled in 1762, named in 1785 for Boston merchant John Rowe. Governor Hutchinson named Whately in honor of his friend Thomas Whately in 1771, the same year the newly official town established the first pound, built to hold stray cows and horses safe from the Indians until the owners could be found. Whately was known for its tobacco and the first gin distillery in the state. In 1790, a dam built across Millers River sparked manufacturing in Orange where the local museum holds a 1904 Grout automobile manufactured in the town. In 1792, Hawley was named for the liberal preacher, Joseph Hawley of Northampton, who opposed the teachings of Jonathan Edwards. The town would be known for saw mills, rakes, whip butts and broom handles. About 1800, settlers finally moved into Monroe and Granther Pratt allegedly died, according to his tombstone, in Shutesbury at the age of 114. According to the eulogy, he was able to mount a horse unassisted at 110 years of age. Sculptor Henry Kirke Brown was born in Leyden in 1814. His statues of George Washington and Abraham Lincoln tower today over tourists at West Point and the nation's capital. John Russell built the nation's first cutlery factory in Greenfield in 1834 though it later moved to nearby Turners Falls. Today, the town is the world's largest manufacturer of taps and dies, and the home of Stoneleigh-Burnham preparatory school for girls. Dwight L. Moody was born in Northfield in 1837. After success financially, Moody was converted to evangelical Christianity and founded Northfield Seminary (Northfield School for Girls) in his home town in 1879 and Mount Hermon School for Boys in nearby Gill in 1881. Marshall Field, the famous Chicago merchant, was born in Conway in 1845, the town of

Rowe shipped wooden gold-washing bowls to California in 1850 and Linus Yale invented Yale locks in Shelburne in 1851. Monroe's paper mill founded in 1866 is today's Deerfield Specialty Papers. Erving Paper Mills, founded in 1905, is a world leader in recycling waste paper and one of the world's largest producers of printed paper napkins. Millers Falls Paper Company manufactures roughly 50 percent of the nation's voting-machine paper. In 1869, a dam on the Deerfield River near Conway broke and destroyed the town's broadcloth mill and several woolen mills. Today, Archibald MacLeish is a summer resident of Conway. A poet and playwright, MacLeish was also a librarian for the Library of Congress. Movie mogul Cecil B. De Mille was born in Ashfield in 1881. Called Little Switzerland, Ashfield is in the heart of the region's maple sugar industry and was known in the 1800s for manufacturing wooden broom handles, planes and pillboxes. In 1927, New Salem received portions of the four flooded towns as the Quabbin Reservoir was filled. The first American Youth Hostel was founded at Northfield in 1934 and remained the headquarters of the movement for some years. An ice jam on the Connecticut River at Montague preceded the great flood of 1936, sweeping away three bridges and, with them, the longest covered bridge in the state. In 1960, Rowe became home to the state's first atomic-powered steam-electric plant.

### HAMPDEN COUNTY

Named in honor of John Hampden (1594-1643), an English patriot who opposed King Charles I and fought with Oliver Cromwell, dying in battle in 1643. Created: February 25, 1812 from Hampshire County. County Seat: (Shire Town) Springfield. Major Events: In 1635, about a dozen families left Roxbury under the magistracy of William Pynchon to establish a settlement north of Hartford on the long, fertile river in order to farm and trade beaver pelts. The group settled first at a place they called Agawam, meaning crooked river. Here their cattle wandered into Indian cornfields and, though the Indians were generally friendly at this time, the settlers thought it best to move across to the less fertile east side of the Connecticut. This settlement was established in 1636 and a "long meadow" to the south was purchased from the Indians. The Pequot War was fought and finished that year to the south and west of the new outpost, removing the threat of this hostile and aggressive tribe. Chicopee was settled up the river in 1638 and in 1640, the new Agawam was renamed Springfield to honor Pynchon's birthplace in England. The following year, William Pynchon purchased a tract of land from the Indian Nippumsuit that took in most of present-day Chicopee. In 1644, the area called Longmeadow was settled and Pynchon continued to govern the Springfield settlements. However, in 1650 Pynchon published a theological piece that he titled *The Meritorious Price of Our Redemption.* The writing was found to contain heresy by the Massachusetts General Court and Pynchon was relieved of his post. In 1652 he returned to England and his son John Pynchon became leader of the settlements. The first road was cut through the area that would become Westfield and the town was incorporated in 1669. By 1772, traffic along the road was such that it prompted Captain Aaron Cook to open a tavern. Until 1725, Westfield would be the westernmost town in Massachusetts. At the beginning of King Philip's War in 1675, the formerly friendly Agawam Indians surprised Springfield and almost burned it to the ground. The town would be rebuilt on a larger scale. As the century turned, so did many settlers, from farming to operating grist and saw mills and making brick. First called the "Elbows," as it was located on the Quaboag and Swift Rivers, Palmer was settled by John King and received its present name in 1752. A group of Scotch-Irish Protestants settled Blandford in 1735, calling it Glasgow. Some people of Glasgow, Scotland offered to give the faraway town a bell if the name was kept and the General Court was thus petitioned. At this time, 1741, Provincial Governor William Shirley arrived from England to take his post, denied the petition and named the newly incorporated town for the ship he arrived on, the *Blandford.* In 1786 in Chicopee, Benjamin Belcher (who later owned the iron foundry) and others forsook farming to process bog iron ore in blast furnaces powered by the Chicopee River. By 1790, it was possible to journey by boat from Deerfield in present-day Franklin County to Philadelphia. In 1794, the Springfield arsenal was designated by Congress to become the U.S. Armory. In 1807, Amos Collins turned Blandford farmers from grain and wool to dairy products and the town became one of the richest in the Berkshire Hills. Agawam established a paper mill in 1810 and the Westfield Whip Company would make Westfield known nationwide as "Whip City." Edmund Dwight established large cotton mills at Chicopee in 1822, Samuel Bowles founded the *Springfield Republican* in 1824 and the first dam was built at Holyoke in 1828. In 1847, abolitionist John Brown opened Brown and Perkins, wool merchants in Springfield but would often leave his prosperous business to attend to matters in Bleeding Kansas. In 1848, Hadley Falls Company engineered a large new dam at Holyoke and built one of America's first planned industrial towns. Holyoke would soon have factories, paper mills and three levels of canal locks. Springfield became a city in 1852, having prospered from the railroad connection with Worcester that was completed in 1839, the same year that Westfield State College had become the state's second teacher's college and the nation's first coeducational state teacher's college. In 1864, Joshua Stevens established J. Stevens Arms Company at Chicopee. Stevens was the first to manufacture breech-loading shotguns. From the 1860s to the 1880s, the American cavalry carried sabres made by Ames Manufacturing Company of Chicopee, a firm which had been founded in 1829 by Nathan Peabody Ames and his brother James. They built America's first bronze-statuary casting factory in 1853 and cast the bronze doors that still hang in the east and west wings of the nation's Capitol Building. In 1877, Westfield became the site of America's first bicycle factory, the Columbia Manufacturing Company. While training YMCA instructors in Springfield in 1891, Dr. James Naismith developed basketball. Holyoke YMCA instructor, W.G. Morgan, originated volleyball there in 1895. On April 19, 1892, Charles E. Duryea used the roads of Chicopee to conduct what is generally recognized as the nation's first successful test of a gasoline-powered vehicle. In September, 1895, the Duryeas, Charles and Frank, built America's first automobile factory, in Chicopee, and produced about 2,200 of the Duryea car. The same year, Spaulding and Pepper Company was formed to manufacture rubber goods, especially tires, and was eventually bought out by U.S. Rubber Company. In 1901 in busy Chicopee, professional baseball players Albert G. Spalding and James Spalding established A.G. Spalding and Bros. Company to produce

sporting goods. From 1900 to 1925, Southwick was the site of the largest ice houses in the nation. The year 1939, just prior to World War II, brought Westover Air Force Base to the county. It would become the largest Strategic Air Command base in the eastern U.S. though it was demilitarized in the 1970s. In 1968, the Springfield Armory was closed and the Basketball Hall of Fame was opened. Springfield is also home to the "Big E," the Eastern States Exposition which is the eighth largest annual fair in the country.

**MARCH 11, 1812** • John Adams, retired at Quincy, wrote to Dr. Benjamin Waterhouse in support of incumbent Democratic-Republican Governor Elbridge Gerry, calling him the "most independent, disinterested, and capable man for the office that now breathes the air of Massachusetts." The Federalist Caleb Strong loved Britain and hated France, said Adams, and Gerry hated neither. With war aganst Britain an imminent possibility, Adams thought it wise to opt for Gerry.

**SPRING 1812** • Despite Adams' sentiments, which were not published as he had expressly directed, the Federalists regained power and elected Caleb Strong as governor. He would stay in power until 1816. Membership in the State House of Representatives swelled to an unwieldy 749.

**JUNE 18, 1812** • President Madison having recommended war with England, Congress officially declared the country at war with England.

**FALL 1812** • Massachusetts to Maryland was solidly Federalist in this presidential election, excepting only Vermont, but the southern and western states, including Pennsylvania, gave Democratic-Republican Madison the victory. In this election, Massachusetts returned to popular vote by district for electors. Meanwhile, the war was officially condemned by the Massachusetts General Court, the militia was not allowed out of the state and very little money was contributed to the war effort.

**1814** • Activity in Andover, centered around the new seminary, resulted in the formation of the New England Tract Society. As had been effectively demonstrated in England, tracts were "an easy way of doing good" for any layman who could purchase a cheap tract and pass it on to someone else. Though led by the orthodox clergy, most of the society's dues-paying members were middle-class laymen. The project reflected the new urbanization and commercialization of the state, easy access to the printing press and paper, and the new, mobile society, many of whom were not attached to any particular church. In the 1820s, the group would become the American Tract Society.

**MAY 1814** • The British blockade was finally extended to New England. Until now, Massachusetts' ships had carried on a wartime trade with the enemy and the blockade of other American ports had funneled all other foreign trade activity through New England so that the war actually bolstered the economy of the Commonwealth contrary to the complaints of the extremists.

**AUGUST 14, 1814** • Negotiations for a settlement with Great Britain began in Ghent, Belgium. John Quincy Adams was one of the American peace ministers, proving himself to be one of the era's ablest diplomats.

**DECEMBER 15, 1814** • On this day in Hartford, in secret session, met the Hartford Convention of New England states, called by Massachusetts. Harrison Gray Otis, great-grandfather of historian Samuel Eliot Morison, led the moderates while Timothy Pickering and John Lowell led the secessionists. The moderates managed to gain control and quieted the movement to secede. The convention denounced the war and proposed several Constitutional amendments to: limit Congress' power to declare war, admit new states and impose embargoes; restrict presidents to one term with no two presidents in a row from one state; and abrogate the "three-fifths" clause of the Constitution so that Negroes would not be counted in a state's population (limiting the power of the South). They would issue their report the following January 15 but news of the Treaty of Ghent and the victory at New Orleans would essentially nullify the outcome of the convention.

**DECEMBER 19, 1814** • Salem's Benjamin W. Crowninshield (Democratic-Republican) was appointed secretary of the navy by President Madison.

**DECEMBER 24, 1814** • John Quincy Adams and the other diplomats signed the peace treaty at Ghent which ended the war and agreed to settle many other issues later. Adams became America's minister to England.

**1815** • Boston emerged from the War of 1812 as the area's central port, forcing the older, smaller port towns to turn to both small- and large-scale manufacturing as towns of the interior had turned to cottage industry to support a changing agricultural community. Production of salable goods promoted the building of turnpikes and canals and education progressed as quasi-private academies sprang up after 1790 to preview the development of the public high school. Six miles west of Boston on the Charles River in Waltham, production began in the world's first factory to manufacture cotton cloth by power machinery in one building. Newburyport native Francis Cabot Lowell, a well-established Boston merchant, had spent two years in England studying the textile industry and developing plans for a single factory which would turn raw cotton into cloth. Patrick Tracy Jackson, also of Newburyport, invested in the new Boston Manufacturing Company and became its manager. The English flooded American markets with textiles after the war, which idled and bankrupted a number of small mills, but the new factory began with a sales volume of $3,000 in 1815 and grew to $34,000 by 1817. Though a young man, Lowell died that year, but manager Jackson and chief mechanic Paul Moody of Newbury took the company to sales of $345,000 by 1822. Dormitories for 100, then 200 mill girls were erected but the new company did not overpower the town or its workforce and the town readily absorbed the mill. The looms were water powered. The now-famous Handel and Haydn Society was founded as a permanent choral group by orchestra director Graupner, Asa Peabody and Thomas Webb, performing for the first time in Stone Chapel on Christmas Day. The annual performance of Handel's *Messiah* was begun in 1818. Massachusetts portrait painter John Singleton Copley died in England, leaving a strong legacy of colonial and Revolutionary portraits. Boston's new *North American Review* soon became the country's most noteworthy literary journal, founded in May as an outgrowth of the *Monthly Anthology and Boston Review* of 1803-11.

**1816** • Massachusetts was the scene of many church quarrels as the once mighty river of Puritan Congregationalism now struggled against numerous streams of religious thought. Unitarianism established its national headquarters at Boston with Beacon Press its publishing vehicle. Called the "saint of

the Unitarians,'' Channing influenced Ralph Waldo Emerson, Dorothea Dix, Horace Mann, Charles Sumner and Thomas Wentworth Higginson among many others. Having studied under Christopher Gore in Boston, New Hampshire native Daniel Webster moved to Boston to practice law, appearing several times before the U.S. Supreme Court. During this time, he abandoned his former states' rights views.

**SPRING 1816** • The Federalists triumphed in the gubernatorial election with candidate John Brooks who would remain in office annually until 1823. The Federalists held the state but by a small majority.

**FALL 1816** • Democratic-Republican James Monroe won the Presidency over the Federalist candidate from New York (formerly from Massachusetts), Rufus King. After the Hartford Convention, which had been denounced as treasonous by the Virginians, the Federalists had acquired an unpatriotic reputation which they could never shake.

**MARCH 5, 1817** • John Quincy Adams was called upon by President Monroe to fill the office of U.S. secretary of state, a seat which he took officially on September 22. In Cambridge the same year, Judge Story founded Harvard Law School.

**1818** • McLean, a private mental hospital, was opened in Boston to improve conditions and treatment of mental patients. In Cambridge, the New England Glass Company began its first operations while merchants discussed the building of Cape Cod Canal, a project which did not materialize until 1909.

**1820** • The U.S. Census reported a population of 523,287 in Massachusetts with 301 incorporated towns and districts. It also showed that in Boston, a majority of the workers were now employed in production rather than trade.

**MARCH 3, 1820** • Only days before the Missouri Compromise would be effected and on the same day that Maine officially separated from Massachusetts to become an independent state, Secretary of State John Quincy Adams wrote in his diary that he favored the Missouri Compromise, ''believing it to be all that could be effected under the present Constitution, and from extreme unwillingness to put the Union at hazard.'' The constitutional convention called in Massachusetts the same year was partially in reaction to westward expansion. Article II of the amendments was passed to allow the General Court to charter cities from towns with a population over 12,000. The convention also removed the required oath of allegiance to the Christian religion for office holders and discarded all qualifications for the franchise save a small property tax. This last enactment was strongly opposed by delegates Daniel Webster, John Adams, and Judge Joseph Story on the grounds that it would allow ''the poor and the profligate to control the affluent.''

**FALL 1820** • John Quincy Adams ran for President against Monroe as an Independent Democratic-Republican but received only one electoral vote, from New Hampshire. Massachusetts chose its electors through popular vote by district and gave all of its votes to Monroe.

**1821** • The Commonwealth's, and America's, first free public high school for voluntary attendance was established at Boston. Meanwhile, Noah Webster helped found Amherst College in Amherst, to educate ''promising but needy youths who wished to enter the Ministry.'' Robert Frost would be a faculty member for several years. State paupers cost the Commonwealth five times as much money in 1820 as they had in 1792 though the population had not even doubled. In the General Court in 1821, a legislative committee reported in favor of a system of town and district almshouses with the legislature in control of the entire program.

**1822** • With a growing population of over 40,000, but only some 7,000 qualified voters, Boston called a town meeting at Faneuil Hall in December 1821 to consider again incorporation as a city. After a long and bitter debate, the question was put to the people early in 1822 and passed by a majority of 800 votes of out of almost 5,000 cast. The General Court then passed an act of municipal incorporation which was subsequently passed by a town meeting.

**1823** • Josiah Quincy was elected the first mayor of Boston, serving until 1829. Daniel Webster was elected a U.S. congressman from Massachusetts while a Democratic-Republican, William Eustis, was elected governor, serving until 1825. In Waltham, the mills of the Boston Manufacturing Company (1815) had been so successful that Jackson dreamed of an entire mill city and had no problems raising the necessary capital. Jackson picked a sight near the farming community of Chelmsford at the Pawtucket Falls and Merrimack Canal. Calling the new venture the Merrimack Manufacturing Company, Jackson and Moody dammed the river and widened and deepened the canal, erected two mill buildings, installed machinery built at the Waltham factory, and constructed the ''best mill wheel in the world.'' In 1826, the mill site was set off and named Lowell. Thus the factory originally envisioned by Francis Cabot Lowell resulted in America's first company town. Lowell would have a population of 3,500 by 1828 and its development would lead to the industrialization of Lawrence, Fall River and New Bedford.

**1824** • John Quincy Adams faced the new hero, Andrew Jackson, as well as Henry Clay and William Crawford for the presidency. All represented factions of the Democratic-Republican party. Massachusetts, for the first time choosing its electors statewide by popular vote, gave all of its electoral votes to Adams as did all of New England and two-thirds of New York. Jackson had 99 votes to Adams' 84 but since no one candidate had a majority, the election went to the U.S. House of Representatives for the only time so far in history. Even though Jackson had led in both popular and electoral votes, Clay's support threw the election to Adams. He set a course of nationalism and internal improvements he believed should be financed by the federal government in the midst of a state's rights reaction. A visionary, he suggested many improvements and projects such as the naval academy that were immediately rejected but later enacted.

**1825** • Levi Lincoln was elected as a National Republican to govern the state and was re-elected annually until 1834. William Ellery Channing organized the American Unitarian Association in Boston and America's first high school for girls opened. In Northampton, Charles Beck applied his German studies to the construction of the first American gymnasium. In Sandwich in Barnstable County, Deming Jarves opened a glassworks which produced beautiful colored glass from a now-lost secret formula. America's first pressed and first lace glass was produced here. Jarves employed 600 artisans and turned out 100,000 pounds of glass per week. The Boston & Sandwich Glass Co. stood at Jarves and Factory Streets until it closed in 1888. The General Court's Committee on Education requested the mayor and aldermen of Boston

and the selectment of every other town to report the number of children working under 16 years of age, their hours and their educational opportunities. The committee observed that the "time of employment is generally twelve or thirteen hours each day, excepting the Sabbath, which leaves little opportunity for daily instruction."

**1826** • Due to increasing concern over children's education, the General Court required each town to choose a school committee of not less than five people, one or more of whom were to visit each school in the community at least once a month unannounced. An annual report was to be submitted to the secretary of the Commonwealth. The same year in Boston, Lyman Beecher founded the American Society for the Promotion of Temperance in reaction to the excessive drinking that was so common among all classes, including a goodly number of clergymen. The Boston society was the most prominent of the groups that merged in 1833 to form the United States Temperance Union. Quincy saw the construction of America's first railroad, horse-drawn and then steam, which hauled Quincy granite to Neponset River wharves, supplying granite for the Bunker Hill Monument in Charlestown. The track was three miles long. Charlestown native Samuel F.B. Morse, a European-trained portrait painter, founded the National Academy of Design in Boston.

**July 4, 1826** • Half a century to the day after the signing of the Declaration of Independence, riders left Braintree (Quincy), Massachusetts and Monticello in Virginia, each bound for the other's town to deliver the news of the almost simultaneous passing of John Adams and Thomas Jefferson. Adams outlasted Jefferson by several hours, though he died thinking otherwise.

**1827** • The General Court passed America's first high school law calling for tax-supported high school education in every town or district of 50 or more families. The towns and districts were to establish their own school districts and "use their best endeavors that the youth of their respective towns and districts do regularly attend the schools established and supported as aforesaid for their instruction." Boston native Edgar Allan Poe published his first poetry in his home city, *Tamerlane and Other Poems*. Daniel Webster was elected U.S. senator from the state, serving until 1841.

**1828** • The Blackstone Canal was completed in Worcester County with the effect of greatly boosting manufacturing activity in the area. Millbury's manufacturing capacity doubled in only a few years. It also provided work for a great number of laborers from Southern Ireland. The canal would close in 1848 because of trouble between mill owners and waterway operators, though the Providence and Worcester Railroad would have soon been its demise. The year also marked the survey of the future Boston-Albany Railroad. Running as a National Republican, John Quincy Adams was defeated by Democratic-Republican Andrew Jackson. One of the many factors that defeated Adams was the "Tariff of Abominations" of 1828. Massachusetts' commercial interests opposed trade duties but the young and growing manufacturing interests demanded protection from foreign goods.

**1829** • After serving as mayor of Boston, Josiah Quincy accepted the position as president of Harvard, serving there until 1845. This ended the long line of clergymen who had led and served the once-Congregationalist institution. Business interests now dominated the administration and the faculty, and the university became financially dependent on wealthy Whig capitalists such as the Appletons, Cabots, Lawrences and Lowells.

**MARCH 2, 1829** • With the financial aid of Thomas H. Perkins, Dr. John Dix Fisher incorporated, in South Boston, the Perkins Institute and Massachusetts School for the Blind, the first such institution in America. Helen Keller spent part of one year at Perkins.

**OCTOBER 16, 1829** • Boston citizenry and travelers delighted in the opening of America's first modern hotel, the Tremont, which offered a dollar-a-plate dinner, 170 guest rooms and eight bathing rooms, in the basement.

**1830** • Since the last census, Massachusetts had added almost 100,000 residents, reporting a population this year of 610,408. Harvard alumnus Lynde Walters founded the *Boston Transcript* which, though a gentleman's paper, happened to be the first major American newspaper edited by a woman, Miss Cornelia Walters. Boston also became the home of the American Institute of Instruction, America's oldest educational association, and the Boston Society of Natural History which is evident today through the Boston Museum of Science.

**JANUARY 26, 1830** • On this day, Massachusetts Senator Daniel Webster delivered what many still consider the greatest recorded American oration. Criticizing the "South Carolina doctrine," Webster could not trust those "whose thoughts should be mainly bent on considering, not how the Union may be best preserved, but how tolerable might be the condition of the people when it should be broken up and destroyed." Denouncing "those other words of delusion and folly, 'Liberty first and Union afterwards,'" he ended with the famous line "Liberty and Union, now and forever, one and inseparable!"

**JANUARY 1, 1831** • William Lloyd Garrison issued his first copy of the *Liberator*, the abolitionist newspaper he had recently founded in Boston. The cause had been preached for some years in Boston by David Walker, a black, second-hand clothes dealer, but Garrison, only 25 years of age, commanded people to sit up and take notice. Garrison was the son of an immigrant sea captain and a native of Newburyport, a printer and newspaper editor and reformer who had trained under Quaker Benjamin Lundy of Maryland, where Garrison and Lundy had been jailed for libel. Though Massachusetts' Constitution of 1780 was interpreted as abolishing slavery and the state had always taken an antislavery stand, current economic developments suppressed the sentiment, especially among the textile mill owners and workers as their industry relied on cotton supplied by the South. Garrison picked a critical time not merely to rock the boat but to attack the ship with flaming torch. The *Liberator* would be published weekly until December, 1865.

**SPRING 1831** • The spring elections that had been a peculiar tradition in Massachusetts from the landing of the first ships was abandoned by Article X, an amendment to the Constitution of the Commonwealth which moved the elections from May to November and began the political year on the first Wednesday of January instead of the last Wednesday of May.

**JULY 4, 1831** • Dr. Samuel Francis Smith, the Baptist minister of the Park Street Church in Boston, had written the song "America" while a student at Andover Theological Seminary. Selecting a tune from a German hymn book, Smith saw the song published before he realized that the tune was

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

the same as the British national anthem. On this day, it was introduced to the congregation and gained immediate popularity, later to be sung on the battlefield during the Civil War.

**NOVEMBER 1831** • Having returned saddened, slandered and defeated from a stormy presidency, John Quincy Adams was surprised to be elected to the U.S. House from his old district of Quincy. He was re-elected every two years for the rest of his life.

**1832** • Unitarian pastor of Boston's Second Church, Ralph Waldo Emerson shocked his congregation by resigning at the age of 29 to retire to Concord. There he embraced the tenets of Transcendentalism. He would share Concord with Nathaniel Hawthorne, Louisa May Alcott and her transcendental father, Amos Bronson Alcott, and Henry Thoreau. Here Louisa wrote *Little Women* and *Little Men.* In Boston, Garrison formed the New England Anti-Slavery Society which, in a year, became a national association.

**1833** • Massachusetts became the last state to disestablish its church. Article XI replaced the Third Article of the Bill of Rights and amended the Commonwealth's Constitution to establish freedom of religion and the legal equality of all religious sects and denominations, with public support of any church no longer required by law. In Southbridge, William Beecher founded American Optical Company, becoming America's first eyeglass manufacturer. The Boston Academy of Music was founded the same year by Lowell Mason to instruct children and music teachers and Horace Mann led the movement in the General Court to found a state mental hospital which opened this year at Worcester.

**1834** • Land sales in Maine and claims against the federal government produced funds that were used by the General Court to create a state school fund. Boston organized a city trade union that represented all craft unions in the region called the Boston Trades' Union. On July 4, largely due to the efforts of union-supported Frederick Robinson, imprisonment for debt was abolished in Massachusetts. Elected to the state legislature, Robinson would later lead the state's Democratic Party. The mill city of Lowell, still spinning out textiles, also turned out James McNeill Whistler, the future world-renowned artist. The conservatives were now called Whigs, a party formed by the National Republicans and the old Federalists. The Republicans were now Jacksonian Democrats. Jackson remained in the White House, fighting nullification and the Second Bank of the United States. The Whigs in Massachusetts had elected John Davis to serve as governor for the year. In November, they elected Samuel Armstrong to serve from 1835 to 1836. Catholicism had been strengthened by the Irish, many of whom had come to build canals and factories and find work in the cities becaue they were tired of farming. Anti-Catholic sentiment exploded when an angry mob burned Ursuline Convent in Charlestown.

**OCTOBER 31, 1835** • What later became known as the "Garrison Mob" broke up a meeting of the Boston Female Anti-Slavery Society on this afternoon in Boston where Garrison was addressing the group at the *Liberator's* building on Washington Street. He was "rescued" by Democratic Mayor Theodore Lyman and Boston constables, put in Leverett Street jail for safekeeping and then asked to leave town for a few days. Only two months earlier, Mayor Lyman had led a meeting of Boston's mercantile elite at Faneuil Hall where sentiments were strongly expressed against the abolitionists who dared to endanger the profitable economic arrangements that now existed surrounding the supply of Southern cotton.

**NOVEMBER 1835** • The Whigs elected another governor, Edward Everett, who served every year until 1840. The region's first three important railroads were completed from Boston to Lowell, Boston to Providence and Boston to Worcester. What would become the Boston and Maine Railroad was incorporated in New Hampshire.

**JANUARY 1836** • Salem called a town meeting to consider a city charter. The meeting commissioned a report which was returned as favorable in April and the necessary legislation was passed and approved. The town of Lowell, though very young in comparison, followed almost immediately. In the next ten years, Lowell would grow from 2,500 to over 18,000 inhabitants. During the year, the General Court passed a statewide child labor law prohibiting the employment of children under 15 in incorporated factories unless they had attended school for three months the previous year. Emerson opened a remarkable period in American literary culture with the publishing of his *Essay On Nature* and Maine native Henry Wadsworth Longfellow took a position at Harvard to teach modern languages.

**NOVEMBER 1836** • Daniel Webster ran as a Whig candidate for president and polled 55 percent of the Massachusetts vote, though the election went to Martin Van Buren.

**1837** • Construction was underway on the Western Railroad from Worcester to Springfield but the project was so disapproved of that the owners drafted a letter to all the churches in the state requesting that the clergy preach sermons addressing the "beneficial moral effect of railroads." The number of cotton mills in the state had grown from 54 in 1810 to 282, and woolen mills now numbered 192 with 66 in Worcester alone. The total value of the products of Massachusetts this year was close to $91 million. Emerson was invited to deliver the Phi Beta Kappa address at Harvard. The address, later called "America's Intellectual Declaration of Independence," was originally titled "The American Scholar." At Perkins Institute for the Blind, Dr. Samuel Gridley Howe had created a system of raised lettering to teach blind children to read. This year he achieved a remarkable feat by teaching Laura Bridgman, an eight-year-old deaf, dumb and blind girl, to communicate. Howe devoted 45 years in Boston to developing techniques in teaching blind children, which would be incorporated all over the country.

**FEBRUARY 14, 1837** • Judge Joseph Story upheld the sanctity of contracts as a dissenter in a Supreme Court decision handed down in the *Charles River Bridge v. Warren Bridge* case. Story held that the General Court should have continued to honor the 70-year charter it had granted the first company in 1792, rather than allowing a second company to build a competing toll bridge over the Charles River next to the present toll bridge.

**JUNE 29, 1837** • Horace Mann, president of the Massachusetts Senate, became secretary of the newly established State Board of Education. From the border town of Franklin, Mann would become the nation's leader in the fight to improve and extend education.

**NOVEMBER 8, 1837** • Mary Lyon opened Mount Holyoke Female Seminary, the nation's first college dedicated to women's education and the first college created with the

purpose of training teachers. The college was located in South Hadley and supported by donations from nearly 2,000 citizens. Schoolteacher Lyon was a native of Buckland in Franklin County.

**DECEMBER 8, 1837** • A 26-year-old lawyer, Wendell Phillips, stood in Faneuil Hall to rebut the Massachusetts Attorney General James T. Austin's defense of the slaying of abolitionist publisher Elijah P. Lovejoy. Phillips stated that "when Liberty is in danger, Faneuil Hall has the right, it is her duty, to strike the keynote for these United States." Phillips spent the next 25 years giving free lectures on abolition throughout the Northeast.

**1838** • The General Court formed Massachusetts' first state bank commission and Lowell Mason introduced music into the Boston public schools. On February 21, abolitionist Angelina Grimke stood before the General Court and became the first woman to address an American legislative body.

**1839** • The nation's first state normal school to train teachers was opened in Lexington through the work of Horace Mann and Samuel Hall. Other colleges established and chartered this year included Framingham and Westfield State Colleges and Boston University. In Woburn, Charles Goodyear first vulcanized rubber. Legend claims that he discovered the process when he accidentally dropped a ball of crude latex onto a hot stove.

**1840** • This year of the census would show Massachusetts a state of 737,699 and Boston a city approaching 100,000 residents. *The Dial* was launched as a Transcendentalist journal edited by Ralph Waldo Emerson and Margaret Fuller. Marcus Morton became the first Democratic party candidate to fill the governor's chair, serving only for one year and taking power from the Whigs. During the year, a book appeared by a Boston native and Harvard graduate that provided Massachusetts readers with their first detailed knowledge of California and resulted in a series of reforms designed to better the life of the common seaman. Richard Henry Dana spent *Two Years Before the Mast* on the brig *Pilgrim.*

**1841** • Dorothea Lynde Dix agreed to the request of a Harvard divinity student that she teach a Sunday school class to the women incarcerated in the East Cambridge jail. Finding mentally disturbed women guilty of no crime but treated cruelly and imprisoned, Dix approached the Middlesex Court and then gained the literary support of Samuel Gridley Howe. Though others had already led the way in working to provide humane conditions for mentally disturbed individuals, Dix carried the crusade to a national campaign. President William Henry Harrison appointed Daniel Webster as his secretary of state, a position in which Webster would continue, following the untimely death of Harrison and the succession of John Tyler. The Whigs regained the governor's office with John Davis who served two terms until 1843. The Brook-Farm Institute of Agriculture and Education was underway at West Roxbury, founded as a utopian experiment by Channing, Hawthorne, Emerson, Fuller and others of the Unitarian and Transcendental movements. Signs of internal dissension were visible in the joint-stock company before an 1846 fire precipitated the decline of the society. The year also witnessed the creation of the Boston and Maine Railroad Company which would eventually absorb 111 railroad lines.

**1842** • Chief Justice Lemuel Shaw of the Massachusetts Supreme Court handed down America's first judicial decision upholding the right of workmen to strike, to maintain a closed shop and to organize labor unions. The case *Commonwealth of Massachusetts v. Hunt* rejected the former ruling that labor unions were illegal criminal conspiracies.

**MARCH 3, 1842** • The General Court attempted somewhat unsuccessfully to regulate child labor. Governor John Davis signed a bill which limited children under 12 to a ten-hour day. Applying only to manufacturing institutions, the law was difficult to enforce.

**1843** • Worcester became home to Massachusetts' first Catholic college when the Right Reverend Benedict Joseph Fenwick, second Bishop of Boston, founded Holy Cross College and staffed it with Jesuits to whom the college was willed. It remains today a liberal arts college for men. Also in Worcester, Charles Thurber invented the typewriter.

**JANUARY 1843** • Democrat Marcus Morton returned to the governor's office to serve for one year as the two parties tugged back and forth on the state.

**MAY 1843** • Secretary of State Daniel Webster sent Massachusetts Whig Caleb Cushing to China to secure trading rights, following in the footsteps of England. The Treaty of Wanghia was signed on July 3, 1844.

**JUNE 17, 1843** • Daniel Webster returned to Boston to speak at the dedication of the completed Bunker Hill Monument, the cornerstone of which had been laid in 1825 by the French General, Lafayette.

**JULY 24, 1843** • Massachusetts' David Henshaw was appointed secretary of the navy in the cabinet of President Tyler.

**1844** • Samuel Bowles turned his *Springfield Republican,* a weekly he had founded in 1824, into a solidly Whig, daily newspaper. Under the liberal editorship of Dr. J.G. Holland, the paper practically became a national institution. John Quincy Adams finally won the right of free petition for the country. Though never an abolitionist, Adams was against the spread of slavery. Nova Scotia native Donald McKay established a shipyard in East Boston.

**JANUARY 1844** • With George N. Briggs, the Whigs took a tight grasp on the governor's office which would last until 1851.

**JUNE 24, 1844** • A mass meeting of black citizens of Boston issued a protest over the denial of a petition before the School Committee of Boston calling for the desegregation of Boston schools.

**MARCH 10, 1845** • Worcester native George Bancroft, a Democrat, was appointed secretary of the Navy by newly elected Democratic President James K. Polk. Also a pioneer in the writing of American history, Bancroft authored a ten-volume *History of the United States* among other writings. Following the accession of the Democrats to the White House, Daniel Webster was elected from the Massachusetts legislature to the U.S. Senate, serving there until 1850. Later speaking to Boston Whigs, former Secretary of State Webster urged reform of the naturalization laws, claiming that the "speedy" naturalization of immigrants, who were then wooed to vote Democratic, cost the Whigs the presidential election.

**JULY 4, 1845** • Concord native Henry David Thoreau retired from the public school he ran with his brother John to a hut beside Walden Pond, devoting himself to his studies and his writing. Also during the year, Bostonian Joseph Francis designed and constructed the first successful lifeboat. The whaling industry hit its peak in New Bedford which had

become the center of the industry after the War of 1812, taking the top port position from Nantucket. With 10,000 seamen manning its ships, the port reported its greatest receipts: 158,000 barrels of sperm oil, 272,000 barrels of whale oil and 3,000,000 pounds of whalebone.

**1846** • Elias Howe patented his new sewing machine and, in Quincy Hall in Boston, raced hand sewers with his machine and won. The machine would double the production of "store-bought" clothing during the next decade as well as stimulate the shoemaking industry. At Clinton in Worcester County, Erastus Bingham Bigelow founded the first gingham factory in the U.S. The Irish Potato Famine reached its peak this year, driving a growing number of Irish, mostly Catholic, to the promised land of industry, work and food in Boston and other Massachusetts towns. This would be the most significant political and social event in Massachusetts history, pitting a declining population of Yankee Protestants, mostly of English descent, against an ever-growing population of Irish Catholic immigrants who came to stay and master the wiles of labor unions and patronage politics. Yankee hostility to the invading Irish would be symbolized in the "No Irish Need Apply" signs that began to appear in shop after shop.

**JULY 1846** • In a protest against the state government of which he disapproved, Henry David Thoreau had for years paid no poll tax though he had paid his other taxes. Ignored for a while, Thoreau was finally put in the Concord jail overnight but was released the next day when a household member paid the tax. This would lead to the essay on civil disobedience which he would write for the *Dial* in 1849.

**OCTOBER 16, 1846** • Massachusetts General Hospital was the scene of the first public demonstration of a surgical operation performed using a general anesthetic. Boston dentist Dr. William T.G. Morton administered sulpheric ether to a patient of Dr. John Collins Warren.

**1847** • The General Court adopted a formal condemnation of the Mexican War written by abolitionist Charles Sumner. The condemnation declared that the war was for the extension of slavery, fought "to confirm and fortify the 'Slave Power.'" The document also claimed that the war was unconstitutional, against the free states and criminal in nature. Back at Harvard, Benjamin Peirce instigated the building of an observatory for the college's 15-inch refracting telescope which was imported and assembled this year. Three years later, through this telescope, William C. Bond and a Boston daguerreotypist made the first stellar photograph. Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes was appointed dean of Harvard Medical School, serving in that position until 1853 and as an anatomy professor until 1882.

**1848** • Boston first drew water from Lake Cochituate, announcing the new service with a display of fountains in the Frog Pond. Without a municipal water system, city residents had been forced to draw cooking and drinking water from wells in backyards which were also home to the privies; or they collected rainwater in cisterns that graciously bred mosquitoes; or they paid for water from wagons which carted it in from the country. The potato famine brought Irishman Patrick Kennedy to East Boston at the age of 25. A penniless tenant farmer, he became a cooper, or barrel maker, and married fellow immigrant Bridget Murphy.

**FEBRUARY 23, 1848** • The "Old Man Eloquent," John Quincy Adams was stricken in the U.S. House of Representatives where he still served his district, fiercely independent to the end, and died in the speaker's room. Horace Mann would take his seat.

**NOVEMBER 1848** • A new alignment called the Free-Soil party brought together the abolitionist Liberty party, the radical "barnburners" of the New York Democrats and New England's Conscience Whigs, who opposed slavery. With the slogan "Free soil, free speech, free labor and free men," the party nominated Martin Van Buren for president and Charles Francis Adams, son of the late John Quincy, as vice-president. Neither the Whig, Democratic or Free Soil electors gained a majority in Massachusetts and the General Court chose the Whig electors to represent the state. Whig candidate and Mexican War hero Zachary Taylor won the day. Nathaniel Hawthorne lost his position in the Salem Custom House and proceeded to write *The Scarlet Letter.*

**1849** • The cause of women joined hand-in-hand with the cause of blacks as abolitionist William Lloyd Garrison joined forces with West Brookfield native Lucy Stone. This year she became the first Massachusetts woman to graduate from a classical college (Oberlin in Ohio). Invited to speak from her brother's pulpit in Gardner, Worcester County, she went on to accept a position with Garrison as a traveling lecturer for the American Anti-Slavery Society. Stone spoke also for the women, saying "I was a woman before I was an abolitionist." Former Massachusetts governor Edward Everett, now president of Harvard, submitted a second request to the General Court to resume the allocation of state funds to Harvard which had been discontinued in 1824. The answer was "no." Harvard enrolled about 350 students this year, including Charles William Eliot who would return in 20 years as president of the institution. In Boston, over 700 persons died from an epidemic of Asiatic cholera. Boston native and great literary historian, Francis Parkman, released his personal account of his travels in the West in *The California and Oregon Trail.* He would later chronicle French activity in North America.

**1850** • This year's census would record the state's population at 994,514 including a foreign-born population of 164,000. The total value of products for the state would surpass $161 million. Boston now had about 140,000 residents.

**MARCH 7, 1850** • Still senior senator from Massachusetts, Daniel Webster delivered a famous oration in which he lent support for Clay's compromise plan and for the Fugitive Slave Bill. Though he had always stood with the Northern Whigs on this issue, he chose to put the preservation of the Union first, losing favor with his party as he did so.

**APRIL 25, 1850** • Following the devastating cholera epidemic of the previous year, Lemuel Shattuck was assigned to head a commission to survey the public health of the state. His report, issued on this day, was the most comprehensive investigation of a state's sanitary conditions made up to that time. During the year, the General Court also passed a compulsory schooling law aimed at all children between the ages of six and 15.

**JULY 22, 1850** • The death of President Taylor put Millard Fillmore in office and Daniel Webster once again became the country's secretary of state. Webster would die on October 24, 1852.

**OCTOBER 23-24, 1850** • The first National Women's Rights convention, called in part by Lucy Stone, met at Worcester to raise the banner of women's suffrage. Stone had a good deal of influence upon one attendee, a native of Adams in

:rkshire County named Susan B. Anthony who was not yet committed feminist. Stone's marriage ceremony in 1855 ›uld protest the then-current state marriage laws, including e keeping of her own name.

**HANKSGIVING DAY 1850** • Unitarian minister Theodore ırker, pastor of the Twenty-Eighth Congregational Society Boston, delivered a sermon from his Boston pulpit on the State of the Nation," suggesting that the North might be :tter off without the South. Parker called upon blacks to :e up against their masters and flaunted the Fugitive Slave ıw by helping blacks who had fled to the North.

**51** • Donald McKay, Boston shipbuilder and designer, sent s *Flying Cloud* from New York to San Francisco in a mere days, a record never surpassed by a sailing vessel. In the xt two years, McKay would launch, among others, *Sovereign the Seas,* largest merchant ship to date, and then *Great 'public,* the largest clipper ever built though it burned thout ever going to sea. When the object was no longer the stest possible trip to the gold fields of California, no more ppers were built. Written in Boston, *Moby Dick* was pubhed this year by Herman Melville who sailed on Yankee ips and whose paternal grandfather, Major Thomas elville, was a Bostonian. A Lynn shoemaker averaged from to $5 for a minimum 72-hour work week. Women oebinders worked 17 hours a day for six days to earn $2.40. ›well power-loom operators averaged $1.75 per week plus ›ard. Pay was usually in company script to be used at mpany stores with inflated prices. The General Court passed e first law permitting towns to tax their residents for the pport of free libraries. In Boston, Dr. William P. Channing ıd Moses Gerrish Farmer constructed America's first electric 'e alarm system while the city became home to the first merican Chapter of the Young Men's Christian Association.

**NUARY 1851** • A Free-Soil Democrat, George S. Bout:ll, took office as governor and served until 1853.

**EBRUARY 15, 1851** • An abolitionist mob rescued a fugitive ıve, Shadrach, from federal officials in Boston, defying the ıgitive Slave Law.

**OVEMBER 1851** • Former governor and Harvard presint Edward Everett became secretary of state under Fillmore, year before the death of Webster.

**52** • Published in Boston, Harriet Beecher Stowe's *Uncle m's Cabin* was an immediate success, selling 300,000 copies first year. Riverside Press became a prominent resident side the Charles River in Cambridge, founded by Vermonter enry O. Houghton. For more than 100 years, it would print ebster's Dictionary for the Merriam Company of Springld. A prohibition law to prevent the sale of intoxicating uors was passed that proved very difficult to enforce, though would originate the movement which would culminate in e present state police organization. Boston State College ıs chartered at Boston and Tufts University was established Medford.

**NUARY 1853** • Despite the Democrats in the White ouse, Massachusetts Whigs had been able to elect John H. ifford who took office as governor, serving until 1854.

**ARCH 7, 1853** • Salisbury native Caleb Cushing, who had goatiated the treaty opening China to U.S. trade, was pointed U.S. attorney general by new Democratic President anklin Pierce. Cushing had served as the first mayor of Newryport's new city government and in 1852, was appointed to the Massachusetts Supreme Court. Nathaniel Hawthorne was appointed to serve as the U.S. consul to Liverpool from 1853 to 1858.

**APRIL 1853** • A group of reformers including Wendell Phillips, Thomas W. Higginson, Theodore Parker, William Lloyd Garrison and Bronson Alcott prepared a petition for women's suffrage to be presented before the Massachusetts General Court.

**MAY 17, 1853** • The General Court reduced the work day from 12 hours to ten, effective October 1, 1854. During the year, the legislature also created a Board of Agriculture.

**NOVEMBER 1853** • The voters of Massachusetts rejected a completely revised state constitution which had been drafted by a convention in May.

**JANUARY 1854** • The crumbling Whig party retained control of the governor's office, electing Emory Washburn who served for one year. The year also witnessed the opening of the Boston Public Library which had been founded in 1852, America's first institution to offer free library service to the public on a large scale. Salem State College was founded and chartered.

**1855** • Since 1850, a total of 86 towns had lost inhabitants, though this was due in large measure to the setting off of new towns from old incorporated areas, indicating congested conditions. The industrial districts of Middlesex showed the largest proportional increase in population of almost 25 percent. Since 1851, public high schools had been established and political science and U.S. history were assigned an unprecedented prominence in the curricula. At Harvard, James Russell accepted Longfellow's chair and served the university until 1886.

**JANUARY 1855** • Resentment against Catholics and immigrants in general gave rise to a secret society and political organization called the American or "Know-Nothing" Party, dedicated to the defeat of Democrats and the restriction of both immigration and the rights of immigrants. At the same time, Free-Soilers of both the Democratic party and the rapidly deteriorating Whig party decided to call themselves Republicans and fight against slavery in the territories. Know-Nothing Henry J. Gardner captured the governor's office and served until 1858, the only American party candidate every elected to Massachusetts' highest office. Anti-Catholic sentiment was also evident when the legislature appointed a "Nunnery Committee" to investigate secrets of Catholic convents and schools. Henry Wilson took office as U.S. senator from the Commonwealth. A New Hampshire native, he came to Natick in 1833 as a cobbler's apprentice. Wilson, the "cordwainer of Natick," not only became senator but served as vice-president of the country from 1873 to 1875.

**MAY 21, 1855** • Judge E.G. Loring had ruled in the Boston trial of fugitive slave Anthony Burns that Burns should be returned to his owner according to the Fugitive Slave Law. On this day, the General Court passed the Massachusetts Personal Liberty Act declaring the law to be in violation of the Tenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution and guaranteeing the fugitive a trial by jury with burden of proof on the claimant, use of the writ of habeas corpus, and protection from any officer of the Commonwealth, as well as forbidding the use of local jails by federal officers.

**JUNE 1, 1855** • As of this day, there were about 333,000 males in Massachusetts over the age of 15. Of these, over

36 percent were mechanics, about 18 percent laborers and only 17 percent farmers.

**NOVEMBER 1855** • Though the voters had rejected the revised constitution in 1853, they approved six amendments, Articles XIV through XIX. The new amendments allowed popular election of the executive council, secretary, treasurer, auditor, attorney general and a number of county officials, doing away with the requirements for a majority of votes, and no longer allowed public support for sectarian or private schools. The legislature also established an Insurance Commission during the year.

**1856** • The Reverend Dr. Charles H. Leonard held the first recorded observance of Children's Day at the Universalist Church of the Redeemer in Chelsea.

**MARCH 26, 1856** • New England's first street trains ran on a three-mile track between Cambridge and Boston.

**NOVEMBER 1856** • Massachusetts gave all of its electoral votes to Republican party presidential candidate John C. Fremont who lost to Democrat James Buchanan. Know-Nothing Party candidate Millard Fillmore was also defeated, winning only Maryland.

**1857** • Rapid expansion and speculation led to the Panic of 1857, all of which combined with increasing competition to force the Lowell mills to follow others in hiring cheap immigrant labor, increasing work loads, and lowering wages. It was no longer a happy, exemplary family with paternalistic bosses. The air was more businesslike and living quarters were allowed to run down. Boston now had a population of 165,000 and only 6,500 waterclosets, eight of which were in the basement of the Tremont House to serve 200 to 300 guests. A hospital for poverty-stricken women was opened in Boston, called the Channing Home. In Cambridge, Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes of Harvard joined others of the "Saturday Club" in launching *Atlantic Monthly* magazine with James Russell Lowell as editor. Every month, Holmes would contribute his popular feature, "Autocrat of the Breakfast Table." The same year, Boston native Winslow Homer opened an art studio in the city. Following Commonwealth native Samuel Colt, Horace Smith and Daniel B. Wesson designed and produced the Smith & Wesson revolver in Springfield where their firm is still active today. Voters approved three more amendments to the constitution, restricting the House to 240 members and the Senate to 40. Article XX was obviously a reaction to the immigrant vote as it instituted a literacy test—reading the constitution in English and writing one's name—but exempted all present voters, all 60 years and over and any physically unable to comply.

**1858** • The first in a string of Republican governors took office in Massachusetts. Nathaniel P. Banks would serve in the office until 1861. Judge Edward Greeley Loring was tried for his decision to send the slave, Anthony Burns, back to his master. Loring was found guilty of breaking a state law and removed from office. John Andrew, future Republican governor, was the prosecutor. Patrick Joseph "P.J." Kennedy was born just a few months before the death of his young father. Raised by his sisters while his mother worked two jobs, he attended parochial school for seven or eight years, became a longshoreman and saved enough money to buy a run-down saloon on Haymarket Square near Faneuil Hall.

**1859** • Massachusetts Institute of Technology was established at Cambridge though classes did not begin until 1865.

**JULY 1859** • On the first of the month, Amherst College defeated Williams College in history's first intercollegiate baseball game. The score was 66 to 32. Salem witnessed the world's first demonstration of electric home lighting when Professor Moses G. Farmer lit up the parlor of his home with electric lights. On the 26th, Harvard won the first intercollegiate rowing regatta, defeating Yale and Brown at Lake Quinisgamond in Worcester.

**1860** • Charles Francis Adams led the moderate Republicans in the U.S. House. His son Henry would serve as his secretary and his son Charles Francis Adams II would serve in the Union Army. Massachusetts would tally a population of 1,231,066 in the census including a foreign-born population of over 260,000. By this year, some 61 percent of Boston's population was foreign-born. The Commonwealth was engaged in more than three-fourths of the 600 industrial, commercial and agricultural occupations listed in the census and led the nation in shoemaking and textiles. Boot and shoemaking employed over 60,000 Bay Staters or over 28 percent of the state's industrial labor force. Textile mills employed over 50,000, the greatest number concentrated in Middlesex County. Whaling still employed some 50,000 people in New Bedford, southeastern Massachusetts and the islands. New Bedford and Fall River ranked among the top 25 manufacturing cities in the nation. Boston had become a national financial capital. The state population dropped in rank from third to seventh among the states and Boston was now the fourth largest city. Oliver Wendell Holmes first used the term "Brahmin" to refer to his own aristocratic, intellectual class of New England society. The sentence "He comes of the *Brahmin caste of New England,*" appeared in "The Professor's Story" in *Atlantic Monthly.*

**NOVEMBER 1860** • The Republican party chose Abraham Lincoln as its presidential candidate. Massachusetts cast all 13 of its electoral votes for Lincoln, who carried the North and the West. A month following the election, South Carolina began the string of "peaceful seccessions" that formed the Confederate States of America by the next February.

**JANUARY 1861** • New Governor John A. Andrew, prosecutor of Judge Loring, began his Republican administration. He would be re-elected every year until 1866.

**FEBRUARY 12, 1861** • A Boston petition signed by 22,313 residents was literally rolled into Congress calling for passage of the compromise introduced by Kentucky Senator John Crittenden in December, 1860. His resolutions would have allowed slavery in territories below a certain latitude.

**APRIL 19, 1861** • The first guns, fired by the South on the Union flag at Fort Sumter in Charleston, sounded the beginning of the Civil War on April 12. Lincoln authorized a call for 75,000 volunteers. Secretary of War Simon Cameron wired Governor Andrew to mobilize three militia infantry regiments but the again farsighted governor called up four and then a fifth. The first four regiments called were from New Bedford, Quincy, Pepperell and Lynn. The Sixth Massachusetts from Pepperell arrived in Baltimore on this day, 86 years to the date from the bloodshed at Lexington Green. Of the ten companies of men, seven were transferred by horsecars across town to the Washington Depot. But the final three were mobbed by Southern sympathizers with rocks, resulting in four dead and 36 wounded Massachusetts militiamen whose blood was the first to stain the conflict. In the first call,

Massachusetts supplied 3,736 men to serve, they said, for three months. By the end of the war, the Bay State would have sent off 122,781 white troops, 3,966 black toops and 19,983 sailors. This exceeded the state's four-year quota by more than 30,000. The Commonwealth would mourn 13,942 casualties before the South bowed its head in defeat.

**1862** • Dorothea Dix was appointed superintendent of Union nurses and Oxford native Clara Barton, future founder of the American Red Cross, solicited and distributed supplies for the wounded.

**FEBRUARY 1862** • Julia Ward Howe received a fee of $4 for a poem which appeared in *Atlantic Monthly.* Written to the tune of the popular "John Brown's Body," it came to be known as "The Battle Hymn of the Republic." Mrs. Howe had accompanied her husband, Dr. Samuel Gridley Howe, who had been sent to Washington to inspect Bay State troops in the area. She returned one evening from a visit to an army camp in the company of her minister and a band of soldiers who all joined in singing the popular anti-slavery tune. The minister asked Mrs. Howe if she would not write "some good words for that sturring tune." Her version became Lincoln's favorite war song.

**DECEMBER 8, 1862** • The Right Reverend John Melville Burgess was consecrated as suffragen bishop of Massachusetts, becoming the first American black bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church to serve a predominantly white diocese.

**1863** • Boston College was founded at Newton and Massachusetts Agricultural College was charted at Amherst, though the latter's classes did not open until 1867. In Sterling, Worcester County, tailor Ebenezer Butterick and his wife invented the first, standardized paper clothes patterns. Boston still resisted the question of state police, pleading traditional self-government and the authority of the local community. Boston native and pastor of South Congregational Church, Edward Everett Hale, published *Man Without a Country* while Longfellow published his *Tale of a Wayside Inn* which included the first poem in the collection the soon-to-be-famous if somewhat inaccurate "Paul Revere's Ride." The "hour of darkeness" referred to the present war as well as the past. Too few men volunteered to fill the requirements of the Union army, necessitating a draft. The law allowed those who could afford a payment of $300 to the government, or the money to bribe a substitute, to purchase immunity from compulsory service. This greatly angered the poor, a number of whom precipitated the Boston Draft Riots. Voters approved Article XVI, amending the Commonwealth's constitution by nullifying Article XXIII. Passed in 1860, Article XXIII had prohibited any immigrant from voting or holding office unless that person had resided in the United States for two years prior his naturalization. Abolitionist Colonel Robert Gould Shaw led a regiment of Boston blacks into battle, leading the attack on Fort Wagner where Shaw and almost half of his regiment fell. Charles Francis Adams II commanded a black cavalry regiment and Oliver Wendell Holmes, son of the famous doctor and writer of the same name, enlisted weeks before his graduation from Harvard, becoming an officer in the Twentieth Massachusetts regiment which saw much action. After he recovered from being shot through the chest, he was shot through the neck at Antietam in 1862. After once again returning to duty, he caught a ball of grapeshot in the heel, later declaring that war "is horrible and dull." The New England Hospital for Women and Children was founded by Marie Jakrysewka as the bloody Civil War dragged on.

**1864** • The General Court finally established the State Board of Charities to administrate and regulate the growing number of public welfare institutions and deal with the problems of supporting and caring for the sick, disabled, criminal and poor. Dr. Samuel Gridley Howe, still head of the Perkins Institute, was named president of the board. Howe believed in enlisting "the greatest number of individuals and families in the care and treatment of the dependent," using public institutions "only in the last resort." His words and intentions were twisted by legislators around the country to keep such budgets small. Meanwhile, at Tremont Temple in Boston, the first Baptist Social Union of the United States was founded by, and composed completely of laymen. In November, the state once again cast all of its electoral votes for Lincoln and the Republicans.

**1865** • The General Court passed laws prohibiting discrimination against any race in public places and the employment of children under ten in factories. The state police finally got their start in the creation of a Constable of the Commonwealth who was granted deputies to aid him in the "suppression of liquor shops, gambling places and houses of ill-fame." As many town governments grew inefficient, lax and corrupt, state interference increased. By now the state had 14 city governments. The Worcester Polytechnic Institute was founded and chartered this year in Worcester.

**1866** • As the country recovered from its bitter struggle, Massachusetts Institute of Technology introduced the first course in architecture offered at an American college and Boston welcomed the first American branch of the Young Women's Christian Association. Boston machinist Ira Steward developed his theory that an eight-hour work day would solve all problems between capital and labor, forming his "Grand Eight-Hour League of Massachusetts" which was copied by many other states. Haverhill native John Greenleaf Whittier published what became his best-known poem, "Snowbound".

**JANUARY 1866** • Unionist Republican Alexander H. Bullock took office as governor to serve every year until 1869. Massachusetts would remain firmly Republican for some time, despite the growing number of Irish Democrats.

**1867** • A report to the legislature once again addressed the problem of child labor, recommending restrictions and improved working conditions. The Thirteenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution had abolished slavery and now the Fourteenth Amendment, ratified by the General Court, guaranteed citizenship to native blacks. Boston saw the establishment of both the Boston Conservatory of Music and the New England Conservatory of Music, both of which still train from 450 to 550 students a year. In Swampscott, an outpost of Saugus (which became Lynn), Mary Baker Eddy was already demonstrating the healing abilities that came, she believed, from "the infinite Mind," the one God. She began to explain to her first followers that everything is "infinite Mind," matter is unreal and man as a race is spiritual, that healing emanates from advancements in spirituality, that evil is unreal and that Jesus, the "Way-shower," proved the superiority of "Mind" over the flesh. Also in Lynn, the center of the nation's boot and shoemaking industry, the introduction of

the sewing machine in 1848, and the ensuing mechanization of what was formerly a cottage industry, led to the largest strike to date in America, closing all shoe factories for seven weeks.

**NOVEMBER 1868** • George Frisbie Hoar was elected to Congress from Massachusetts as a radical who opposed slavery and its extension. He would work in Washington for a complete reconstruction of government and society in the South, including black civil rights. From a Concord family of Unitarians, Hoar had been active in the Free-Soil party and helped to form Massachusetts' Republican party in 1855. A Harvard graduate, he settled his family at Worcester. In the presidential election, Massachusetts went solidly Republican for General Grant.

**JANUARY 1869** • Another Republican, William Claflin, manned the governor's office, serving every year until 1872. The state organized the country's first State Bureau of Labor Statistics and created a Railroad Commission, naming Charles Francis Adams II as its commissioner. It also established America's first State Board of Health and, though the board originally had no compulsory powers, its authority would be steadily increased over the remainder of the century.

**MARCH 1869** • Congressman Ebenezer R. Hoar, elder brother of George Frisbie, was appointed U.S. attorney-general by President Grant, who also appointed Groton resident and former Democratic Governor George S. Boutwell as secretary of the Treasury. Boutwell had served as governor from 1851 to 1853, then had helped organize the Republican party. In Massachusetts, the General Court ratified the Fifteenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution giving blacks the right to vote.

**SUMMER-FALL 1869** • The first summer university course was offered at Harvard by Dean Shaler. Consisting of lectures on geology, the course was noncredit and taken for pure recreation. The year would also mark the ascendency of a revolutionary reformer to Harvard's presidency. Former student Charles Wilson Eliot, professor of chemistry at Massachusetts Institute of Technology, returned from two years of studying European educational systems and accepted election to the helm of Harvard. He began immediately to develop the elective system of undergraduate courses as a solution to the controversy over classical versus practical education. Meanwhile, Lucy Stone aided in forming the American Woman Suffrage Association. In Boston, a new breed of dog called the Boston Terrier was recognized as the first purebred dog developed in America. In Bristol County, an era ended as the last real whaler sailed from New Bedford. In the *North American Review,* Henry Adams, brother to Charles Francis Adams II and Brooks Adams, spoke out against the spoils system and called for civil service reform.

**1870** • The state was now populated with 1,457,351 residents according to the census. The General Court created a corporation commission and the Massachusetts Woman's Suffrage Association elected Julia Ward Howe as its president. Harvard President Eliot instituted the first comprehensive graduate program of studies at the school while Yale did the same. At Wellesley, an academic institution was founded and chartered for women and called Wellesley College. John Boyle O'Reilly secured a job as reporter for the *Boston Pilot* after being shipped to Australia as a convict from Ireland and escaping on a Nantucket whaler in 1869. The paper, founded in 1838, was the oldest and most popular Catholic paper in Boston. A poet, O'Reilly would become editor in 1876. Though he had friends and sponsors among the literary elite of Boston and Cambridge and his verse was used as part of the rededication ceremony of Plymouth Rock, O'Reilly and all Irish Catholics would remain barred from the high-culture preserve of the wealthy Yankee protestants.

**JUNE-JULY 1870** • When the shoemakers struck at North Adams, the *Boston Transcript* reported that Chinese laborers were transported to the town. Native laborers met in Boston to protest the introduction "into the manufactories of this state coolie labor from China in order to cheapen, and, if possible, degrade the intelligent, educated, loyal labor of Massachusetts."

**NOVEMBER 1870** • Wendell Phillips joined the Labor Reform Party and ran as their candidate for governor, losing to Republican incumbent Claflin.

**1871** • Smith College for women was charted at Northampton but classes did not begin until 1875. Worcester saw the founding of Worcester State College. At Boston, Henry Adams was the editor of *The North American Review* and had begun the previous year to teach courses in medieval history at Harvard. Adams would inspire scholars there until 1877.

**SEPTEMBER 4, 1871** • The Labor Reform Convention met at Worcester where Wendell Phillips drew up a platform demanding a ten-hour day "as a first step," and an eight-hour day for all those hired thereafter by the factories, equal pay for women and an end to the importation of coolie labor.

**JANUARY 1872** • The Republicans had won again with William B. Washburn who took office as governor to serve until his resignation on May 1, 1874. The year would also see the founding of the *Boston Globe* newspaper by Maturin Ballou. When the *Globe* was about to go under in 1877, it would be taken over by General Charles H. Taylor who slashed the price to two cents and joined the Democratic party. Circulation would then jump within a few years from 8,000 to 150,000. During the year, Dr. Susan Dimock held a nurse's training school at New England Hospital for Women and Children, and West Dennis native Luther C. Crowell designed the first, square-bottomed paper bag and the machinery to manufacture the new marvel.

**NOVEMBER 9, 1872** • One year and a month following the terrible Chicago fire, a fire started in Boston that burned for three days, killed 13 people (300 died in Chicago) and destroyed $75 million in property. The Old South Church barely escaped the flames which stopped at the opposite corner of Milk and Washington Streets. In Geneva, both Charles Francis Adams Sr. and Caleb Cushing had served during the year on the arbitration team that settled the *Alabama* privateer claims against Great Britain stemming from the Civil War. Now Charles Francis Adams vied for the presidential nomination from the Liberal Republican party but lost out to Horace Greeley. Massachusetts again cast all 13 electoral votes for Grant and the Republicans.

**1873** • William A. Richardson of Massachusetts was appointed secretary of the interior by President Grant and the Massachusetts College of Art was established in Boston. In the Bershires, between North Adams and Florida, 24 years of work culminated in the opening (November 27) of the 4.7-mile Hoosac Tunnel which was the second longest tunnel in the world at that time. Almost 200 lives were lost in construction of the project which was designed for the railroads

and which employed the first practical use of nitroglycerin.

**MAY 1, 1874** • Republican Thomas Talbot stepped up to act as governor upon the resignation of Washburn, serving until the next January. Harvard's commencement included Henry Cabot Lodge, grandson of George Cabot, who had earned his law degree. Lodge had also taken Henry Adams' courses on medieval institutions.

**DECEMBER 12, 1874** • Harvard President Charles W. Eliot argued for a tax-exempt status for educational institutions.

**1875** • The Democrats had ousted the Republicans temporarily in the November 1874 elections, putting William Gaston into the State House as governor. The year saw the repeal of the prohibition law while the police system was allowed to assume the form of a state detective force. With only 15 men, the force would inspect nearly all of the large manufacturing firms in the state which totaled close to 1,300. The men examined steam boilers, fire extinguishing equipment and other safety devices as well as noted the observance of child labor laws. The force made over 500 arrests, condemned some 35,000 gallons of liquor and recovered a large amount of stolen property. There were now 19 cities in the state which together accounted for over 50 percent of the population. In Lynn, the Panic of 1873 caused financial losses that drove Lydia Estes Pinkham to her kitchen to mix and peddle her own home remedy for "Female Complaints or Disorders" in order to support her children. Her Vegetable Compound would be taken religiously by women everywhere as its fame spread rapidly around the world. The Lydia E. Pinkham Medicine Company on Western Avenue in Lynn still manufactures the remedy. A number of devoted consumers were lost, though, when the 1906 Pure Food and Drug Act required certain ingredient labeling. Members of the Women's Christian Temperence Union and the Anti-Saloon Leagues were horrified to see that the fine print on the new label revealed contents of almost 30 percent alcohol by volume. In Boston, the first American Christmas card was printed by Louis Prang.

**JANUARY 1876** • The Centennial year dawned on a Massachusetts that, for the first time in history, had a Democratic representative in the U.S. Congress. The Republicans had regained the governor's office, though, with Alexander H. Rice who took up his duties and served the state until 1879. The year would see the Old South Church, which was being used as a post office, saved at auction by Mrs. Mary Hemenway and other ladies with civic and historic sentiments.

**NOVEMBER 1876** • Charles Francis Adams Sr. ran for governor as a reform Democrat supported by Patrick Andrew Collins, who had served in the state's General Court as a representative. Adams was defeated by the Republican incumbent, Rice. On the 23rd of the month, delegates from Yale, Harvard, Rutgers, Columbia and Princeton were invited by Princeton to meet at Massasoit House in Springfield to discuss rules for football games. The year also saw the successful demonstration of the telephone in Boston by Alexander Graham Bell. In the presidential election, the state cast almost 58 percent of its popular vote for Republican Rutherford B. Hayes.

**MARCH 12, 1877** • President Hayes appointed Charles Devens, Civil War general from Massachusetts, as the nation's attorney-general. The general's name would later be honored with the naming of Fort Devens, a U.S. Army post in Ayer in Middlesex County. During the year, the first telephone communication between American cities would be established between Salem and Boston as well as between Chicago and Milwaukee. Republican George Frisbie Hoar would be elected to fill the U.S. Senate seat formerly occupied by Charles Sumner, the abolitionist. An advocate himself of black civil rights, Hoar came to the Senate as the reformist era of Republican politics drew to a close. He would serve in the Senate until his death on September 30, 1904.

**1878** • Bands of tramps infested the state, prompting the General Court to grant the new detective force the duty of enforcing the vagrancy laws.

**1879** • Republican Thomas Talbot returned to the governor's chair in January to serve for one year. In Boston, the year would see the organization of the Archaeological Institute of America with Charles Eliot Norton as its first president. The first paper mill west of the Connecticut River, Crane & Company in Dalton, began manufacturing the stock on which U.S. currency is printed. Difficult to counterfeit, the paper is capable of being folded 4,000 times in any one place. Since Zenas Crane founded his mill on the Housatonic River in 1846, five generations of Cranes have been the sole suppliers of U.S. money paper. Radcliffe College would be organized at Cambridge as an adjunct to Harvard for the education of women, and Mary Baker Eddy would lead 15 followers in voting to found a church based on her Christian Science teachings. Northfield native Dwight L. Moody founded Northfield Seminary, now Northfield School for girls, and two years later, Mt. Hermon School for Boys. Uneducated, but financially successful, Moody had been converted in 1855 and became one of America's most famous Christian evangelists.

**NOVEMBER 1879** • Having already established himself as a prolific author of popular American history, Henry Cabot Lodge ran for a seat in the General Court from Nahant and won.

**1880** • John Davis Long became the Republican governor, serving until 1883 while the Irish gained enough power in the Democratic party to possess a decisive veto in party councils. Emerson College was founded and chartered at Boston and a public art museum opened at Copley Square. The census would total the state's residents at 1,783,085.

**DECEMBER 15, 1880** • The suits filed by Washburn and Moen Manufacturing Company of Worcester to protect its barbed wire patents resulted in a landmark decision, favorable to the company, which defined the nature of a patentable invention.

**1881** • Horace Gray of the state's Supreme Court, and founder of the law firm Ropes & Gray, was named to serve on the U.S. Supreme Court. Oliver Wendell Holmes published his treatise on *Common Law* and Mrs. Helen Hunt Jackson of Amherst published *A Century of Dishonor,* the time's most scathing indictment of the U.S. government's treatment of the American Indians. She would also write *Ramona* and other popular novels. Former Union soldier Major Henry Lee Higginson, a native New Yorker, established the Boston Symphony, supporting it financially until 1918.

**OCTOBER 22, 1881** • The first concert of the Boston Symphony was held in Boston Music Hall with Sir George Henschel the conductor. German music and influence would be favored until the hysteria of World War I.

**NOVEMBER 1881** • Lawrence in Essex County became the state's first major city to elect an Irish Catholic mayor.

Undertaker John Breen had been a volunteer fireman and a city councilman in the city which was now 20 percent Irish-born. Breen served for three years and, through patronage, opened public jobs to his fellow Irishmen.

**1882** • Oliver Wendell Holmes was named to the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts, the county medical examiner system was established, and Radcliffe College received its charter, being incorporated as The Society for the Collegiate Instruction of Women. Atlantic Union College was founded at South Lancaster and Patrick Collins was elected to the U.S. Congress as a reform Democrat, serving for three terms. Cambridge recorded the death of Henry Wadsworth Longfellow the same year that Concord mourned the passing of Ralph Waldo Emerson.

**JANUARY 1883** • Benjamin F. Butler of Lowell became only the second Democrat to hold the governor's office since the Republican ascendency in 1858. Butler had begun his career by supporting labor and the Irish Catholics in General Court. He had espoused the Union cause during the Civil War, served as a radical Republican with Hoar in Congress, championed the inflationary Greenback party, and then returned to the Democrats. His politics and antics infuriated the upper-class Republicans. Meanwhile in Worcester, the year would witness the design of America's first continuous steel rolling mill by Charles Morgan and the establishment of Morgan Construction Company which would make mills for every steel-producing country in the world. Mary Baker Eddy founded the *Christian Science Journal.*

**NOVEMBER 1883** • Henry Cabot Lodge managed the campaign for governor of Republican Congressman George D. Robinson against Democratic incumbent Butler whom the Republicans so desperately wished to defeat. Although a tough victory by a narrow margin, Lodge's accomplishment greatly bolstered his reputation.

**JANUARY 1884** • Governor Butler left the State House alone through the middle doors, walking down the front steps, establishing the tradition of the "Long Walk." Since then, the middle doors allow only the exit of a departing governor or the entrance of a U.S. president. Robinson took office and served every year until 1887. The *Record* newspaper would be founded this year in Boston and Charles Francis Adams II would become president of the Union Pacific Railroad, serving until 1890.

**JULY 4, 1884** • James Monroe Trotter, son of a Mississippi slave owner and a black slave mother, delivered the Independence Day oration in Hyde Park. Raised a free black in Ohio, Trotter served in Nathaniel Hallowell's black regiment in the Civil War and led the struggle for equal pay for black soldiers. Settling in Boston, he became the city's leading Democrat, became recorder of deed for the District of Columbia, and sent his son William first to Hyde Park High School and then to Harvard.

**NOVEMBER 1884** • Hugh O'Brien was elected the first Irish-born mayor of Boston. As a city alderman he had won enactment of a two-dollar daily minimum wage for city employees. He was brought to Boston in 1832 and trained at the *Courier.* He then established his own commercial paper. In the presidential election, Henry Cabot Lodge held the party line and supported Republican James G. Blaine rather than bolt to join the Mugwumps (reform wing). Former governor of Massachusetts, Butler, was nominated by the Antimonopolists and the Greenbackers while the Republicans paid for his speaking tour, hoping he would take votes from Cleveland. Massachusetts gave over 48 percent of its popular vote and all of its electoral votes to Blaine but Cleveland the Democrat barely squeaked into the White House.

**1885** • By this time, there were 23 city governments that accounted for 60 percent of the population, 32 percent of which was foreign-born. Some municipalities counted more than 40 percent of their residents as born in other lands. American International College and Springfield College would both be established this year at Springfield.

**MARCH 6, 1885** • President Cleveland picked Massachusetts native William Crowninshield Endicott as secretary of war instead of Congressman Patrick Collins of Boston. Endicott was a Mugwump, a fact which, combined with the rejection of Irish Democrat Collins, alienated the Irish.

**JULY 4, 1885** • Boston University-trained lawyer and Irishman Thomas Gargan was chosen to deliver Boston's Independence Day oration, establishing a tradition that lasted for a generation of alternating the honor between the Yankees and the Irish, a symbolic recognition that the city now belonged to both groups.

**JULY 11, 1885** • The first Boston Pops concert was organized by William Gericke and directed by Adolf Neuendorff to keep the symphony musicians in top shape during the summer months.

**1886** • Amherst native Emily Dickinson died, having published only two poems during her lifetime, one with no signature. Henry Cabot Lodge again ran for U.S. congressman from the Bay Sate and finally won. Great Barrington resident William Stanley invented an alternating-current transformer (Edison built a direct-current generator) and demonstrated its commercial feasibility by lighting 26 businesses on Main Street, making Great Barrington in the Berkshires the world's first town lit by alternating current. Compulsory chapel and Harvard's original Latin and Greek requirements were abolished under President Eliot.

**1887** • Republican Oliver Ames took over as governor and was re-elected every year until 1889. The Marine Biological Laboratory was founded at Woods Hole and the first regulation board for a profession was created by the General Court. Labor organizers formed a Massachusetts Federation of Labor which was affiliated with the national organization. In Boston, the General Court consolidated the four remaining street railway companies (horsecars pulled over rails laid in the street) under one management called the West End Street Railway. The legislature also passed the Employers' Liability Act and declared Labor Day a legal holiday. Founded this year by Jonas Gilman Clark in Worcester, Clark University opened in 1889 to become the first titled "graduate school" in New England and the second in the country.

**1888** • Wheelock College was founded and chartered in Boston and William Dean Howells, poet, novelist and editor, moved from Boston to New York City.

**1889** • The West End Street Railway of Boston turned from horsepower to electrically powered streetcars. Demands for suburban housing helped develop a huge system of horsecars and streetcars that stretched from New Hampshire to Rhode Island. The creation of the Metropolitan Sewage Commission in Boston represented the nation's first metropolitan planning. Plymouth Rock was rededicated, the National Cotton Mule

Spinners Union was organized, and Gordon College was established at Wenham. The cotton spinners' union was the first attempt to organize the state's textile workers. The year also marked the passing of Chesterfield native Ebenezer Brown, America's first Methodist missionary and inventor of the detachable collar. In Cambridge, native Maria Louis Baldwin became, at the age of 33, the first black principal in the state's history. Her 40 years at Agassiz Grammar School allowed her to influence many young blacks, including Harvard students.

**1890** • Republican John Q.A. Brackett took over as governor of a population grown to 2,239,947. Pittsfield, in the Berkshires, was now home to Stanley Electrical Manufacturing Company which supplied equipment for the some 1,500 power stations in America now using Stanley's alternating current system. Stanley also invented the two-phase motor. In the U.S. Senate, George F. Hoar supported the Sherman Anti-Trust Act and guided it through to its passage.

**1891** • With William E. Russell, the Democrats won three consecutive years in the State House. In Springfield, Canadian James A. Naismith was teaching physical education instructors at the Young Men's Christian Assocation Training College when he discovered a widespread need for a recreational game to be played indoors during the winter. Assigned by the head of the college to remedy the situation, Naismith took two peach baskets and invented basketball.

**1892** • Charles and Frank Duryea were bicycle designers and toolmakers in Chicopee in Hampden County which would soon become America's manufacturing center for two-wheeled transportation. But the Duryeas were interested in four-wheel transport that moved on its own power. They developed the first gasoline automobile engine and the first gas-driven "buggy" and made experimental runs over Chicopee roads. The Mother Church of Christian Science, the First Church of Christ, Scientist, was established in Boston, which will one day oversee more than 3,200 churches in some 46 countries. P.J. Kennedy, now owner of three saloons, and a wholesale liquor dealer, went from state representative to state senator as an East Boston Democrat.

**APRIL, 1892** • The commission appointed by the General Court to investigate Boston's transportation needs recommended construction of four railway lines and a streetcar tunnel down Tremont Street under the Public Garden and the Common.

**NOVEMBER 1892** • Massachusetts continued to vote Republican and supported incumbent Benjamin Harrison but Cleveland and the Democrats regained the White House.

**MARCH 1893** • Massachusetts native Richard Olney was appointed attorney general by President Cleveland. Olney would break the Pullman strike in Chicago at the request of the Railroad Trust. Within the state, the year would also see the General Court establish the Massachusetts Highway Commission due to the deplorable condition of the state's roads. The first state appropriation of $300,000 was made the following year.

**1894** • The Republicans regained the State House with Governor Frederick T. Greenhalge who took office and served until his death on March 5, 1896. Henry Cabot Lodge was elected to the U.S. Senate from the Massachusetts legislature and would remain there for nearly 32 years. Like his friend Theodore Roosevelt, Lodge was a well-known advocate of overseas expansion and strong application of the Monroe Doctrine. The year would see the opening of North Station by the Boston and Maine Railroad and the founding of Fitchburg, Lowell, and North Adams State Colleges. Senators Hoar and Lodge divided over a number of issues, though both Republicans, as Hoar had strong reformist sentiments which, in some aspects, had grown less popular in Massachusetts. Lodge embraced the Immigration Restriction League formed this year in Boston but Hoar remained true to the Revolutionary ideals of a home for all oppressed. The General Court authorized the incorporation of the Boston Elevated Railway (BERY) and the creation of the Boston Transit Commission, both of which were to carry out the 1892 report of the legislative commission.

**1895** • Attorney General Richard Olney became secretary of state in June in time to protect American interests in Venezuela. Charles Francis Adams II was elected president of the Massachusetts Historical Society, as he was already known as an author of important historical works, and a Vermont native of English Puritan stock named Calvin Coolidge graduated from Amherst College. Lowell Technological Institute was established and, in Chicopee, the Spaulding & Pepper Company was formed to make rubber goods, especially pneumatic tires for bicycles and soon automobile tires. The Duryeas built their own automobile factory here and produced some 2,200 Duryea cars. In Cambridge, a Great Barrington native became the first black to earn a doctorate at Harvard. W.E. Burghardt Du Bois studied philosphy under William James, Josiah Royce and George Santayana and studied history under Albert Bushnell Hart. The same year, William Monroe Trotter, son of Boston's leading black Democrat, James Monroe Trotter, graduated *magna cum laude* from Harvard. Both men were defenders of equal rights and foes of Booker T. Washington's philosophy of accommodation.

**1896** • This year in the Senate, Lodge supported intervention in Cuba and pressed for immigration restriction and the implementation of a national literacy test which passed both houses of Congress easily but was vetoed by President Cleveland. The test had been intended to favor Anglo-Saxons and northwestern Europeans while it would effectively exclude southern and eastern Europeans. Because of Cleveland's veto, immigration continued from all parts of Europe and Asia. In Massachusetts, the state Supreme Court denied workers the right to picket, no matter how peacefully. Justice Oliver Wendell Holmes dissented.

**MARCH 5, 1896** • Republican Roger Wolcott took over as governor upon the death of Greenhalge.

**NOVEMBER 1896** • The Republicans elected Wolcott to the State House where he would serve from 1897 to January 4, 1900. In the presidential election, the state gave almost 70 percent of its popular vote to Republican winner, William McKinley.

**1897** • Former Governor John D. Long was appointed secretary of the Navy by President McKinley. Senator Hoar would stand by McKinley's policy in Cuba over the next few years but would oppose what he considered aggression in the Philippines. Boston became the first American city to have a subway as BERY began to expand and unite mass transportation in the area. New Yorker Philip Hubert reported that steam was beginning to replace water power in New

England's textile mills, that electricity had not as yet appeared as a motive power except in small industries and that record shipments of American cotton goods were going to India and China. For designs, he said, "as yet we have to go to Paris." The first Boston Marathon was run from Hopkinton to the Back Bay. The following year, and until 1969, it would be run every April 19, Patriot's Day.

**1898** • The Spanish-American War involved the Second Massachusetts Infantry which was attached to the Second Cavalry Brigade and fought at San Juan Hill in Cuba. The Sixth Massachusetts Infantry Regiment received permission from the War Department to be transported through Baltimore on the same route as its ill-fated predecessor in 1861. This time the crowd threw flowers. These men saw only occupation duty in Cuba and Puerto Rico. The Ninth Infantry, however, would lose 177 men during 18 days on the front lines. Northeastern University was founded and chartered in Boston while young, college-educated reformers who worked in the South End House and other slum-area settlement houses wrote of their experiencies and observations. In *The City Wilderness: A Settlement Study* published the next year, the writers described the boys' street gangs, each having corners and leaders, which evolved into men's clubs as the boys grew up, fitting right into the political machine and the system of boss rule and ward politics. In November, a hurricane hit the Massachusetts coast which sent the Portland-bound steamer *Portland* down with its crew. It was long remembered by residents as the worst storm they could recall.

**1899** • The United Shoe Machinery Corporation was founded in Beverly and, in Boston, Simmons College was established and South Station opened. A group of Massachusetts Negroes wrote a letter to President McKinley protesting the treatment of Southern blacks who were often the victims of lynch mobs and brutal violence as well as disfranchisement. The group argued that McKinley should pay as much attention to this situation as to the problems in Cuba. Boston-born James Michael Curley, son of Irish Catholic immigrants, won a seat on the Boston common council.

**1900** • At the turn of the 20th century, Massachusetts' population had grown by another half a million to tally 2,805,346. This total now included 850,000 inhabitants of foreign birth, immigrants who were not just Irish and French but Italian and East European. From Harvard philosophers William James and Charles Peirce to the textile workers, machinists and farmers, Massachusetts citizens would develop the pragmatism which would allow them to deal with the pluralistic society that time and events had brought to the state. They would learn to reconcile the founding fathers' idealistic uniformity with their society's realistic diversity. City government reform had become a major issue as many towns sought to develop a modified town system to avoid the problems of city organization. The Boot and Shoe Workers' Union began organizing the shoe trades. Massachusetts ranked fourth in the country in strikes and third in the number of lockouts recorded since 1881. Eastern Nazarene College was founded in Quincy.

**JANUARY 1900** • Dalton native and member of the Crane paper dynasty, Winthrop Murray Crane took office as governor, giving the Republicans control for three years and three elections.

**1901** • The United Textile Workers union was formed to include all textile workers regardless of craft but it progressed slowly, due in part to the number of women and children in the industry. The Dennison Paper Manufacturing Company in Framingham produced America's first gum labels, and in Boston, Patrick Collins, having lost the mayor's race in 1899, won the helm of the city to give Boston another Irish mayor. Charles Francis Adams II became president of the American Historical Association while his brother Brooks published an article called "Reciprocity or the Alternative," discussing suitable trade policies and America's recovery in 1897 from the precarious position of 1896, by advocating adoption of a tariff and reorganization of industry to drive American prices below those of Europe. He also carried on the family tradition by advocating a strong navy.

**1902** • Thrust from vice-president to president by an assassin's bullet, Theodore Roosevelt appointed Massachusetts native William H. Moody as secretary of the Navy. Meanwhile, Roosevelt's old friend, Henry Cabot Lodge, pushed the president to appoint Oliver Wendell Holmes to the Supreme Court upon the death of Horace Gray. This was done only after Roosevelt was assured that Holmes was "sound" on such issues as imperialism, thus bringing the often-dissenting Holmes pragmatism to the Court.

**1903** • Republican Governor John L. Bates took office, serving in the State House until January, 1905. William Monroe Trotter was jailed for disrupting a speech given by Booker T. Washington at the African Methodist Episcopal Zion Church in Boston, initiating a lasting enmity between the two men. W.E.B. Du Bois published his famous *The Souls of Black Folk,* insisting that Negroes wanted and demanded equal economic and social status. Boston Congregational minister Edward Everett Hale became chaplain of the U.S. Senate, serving until his death in 1909.

**JULY 1904** • Secretary of the Navy William H. Moody was now appointed attorney general by President Roosevelt.

**NOVEMBER 1904** • Massachusetts remained loyally Republican, giving almost 58 percent of its popular vote to the victorious incumbent, Theodore Roosevelt. During the year, Boston Democrat James M. Curley was caught impersonating a friend at a civil service examination and briefly imprisoned.

**DECEMBER 1904** • The East Boston tunnel under Boston Harbor opened to become the nation's first underwater mass transit tunnel. The year also saw the establishment of Assumption College in Worcester.

**JANUARY 1905** • The Democrats having triumphed in November, new Governor William L. Douglas took office serving for only one year until January, 1906.

**JULY 1905** • W.E.B. Du Bois called 29 Negro leaders together for a meeting held in the area of Niagara Falls (actually in Buffalo) New York. The Niagara Movement as it came to be called issued a Declaration of Principles calling for equal rights and opportunities for all Americans and pledging to pursue their goal with "Persistent, manly agitation. . . ." Dissatisfied with the leadership and goals of Booker T. Washington, the group declared the event an annual meeting and the movement an on-going cause.

**JANUARY 4, 1906** • November had returned the State House once more to the Republicans and Governor Curtis L. Guild Jr. took office, serving by annual re-election until January, 1909. In Washington, D.C., noted trustbuster William H.

Moody, attorney general and former secretary of the Navy, would soon be appointed to the Supreme Court by President Roosevelt.

**JUNE 10, 1906** • The first building of the Church of Christ, Scientist, was dedicated in Boston. The year would also see the establishment of the Boston Juvenile Court and Suffolk University in the capital city, and the completion of Henry Adams' work *The Education of Henry Adams* which was a study in power and the relationship of society to power. Boston would elect an Irish Catholic mayor and the Irish Catholics would henceforth control the position. The man chosen was none other than John F. (Honey Fitz) Fitzgerald, the grandfather of John F. Kennedy.

**1907** • President Roosevelt appointed George von L. Meyer of Massachusetts to the office of U.S. Postmaster General. Within the state, the General Court ruled that savings banks could conduct life insurance business, and a young lawyer from Northampton, Calvin Coolidge, won election to the legislature.

**1908** • In her 88th year, two years before her death, Mary Baker Eddy founded the now-famous, international daily newspaper, the *Christian Science Monitor.* The paper is still edited and published in Boston. The national edition began in 1911 and the international in 1913. In April, Worcester citizens voted in local prohibition making Worcester the largest dry city in the nation.

**1909** • The Republicans inaugurated Eben S. Draper as the state governor and he served until January, 1911. The presidential election of the preceding November had put Theodore Roosevelt's chosen successor, William H. Taft, in the White House. Massachusetts had supported the Republicans with over 58 percent of its popular vote. Taft would now name Frank J. Hitchcock of Massachusetts as postmaster general and move George von L. Meyer to the office of secretary of the Navy. In Cambridge, Lesley College was founded and A. Lawrence Lowell replaced Charles Eliot as president of Harvard, serving until 1933 and striving to produce students who were "intellectually well rounded."

**1910** • The census would show that Massachusetts had grown to a population of 3,366,416 and the Niagara Movement founded by Du Bois would become officially the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP). Social rebel Amy Lowell saw her first poems published in *Atlantic Monthly* though she would not live to see the Pulitzer Prize that *What's O'Clock* would bring her in 1926. This same year, William James published the famous essay, *The Moral Equivalent of War,* espousing an antimilitarist point of view and predicting the "gradual advent of some sort of a social equilibrium."

**1911** • New Democratic Governor Eugene N. Foss enjoyed the first of his three inaugurations, serving the state until January, 1914. The General Court passed a Workman's Compensation Act and two amendments to the state constitution, allowing the use of voting machines at elections and the other authorizing the legislature to purchase land to widen or relocate highways. The General Court also passed a labor law lowering women's working hours to 54 per week. The manufacturers, including the American Woolen Company in Lawrence, responded by slashing the workers' wages. According to an investigation by the U.S. commissioner of labor, of the situation in Lawrence, "the average amount actually received by the 21,922 employees, during a week late in 1911, in which the mills were running full time, was $8.76." The majority of the workers were still unorganized. The United Textile Workers of 1901 had managed to gain 2,500 members in Lawrence while the Industrial Workers of the World (I.W.W.) formed in 1905 had only recruited a few hundred workers in the city.

**JANUARY 1912** • Nearly all of the unskilled and semiskilled workers walked out of the Lawrence mills and Joseph Ettor of the I.W.W. came to Lawrence to lead the strike with Arture Giovanitti, editor of *Il Proletario.* Strikers picketed in mass on the 15th and the mayor called out the four local militia troops plus four others from other towns. On the 16th, the mills were opened with the protection of local police and the militiamen. The president of American Woolen Company, William M. Wood, refused to meet with a strike committee and by the 19th, the skilled operatives had joined the strike. On the 20th, four sticks of dynamite were found in the strike district, seven strikers were arrested and four more companies of militia brought to the scene. The dynamite had been planted by a leading businessman who was soon tried, convicted and fined $500 while company president Wood was exonerated in court after failing to explain a payment made to the purchaser of the dynamite. On the 29th, a massive demonstration was held that led to the death of a woman striker. Ten more companies of militia and two cavalry troops were requested and the city council turned Lawrence over to the commander of the militia. Ettor and Giovanitti were both arrested and accused of the murder of the striker but were later acquitted. Ettor's imprisonment brought I.W.W. leader William D. "Big Bill" Haywood to Lawrence to lead the strike. Strikers began sending their children on the train to New York City, out of danger, where they were met by cheering crowds. When a third group of children were brought to the station to board the train, 50 policemen and two companies of militia clubbed the parents and dragged both children and parents to jail. The largest picket line ever organized in Massachusetts, comprised of some 20,000 people under the leadership of Haywood and Elizabeth Gurley Flynn, helped win the strike.

**MARCH 12, 1912** • Management, represented by a priest, Father James T. Reilly, gave the workers a one-cent-per-hour wage increase, time-and-a-quarter for overtime and guarantees of no discrimination against union members. This was considered a major victory. The strikers returned over $15,000 of the large sum raised to buy bread for the workers to the attorney general because portions of the sum had been used for other expenses. The sum was expended for "charitable purposes." The song "Bread and Roses" by James Oppenheim and Caroline Kohlsaat would memorialize the workers' struggle.

**MAY 22, 1912** • The General Court ratified the Seventeenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution allowing the direct popular election of senators. The year would also see the passage of the nation's first minimum wage law by the General Court, a strike by the Boston street car operators, and the creation of a state Department of Labor and Industry. Upon his graduation from Harvard, Joseph Patrick Kennedy became a state bank examiner. Born in 1888, he was the first son of P.J. Kennedy and his wife, Mary Hickey.

**AUGUST 2, 1912** • The U.S. Senate approved what became known as the Lodge Corollary to the Monroe Doctrine, a

resolution drawn up by Henry Cabot Lodge that declared America's right and intention to protect the Panama Canal or any other harbor or strategic position in the American continents from any threat to the communications or safety of the United States.

**NOVEMBER 1912** • In the presidential contest, though the state's 18 electoral votes all went for Wilson, Massachusetts split its popular vote four ways with 35.5 percent cast for the victorious Democrat, 29.1 percent for Progressive Theodore Roosevelt, 32 percent for Republican incumbent Taft and 2.6 percent for Socialist Eugene Debs. For the first time in its history, Massachusetts voted Democratic in a presidential election.

**FEBRUARY 14, 1913** • Lodge and others, supported by the Progressives and the American Federation of Labor, once more passed a bill for a literacy test for immigrants through both houses of Congress but were again foiled by a presidential veto, this time from outgoing President Taft.

**MARCH 4, 1913** • The General Court ratified the Sixteenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution, allowing for a federal income tax. The town of Norwood in Norfolk County, having encountered financial embarrassments as early as 1908, issued a warrant for a town meeting to consider the advisability of creating the position of town manager or engineer. Investigations led by two committees resulted in the "Norwood Plan" or the "Town Manager Form" of government.

**JANUARY 1914** • For the first time, a Democrat followed another Democrat in the State House as David I. Walsh was inaugurated governor. A Leominster native and graduate of Holy Cross College and Boston University, Walsh was the first acknowledged, practicing Irish Catholic to gain the state's highest office. (Sullivan in 1807 was of Irish Catholic stock.) The same year, Joseph Kennedy would marry Rose Fitzgerald, the daughter of former Boston mayor John F. (Honey Fitz) Fitzgerald. A graduate of Dorchester High School and a student at Convent of the Sacred Heart, Rose had been voted Boston's prettiest graduate. The first Irishman to break into the Yankee-held State Street banking and finance community, Joseph Kennedy succeeded his father P.J. as president of the Columbia Trust Company, in which his father had long held an interest, and became one of the youngest bank presidents in the country at the age of 25. In the General Court, Calvin Coolidge was elected president of the state senate. Coolidge had also served as chairman of the Republican State Committee and would be elected to three terms as lieutenant governor.

**FEBRUARY 4, 1914** • James M. Curley resigned his seat in the U.S. House, held since 1911, to run for mayor of Boston. Elected, he would serve as mayor until 1918, consolidating all patronage in his own hands and nearly bankrupting the city by spending large sums on promised parks and hospitals.

**JULY 29, 1914** • Cape Cod Canal opened, connecting Cape Cod Bay with Buzzards Bay and allowing ships to avoid the dangerous waters around the Atlantic coast of Cape Cod.

**1915** • At the national level, Lodge and the others concerned about immigration passed another literacy test bill through Congress only to be vetoed by President Wilson. A member of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee, Lodge urged a strong stand against German submarine attacks on neutral shipping as Europe suffered the early skirmishes of what became the First World War. Lodge and Wilson would continually clash over issues until, by 1917 and the United States entrance into the war, the two men were bitter enemies. At the state level, the General Court and the voters approved Amendment XLIV which allowed the Court to levy an income tax. The Court also passed the Optional Charter Law which gave those municipalities wishing a city government four forms to choose from: mayor and council elected at large, mayor and council elected partially by wards and at large, the commission form of city government and the city manager form. With a population approaching 34,000 and not wishing the complexities of a city charter, the town of Brookline developed the limited town meeting form of town government that became known as the Brookline plan. Any citizen could speak but only elected representatives could vote. A number of other towns would pick either the Norwood or the Brookline plan of government. In Cambridge, historian Samuel Eliot Morison joined the faculty of Harvard.

**1916** • President Wilson named Louis D. Brandeis as the first Jewish justice of the Supreme Court. Brandeis was a Kentucky native, but a Harvard graduate and Boston lawyer, who had been Wilson's advisor during the campaign of 1912. A Zionist and a noted liberal, Brandeis was a legal pragmatist and often an ally of Oliver Wendell Holmes when the bench considered questions of individual and corporate rights. Brandeis would serve on the Court for 22 years. Republican Governor Samuel W. McCall of Winchester took office, serving three terms to retire in 1919. Senator Henry Cabot Lodge joined the League to Enforce Peace but only because he envisioned it as a league of victor powers, a permanent alliance of the "good" powers, and not a universal league.

**NOVEMBER 1916** • Now president emeritus of Harvard, Charles W. Eliot published an article advocating the necessity of universal military service to protect the well-being of the nation, as physical isolation was no longer a reality and industrial and commercial interests had completely changed following the Civil War. In the presidential election, Massachusetts gave all 18 electoral votes, but only 50.5 percent of its popular vote, to Republican loser Charles E. Hughes. President Wilson returned to the White House. In Massachusetts, Henry Cabot Lodge defeated John F. Fitzgerald (Rose Kennedy's father) to retain the seat in the U.S. Senate that Lodge had held since 1893. Their two grandsons would compete for the same seat in 1952.

**FEBRUARY 5, 1917** • Lodge, minority leader in the Senate, saw the literacy test finally pass. This time, Congress overrode President Wilson's veto, succumbing to war-generated fear and the demands of those who did not want to compete with cheap, immigrant labor.

**MAY 29, 1917** • Joseph Kennedy had become assistant general manager of Quincy's Fore River Shipyards where new ships were built by the Bethlehem Steel Company. On this day, Rose gave birth in Brookline to their second child, John Fitzgerald Kennedy.

**1918** • Orleans, in Barnstable County on Cape Cod Canal, was wide-eyed over the bombardment of a tug and three coal barges off its shores by a German submarine. As a result, U.S. air forces were ordered to the Cape. Massachusetts sent some 200,000 men to fight the "war to end all wars," only 83,220 of whom were draftees. Of the total, the state would lose over 5,200 to combat or disease. The 26th Division, called the Yankee Division, was mostly New Englanders and was commanded by Major General Clarence Edwards, a Bay State

resident. The division would suffer 25 percent casualties at Chateau-Thierry in France. The 401st Telegraph Battalion was organized by New England Telephone and Telegraph and the state's own Dr. Harvey Cushing, a brain surgeon, commanded a 2,000-bed base hospital. More than 100,000 men were trained at Camp Devens and the shipyards at Quincy and Boston were kept busy as were the armory and weapons plants at Springfield. The armory manufactured several hundred thousand M1903 Springfield rifles and Smith & Wesson produced more than 150,000 M1917 caliber .45 revolvers. The U.S. Cartridge Company plant at Lowell supplied several hundred million rounds of caliber .30 cartridges. In a report to the Smithsonian Institute, Professor Robert H. Goddard of Clark University in Worcester predicted that man might reach the moon via rocket by the year 2000. Most newspapers and their readers considered him insane. In the General Court, Massachusetts' hallowed annual elections went the way of the already forsaken spring elections. Voters approved constitutional amendment Article LXIV which inaugurated, beginning in 1920, biennial elections for state officers, councillors, senators and representatives.

**JANUARY 2, 1919** • Republican Calvin Coolidge brought his Yankee Protestant practicality and business sense to the State House to serve as governor for two eventful years. Henry Cabot Lodge became U.S. Senate majority leader, holding that position until his death in 1924, and Massachusetts Republican Congressman Frederick H. Gillett became Speaker of the House, serving until 1925. Lodge's fellow senator was now former governor David Walsh, Massachusetts' first Democratic and first Irish Catholic Senator. Walsh would serve in the U.S. Senate from 1919-1925 and 1926-1947.

**JANUARY 16, 1919** • The Eighteenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution went into effect and the era of Prohibition began in the same year that Joseph Kennedy entered the investment business in Boston.

**JUNE 25, 1919** • The General Court ratified the Nineteenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution, giving women the right to vote. The amendment went into effect in August of the following year.

**AUGUST, 1919** • The Boston Social Club was an organization of the Boston police and boasted 1,290 members. Unsatisfied with their wages, uncompensated overtime and unsanitary police stations, the officers who were members of the club decided to affiliate the club with the American Federation of Labor. The move was forbidden by Police Commissioner Edwin U. Curtis but the club ignored the order and was chartered as the Policeman's Union with the backing of the 80,000-member Boston Central Labor Union. Eight policemen were singled out for punishment by the commissioner, prompting the new union to call a strike.

**SEPTEMBER 9, 1919** • Only 30 of the required 420 patrolmen reported for evening roll call. A citizen's committee that had been appointed as an arbitrating body backed the commissioner in his stand against the unionization of the force but supported the policemen in their demands for improvement of their wage and working conditions. Of a total police force 1,544 strong, 1,117 were now on strike and 20 pickets were placed at each station. While Boston's Mayor Peters called on the citizens for cooperation, Harvard President A. Lawrence Lowell called upon his student body "to prepare themselves for such services as the governor may call upon them to render." Coach Fisher of the Harvard gridiron was quoted in the press as saying, "To hell with football if men are needed." Even the Physics Department's Professor Hall released a statement to the press calling students back early from their vacations because "there is sport and diversion for you right here in Boston." Meanwhile, Governor Coolidge called out 100 state policemen and additional national guard troops.

**SEPTEMBER 11, 1919** • Reminiscent of the long-ago Boston Massacre, jeering crowds had gathered in support of the striking policemen but the troops they faced, all men of their own state and neighborhoods, did not have the discipline and patience of a British soldier. In South Boston, guardsmen had opened fire with rifles and a machine gun, killing two boys and wounding several bystanders. In Scollay Square, cavalry had charged a crowd, killing a man and a woman. Metropolitan Park state policemen had left their strike duty and joined their compatriots. Sympathy was quickly rising for a general supportive strike, and hoodlums were pouring into Boston from the surrounding area. By this third day, seven people were dead and 60 wounded. A.F. of L. President Samuel Gompers ordered the strikers back to work but the policemen were fired and replaced. When Gompers appealed to Coolidge to reinstate the strikers and remove Commissioner Curtis for requesting troops to break the strike, Coolidge replied that "There is no right to strike against the public safety by anybody, anywhere, any time." This statement and Coolidge's firm stand won him national attention as over 3,500 strikes occurred that year across the country. This one would have its consequences the following year.

**NOVEMBER 10, 1919** • U.S. Supreme Court Justices Louis Brandeis and Oliver Wendell Holmes joined in dissenting in favor of the right of freedom of speech in the case *Abrams Et Al. vs. United States.* The case grew out of the Espionage Act of 1917, the circulation in America of Communist literature related to the Russian Revolution, and the general "Red Scare" that took hold of the country.

**1920** • One year into Prohibition, Massachusetts would tally 3,852,356 residents, according to this year's census. By now, more than two-thirds of the state's population were either foreign-born or had foreign-born parents. After 1890, the floods of immigrants following the Irish included a large number of Italians and Poles with groups of Portuguese, Russians, Armenians and others from Southern and Eastern Europe. The Irish now controlled Boston and much of the state and they initially turned as cold a shoulder to the Italians and Poles as the Yankees had turned to them. In the house that had been Paul Revere's, an enterprising Italian had earlier established an Italian grocery. Today, Revere's house remains as the oldest wooden building in Boston. In Medford, the state's first radio station, WGI, began broadcasting to those who could afford a radio. Massachusetts became the first state to set up a statewide system of small claims courts handling cases involving less than a set amount. (The Commonwealth would also be the first to provide public defenders to anyone in the state unable to pay for a lawyer.) In his annual report, Harvard President A. Lawrence Lowell addressed the problem of wealthy businessmen on boards of trustees controlling or influencing the traditional freedom of the university scholar. The decade would also see an informal but deeply resented quota placed on Jewish students at Harvard.

**MARCH 19, 1920** • President Wilson's unwillingness to

compromise the League of Nations to meet Lodge's reservations resulted in the Treaty of Versailles' second and final failure to win a two-thirds majority in the Senate.

**APRIL 15, 1920** • At a shoe factory in South Braintree, a paymaster and a guard were murdered during a $13,000 payroll robbery. Another robbery had occurred in Bridgewater. Two naturalized Italian immigrants who had come to the state in 1908, Nicola Sacco and Bartolomeo Vanzetti, were arrested three weeks later, both carrying loaded pistols. The men were acknowledged atheists, were "pacifists" and so had avoided the draft in World War I, and were active in an Italian anarchist group that was opposed to the idea of organized government. They were all these things in a state that was now largely Irish Catholic, still stubbornly Yankee Protestant, largely opposed to additional immigration (especially from Southern and Eastern Europe) and firmly grounded in the ideas of property and government. Sacco lived with his wife and child in South Stoughton and was an edger in Kelley's shoe factory. Vanzetti peddled fish door to door in Plymouth. He was convicted on July 1 of the Bridgewater robbery and both remained in prison awaiting trial for the Braintree crime.

**JUNE 8, 1920** • The Republican National Convention opened in Chicago where temporary chairman Henry Cabot Lodge formally denounced Wilsons' League of Nations, then repeated his message when he took the gavel as permanent chairman. Former senator and governor Winthrop Murray Crane of the Dalton paper dynasty led the internationalist faction of the party in fighting for an endorsement of the League with reservations, but was thwarted by the irreconcilables. Lodge was satisfied to accept an ambiguous compromise plank that pacified both sides. Tired of the senators who regularly controlled the choice of nominees, a delegate named Wallace McCamant nominated Calvin Coolidge from the floor for vice-president and the convention jumped to select him 674.5 to 146.

**NOVEMBER 1920** • Massachusetts cast almost 70 percent of its popular vote for Republicans Warren Harding and his running mate Calvin Coolidge. The women turned out for their first presidential and state elections, raising the state voting total from 521,882 in 1916 to 993,716 in 1920. Republican Channing H. Cox became the first governor to be elected to a two-year term.

**1921** • Former senator from Massachusetts, John W. Weeks, was appointed secretary of war by President Harding. In the General Court in Boston, Sylvia Donaldson and Susan Walker Fitzgerald became the first women to serve in the state House of Representatives. In Brookline where four-year-old John Kennedy played, Hebrew College was founded and chartered. The advent of the automobile now increased the availability of many doctors. Dr. Maurice H. Richardson of Boston, the nation's foremost specialist in appendectomies, kept two chauffeured limousines, manned day and night, to travel as far as 100 miles to perform an emergency operation, taking a nurse, an assistant and his instruments. In a poor neighborhood, he might drive home with only a barrel of apples to show for his efforts. The boom in manufacturing and even farming in Massachusetts brought by World War I now slid into a post-war recession for much of the state. In a trial that lasted six weeks, Sacco and Vanzetti were both convicted of the murders and robbery at Braintree and then spent six years in prison, through torturous litigation and a final appeal to the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court. Meanwhile, the case gained national prominence.

**1922** • The first motorbus route was established in Boston and vice-president Coolidge began to build his "Silent Cal" image, seemingly relishing the anonymity of his position. In *The Delineator,* he had written a series of articles in which he accused the colleges and universities of being hotbeds of sedition. He had also expressed the simple philosophy that would carry him through the White House in coming years that "This is a business country and its wants a business government." Irishman James Curley once again gained the mayor's office in Boston, remaining until 1926.

**AUGUST 3, 1923** • At the remote Vermont farm of Coolidge's father, Colonel John Coolidge, the vice-president received the news shortly after midnight of Harding's death by embolism in San Francisco. Two hours later, by the light of a kerosene lamp, Coolidge's father, who was a notary public and local magistrate, swore his son in as president of the nation. Although a Northampton resident, Amherst graduate and Massachusetts politician, Coolidge was seen as the simple Vermont farm boy who came to the White House in the tradition of Abraham Lincoln. Despite his often dour image, Coolidge would be one of the most popular presidents while holding office.

**APRIL 19, 1924** • Clarence DeMarr won his third consecutive Boston Marathon, the first person to accomplish such a feat.

**SEPTEMBER 1924** • A proposed amendment to the U.S. Constitution, which would have made illegal the hiring of any person under the age of 18, was vigorously opposed by many in Massachusetts, including Mrs. Margaret C. Robinson, president of the Massachusetts Public Interests League, and Felix Rackemann, a leading attorney of Boston who was also "known for his humanitarian activities." These facts were mentioned in the *Manufacturers Record* in an article denouncing the possible amendment as dangerous to the young people who would become "idlers in brain and body." The article also noted that the one state which had fought so long to remove child laborers from the factories was now fighting such an amendment (though the National League of Women Voters lobbied in its behalf). The article accused Socialists, Communists and Bolsheviks of fathering the amendment to nationalize the children of the land. The amendment was never ratified. The National Origins Act was passed in Congress, restricting immigrants through a quota system which was structured to discriminate particularly against the countries of Southern and Eastern Europe. In Massachusetts, the General Court and the voters would approve, this same year, Article LXIX which amended the state constitution to protect women's right to hold political office in the state.

**NOVEMBER 1924** • Senator Henry Cabot Lodge died in Nahant several months following the graduation from Harvard of his grandson, Henry Cabot Lodge, who went on to become a newspaperman first for the *Boston Evening Transcript* and later for the *New York Herald Tribune.* Republican William Morgan Butler was appointed temporarily by Governor Cox to replace Lodge in the Senate. In the presidential race, Massachusetts gave 62.3 percent of its popular vote to incumbent and former governor Calvin Coolidge. This would be the last presidential election for some years in which the state would lean Republican.

**1925** • Republican Alvin T. H. Fuller took office as governor to serve the first of two, two-year terms. As president, Coolidge would continue the thrifty, low-tax, high-tariff, business-oriented policies that reflected his Yankee Puritan heritage. He would oversee the reduction of both income and corporate taxes and the retirement of a major part of the national debt as the country experienced general prosperity and the somewhat reckless abandon of the "Roaring Twenties." Individual wages would rise and America would become addicted to the installment plan. Divorces increased considerably across the nation, though the state rate remained below the national average. Republican Frederick Huntington Gillett, speaker of the U.S. House from 1919 to 1925, defeated and replaced David Walsh in the U.S. Senate.

**1926** • As the first airmail service began between New York and Boston, Joseph Kennedy entered the motion picture industry as president and chairman of the board of Film Booking Offices of America. Barred from the country club in Yankee-dominated Cohasset, Kennedy created his own family resort at Hyannis Port on Cape Cod. Article LXX amended the state constitution to allow the General Court to establish limited town government in towns of 6,000 or more inhabitants. The Beverly shoe-machine manufacturing plant was the largest in the world.

**MARCH 16, 1926** • Dr. Robert H. Goddard of Clark University launched the first liquid-propelled rocket on his aunt's farm in Auburn. Burning gasoline and liquid oxygen, the rocket stayed up for 2.5 seconds and traveled 84 feet from the launch site. Goddard would become the "Father of Rocketry" and founder of the modern science of liquid-fuel rocketry, but would attract little attention until World War II.

**MAY 1926** • Dr. George Richards Minot and Dr. William P. Murphy presented a paper to the Association of American Physicians entitled "The Treatment of Pernicious Anemia by a Special Diet," an effort which would win them a Nobel Prize for medicine in 1934. Minot was a Boston native and Harvard graduate and had studied the properties of blood at Massachusetts General Hospital. This same year he was appointed professor of medicine at Harvard Medical School and director of the Thorndike Memorial Laboratory. A diabetic, he was also one of the first to be treated with insulin following its discovery in 1922.

**NOVEMBER 1926** • David Walsh, defeated by Republican Gillett in 1925, was elected to fill the U.S. Senate post left by Henry Cabot Lodge, remaining in office until defeated by Lodge's grandson of the same name in 1947.

**1927** • Already a multimillionaire in the movie industry, Joseph Kennedy moved his family to New York, returning to his home state only for summers at the Cape. Kennedy sought an environment that would accept an Irish Catholic in the "best" circles. Meanwhile, a Catholic women's school, Regis College, was established and chartered at Weston.

**AUGUST 23, 1927** • Though Sacco and Vanzetti's trial was reexamined this year, the verdict was sustained. The committee had been headed by Harvard president Abbott Lawrence Lowell, appointed by Governor Fuller. Despite the defendants' pleas of innocence, and numerous protests and serious questions raised by the investigation of Harvard law professor Felix Frankfurter, the two men were executed.

**1928** • In Chicopee, the College of Our Lady of the Elms was founded, while in Wellesley Hills, economist Roger Babson predicted an unusually good business year for 1929. Babson was a Gloucester native and MIT graduate with his own financial firm and a regular column in a New York newspaper. In 1919, he had founded Babson Institute in Wellesley, one of the first practical business colleges of its kind. As the "Roaring Twenties" drew to a close, another era dawned at MIT in Cambridge. Dr. Vannevar Bush developed a non-electronic, "differential analyzer," the world's first computer.

**APRIL 9, 1928** • Cheap labor in the South had created rival textile mills, often owned by Northerners, that hurt many of the established plants in Massachusetts. In New Bedford, owners cut the textile workers' wages by ten percent and 27,000 workers struck for six months, gaining nationwide press and sympathy. The settlement gave workers' back five percent as soon as conditions warranted with a guarantee of 30 days notice of any future reductions while the workers agreed to take part in an efficiency study.

**NOVEMBER 1928** • Calvin Coolidge's statement "I do not choose to run" had led to the nomination of Republican Herbert Hoover for president. Massachusetts held a close contest but squeezed out 50.2 percent of its popular vote for the losing Democratic candidate, Irish Catholic Alfred Smith. Coolidge would return to Northampton in 1929 where he wrote, conducted his business interests and died at the age of 60 in 1933.

**DECEMBER 11, 1928** • President Coolidge appointed Massachusetts politician William F. Whiting as secretary of commerce. He had been the acting secretary since August.

**JANUARY 3, 1929** • Republican Frank G. Allen took office for his one term as governor. Allen was the last of a string of Republican governors in Massachusetts; ten of the next 16 governors would be Democratic.

**March 5, 1929** • By appointment of President Hoover, an Adams descendant named Charles F. Adams became secretary of the Navy, a salute to Massachusetts tradition.

**SEPTEMBER 5, 1929** • Roger Babson, an economist and stock statistician, announced to the world from Wellesley Hills that "There is a crash coming, and it may be a terrific one," with "a decline of from 60 to 80 points in the Dow Jones barometer." *Barron's Weekly* called him a "scaremonger."

**OCTOBER 1929** • The card house of Wall Street, built on overspeculation, overproduction and the overambitious creation of new businesses, fell in a disastrous heap, signalling the depression that many in the New England textile mills had already begun to experience. Massachusetts would set up and conduct its own unemployment-relief program until the federal government took over with nationwide programs under the New Deal. Joseph Kennedy was now chairman of the board of Keith, Albee Orpheum Theaters Corporation and became chairman of the board of Pathe Exchange, Inc. In New York, he continued to build the family fortune (Kennedy was one of those who sold his stocks in time), coming to the attention of William Randolph Hearst through an incident involving John D. Hertz's Yellow Cab Company. Prior to the crash, unethical traders planned "bear raids" on stocks that were doing well. Hertz, the soon-to-be rent-a-car tycoon, appealed to *Boston American* editor Walter Howey concerning a bear raid on Yellow Cab. Howey contacted Kennedy, who installed special telephones and a ticker tape in a hotel suite, borrowed $5 million, and placed both buy

and sell orders from locations all over the country, thereby totally confusing the raiders and stabilizing the stock. In 1929, Massachusetts felt not only the tremors of the economic crash but the shaking of the very ground as an earthquake rocked the state. It also quivered from the bitter struggle between workers and bosses in the shoe factories of Lynn, Boston, Chelsea, and Salem. The workers struck for six months demanding recognition of their union, the United Shoe Workers of America, as opposed to the A.F. of L. affiliate, the Boot and Shoe Workers' Union. Strike breakers were shipped in but the strike was broken by a court injunction. The strike drove many plants from the state and into non-union areas.

**1930** • The area of the old Massachusetts Bay Colony was now a ripe 300 years old and the state boasted a population of 4,249,614. Curley was again Boston's mayor, a conductor named Arthur Fiedler took over the Boston Pops, and the economy continued to slide. The voters approved a constitutional amendment, Article LXXI, which limited the state House to 240 members and the state Senate to 40 members.

**1931** • Victorious Democratic gubernatorial candidate Joseph B. Ely took office in the State House, serving two terms until January, 1935. Democrat Marcus A. Coolidge was elected to the U.S. Senate, taking the seat formerly occupied by F.H. Gillett. For the first time in history, Massachusetts had two Democrats in the Senate, a situation which would last until 1937, while only 44 percent of the state's workers were employed full time.

**NOVEMBER 1932** • In the state elections, the young newspaperman Henry Cabot Lodge gained a seat in the Massachusetts House of Representatives. Now married to Emily Sears of Beverly, he was the descendant of six U.S. senators and an important player in the long-standing rivalry between the Lodges and the Fitzgeralds/Kennedys. At the Democratic convention that year, Mayor Curley, unable to win a seat as a delegate, somehow showed up as a delegate from Puerto Rico, supporting New York's Governor Roosevelt. Joseph Kennedy had also picked Franklin D. Roosevelt as the man he thought should be in the White House and proceeded to raise money for his support. In order to get Roosevelt nominated, he called in the debt owed him by William Randolph Hearst as a result of the Yellow Cab Company incident. Hearst was in control of the California delegation and Kennedy convinced the publishing tycoon to place California's votes behind F.D.R. The move was successful and Roosevelt won the nomination and the November election, though Massachusetts cast only 50.6 percent of its popular vote for the Democrats. Massachusetts and Rhode Island were the only New England states that gave their electoral votes to Roosevelt. On the economic scene, Roger Babson was quoted as saying, "Better business will come when the unemployed change their attitude toward life."

**1933** • The state would ratify both the Twentieth and Twenty-first Amendments to the U.S. Constitution, setting new dates for the accession of the president and Congress, and repealing Prohibition. Convicts burned Charlestown State Prison, and an attempt was made to unite all shoe workers into a national union, resulting in dissension and the loss to the state of a number of factories. The troubled times were not without humor as members of the Harvard Lampoon "codnapped" the sacred cod from the General Court on April 26. Harvard President A. Lawrence Lowell was replaced by James B. Conant, another venerable name of Puritan days. Conant had taught at Harvard since 1917 and would remain as president until 1953. Conant would help organize scientific research on the atom bomb during World War II and would actively advise the Atomic Energy Commission. At Harvard, he emphasized a "general education."

**1934** • Massachusetts textile employees of the United Textile Workers Union answered a general strike call but failed to gain any significant concessions from an industry crippled by the depression. Suffering a loss of prestige, the union left the A.F. of L. in a few years to join the Congress of Industrial Organizations (CIO). An important herald of the coming industries in instruments, electronics and general high-tech, Edgerton, Germeshausen & Grier was founded and operated by three men. An MIT professor, Edgerton invented the stroke flash to stop high-speed action. The firm would conduct a large number of America's early nuclear tests.

**JUNE 1934** • Congress created the Securities and Exchange Commission and a grateful Roosevelt appointed Joseph Kennedy as its first chairman, an action which raised a number of protests as Kennedy had been one of those who had successfully dumped a large amount of stock prior to the crash. But, recognizing the need for reform, Kennedy worked to set regulations, raise required margins, and obtain new financing, making illegal the very practices that had strengthened his own fortune.

**NOVEMBER 1934** • Henry Cabot Lodge was re-elected to the state House of Representatives, later winning the chairmanship of the Labor Committee.

**1935** • Irish-Catholic Democrat James Michael Curley, now quite well known for his "Robin Hood" approach to politics, took office as a one-term governor, spending New Deal funds on public works. Joseph Kennedy resigned his chairmanship of the Securities and Exchange Commission and Justice Oliver Wendell Holmes died at the age of 93. The Boston Public Latin School, America's oldest public school, celebrated its 300th anniversary and the General Court passed the Teachers' Oath Bill which required all public school and college teachers to take an oath of allegiance to the state constitution.

**1936** • Joseph Kennedy was instrumental in recapitalizing both the Radio Corporation of America and Paramount Pictures. Harvard celebrated its 300th anniversary and the U.S. Army adopted the M1 semiautomatic rifle designed by Springfield Armory employee John C. Garand. Boston opened its first trackless trolley line, becoming for a short time the nation's third largest operator of trackless trolleys. The year also marked the advent of Massachusetts' first female state senator, Sybil Holmes.

**MARCH 1936** • New England's worst flood ravaged Springfield, whose residents still remembered the overflow of the Connecticut River in 1927. Property damage resulting from the present flood totaled in the millions of dollars and only Yankee ingenuity prevented a larger loss of life.

**NOVEMBER 1936** • Massachusetts still did not give Roosevelt much of a plurality with only 51.2 percent of its popular vote in the Democratic column. Democrat Charles F. Hurley replaced Curley in the State House, taking office in 1937, while Governor Curley ran for the U.S. Senate seat vacated by Marcus Coolidge and lost to Republican Henry Cabot Lodge. Lodge was the only Republican in the country to take a seat that had been held by a Democrat, defeating Curley by 135,000 votes.



*FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS* ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

**1937** • Massachusetts once again helped to defeat the national child labor amendment as it had broader national implications. A bill to repeal the state's Teachers' Oath Law passed the General Court but was vetoed by Governor Hurley. Resigning as chairman of the U.S. Maritime Commission, Joseph Kennedy accepted appointment by President Roosevelt to become the nation's first Irish-American ambassador to Great Britian.

**1938** • For the next four years, James Curley would lose bids for U.S. Senator, state governor and Boston's mayor. Curry College was founded and chartered in Milton and a hurricane killed several hundred people and caused property damage in the millions of dollars, even blowing the spire off of Shrewsbury Church.

**1939** • The Republicans had rallied to regain the State House the previous November, electing a name that harkened back to the Mayflower. Leverett Saltonstall took office as governor and remained in that position for three terms. Austrian-born Harvard law professor Felix Frankfurter was named as an associate justice of the U.S. Supreme Court by President Roosevelt. He would serve there until 1962. Justice Frankfurter was at Harvard from 1914 to 1939, chaired the War Labor Policies Board, advised both President Wilson and President Roosevelt, helped found the *New Republic* and the American Civil Liberties Union and defended Sacco and Vanzetti as victims of prejudice.

**1940** • Massachusetts' population had grown very little over the past decade, showing 4,316,721 in the year's census report. Joseph Kennedy became convinced that England was doomed to be conquered by the encroaching Nazi Germany and returned home, a strong proponent of isolationism. His oldest son, Joseph Jr., would also become an isolationist but the next eldest son, John, would develop strong beliefs that America should be an active participant in world affairs. John Kennedy graduated *cum laude* from Harvard and later published his senior thesis on British appeasement of Nazi Germany under the title *Why England Slept.*

**NOVEMBER 1940** • Massachusetts offered a somewhat stronger showing for Franklin Roosevelt in the presidential race, casting 53.1 percent of its popular vote for the Democratic leader. Roger Babson ran as the Prohibition candidate but received only one percent of the state's vote.

**1941** • St. John's Seminary was established in Boston and America's entrance into World War II gave the Massachusetts economy the final boost it needed to pull out of the depression and regain full employment and prosperity.

**1942** • The General Electric Company plant at Lynn began production of the first U.S. jet engine. The shipyards turned out PC boats, landing craft and other war ships. Raytheon made radar equipment, becoming one of the world's largest electronics manufacturers from its base in Waltham, Middlesex County. M1 rifles came from Springfield, as did Smith & Wesson revolvers. Savage Arms at Chicopee manufactured Thompson submachine guns and Browning machine guns, while Harrington and Richardson at Worcester produced Reising submachine guns, M1 rifles, M14 service rifles and M16 rifle barrels. The Johnson semiautomatic rifle and the Johnson light machine gun were designed by Boston lawyer Melvin Johnson and used by the U.S. Marine Corps, the Dutch and the Ranger battalions. MIT would soon begin research in its radiation lab and work on Project Lincoln. Both Harvard and MIT would conduct research during the war, proving their capabilities to be economic gold mines for the state in years to come. Boston suffered a tragic fire at its famous Coconut Grove nightclub which left 499 people dead.

**NOVEMBER 1942** • Democrat James Michael Curley managed election to the U.S. House from Boston's 11th district. He would serve two terms.

**1944** • A hurricane would hit the coast and John Kennedy would undergo treatment at Chelsea Naval Hospital following the famous incident with his PT boat in the South Pacific. His boat cut in half by a Japanese destroyer, Lieutenant Junior Grade Kennedy swam for 15 hours to save members of his crew, then swam from island to island for the next few days to effect the rescue of others. He was awarded the Navy and Marine Corps Medal. He would also find himself the political hope of his family because his older brother was killed as a pilot in Europe. At Harvard, Howard Aiken developed the first automatic digital computer. Justice Frankfurter concurred with the Supreme Court's decisions to uphold the Constitutionality of the government's Japanese detention camps. He had, the year before, dissented from the Court's ruling against the West Virginia Board of Education which had attempted to require Jehovah's Witnesses to salute the flag.

**FEBRUARY 4, 1944** • Henry Cabot Lodge resigned his Senate seat to enter active service in the U.S. Army. Republican Sinclair Weeks was appointed to serve out the term by Governor Saltonstall.

**MAY 3, 1944** • The production of synthetic quinine was announced by two Harvard chemists, Dr. Robert B. Woodward and Dr. William E. Doering.

**NOVEMBER 1944** • Franklin Roosevelt managed 52.8 percent of the popular vote in Massachusetts. Maine and Vermont remained New England's only two Republican holdouts.

**1945** • While the Democrats had wrested the governor's office from the strong hold of the Republicans, former Governor Leverett Saltonstall demonstrated the remaining strength of the traditional Massachusetts Yankee Republicans by taking office as a U.S. senator and holding that seat until 1967. Thus Saltonstall retained his political prominence for almost 30 years. Democrat Maurice J. Tobin would serve only one term as governor and the year would see the death of Roosevelt and the release of hitherto unknown power in the atom bombs that fell on two Japanese cities. Much of the research for U.S. nuclear projects had been conducted by Massachusetts' universities and businesses. The state contributed 550,000 citizens as volunteers or draftees during the War, reporting 16,500 casualties. The Cape's Camp Edwards (now Otis Air Force Base) was a training camp and German POW camp. Outside of Boston were several Italian POW camps. Always a supplier of ships and arms for war and peace, Massachusetts emerged from this worldwide contest a leader in the technical aspects of defense and the coming space race. The report of a Harvard committee of arts and sciences faculty members drew as many broadsides as it did bravos as it examined and promoted the establishment of a general education curriculum rather than the popular elective system of recent decades. The committee advocated a flexible foundation of common knowledge and common values in addition to the knowledge required by specialists.

**NOVEMBER 1946** • James Curley resigned his 11th District seat in the U.S. House to run for and win once again the

mayor's office in Boston. The Kennedys returned to Massachusetts, now to try John's hand at politics. Though he could have just as easily and legally run for office in either New York or Florida, he chose the 11th District (now the 8th District) as his goal and received help from Boston politician and cousin, Joe Kane. The district was basically Irish and Italian working-class citizens with Harvard and all of Cambridge included. It was also the birthplace of both John's grandfathers. He won the seat with a five-to-one margin over his Republican opponent. Taking office in 1947, he would serve three terms to 1953. Despite a Democratic president and incumbent governor, Henry Cabot Lodge returned to win the U.S. Senate seat held since 1926 by Irish-Catholic Democrat David Walsh. Lodge would hold the seat for one term, during which time the state would return to its traditional two Republican senators of venerable Yankee names. The Republicans also regained the governor's office with an even older name, Robert F. Bradford. He would serve for one term.

**1947** • Republican Joseph W. Martin Jr. of Massachusetts began his first term as Speaker of the U.S. House, serving in that position until 1949 and then again from 1953 to 1955. The textile mills and shoe factories experienced hard times once more as the war economy wound down and these industries fled to cheaper labor and more favorable conditions in the South. The looms of Massachusetts would also be slowed in several areas by the development of machine tufting in Georgia and Tennessee. This major innovation would change the face of the carpet and rug industry as well as bedspreads, bath sets and other textile products. But the Cold War and the Korean War would bolster the new defense and electronics industries. The post-war period would see a high incidence of intermarriage between Irish and Italians and many neighborhoods would begin to lose their ethnic purity. The Public Control Act of 1947 allowed the Boston Elevated Railway (BERY) to continue service despite the automobile and increased costs. But the General Court decided to purchase all of BERY's outstanding stock and create the Metropolitan Transit Authority (MTA) which they authorized to serve 14 cities and towns with a combined population of 1.5 million. Boston Mayor James Curley spent five months in federal prison for mail fraud and John Hynes served as interim mayor. Truman saw that Curley was released and later granted him a full pardon in 1950. Curley would continue to serve as mayor until 1950 when he would lose the election to Hynes. In North Andover, Merrimack College was established.

**JUNE 5, 1947** • Those present at Harvard's Commencement heard the speaker, U.S. Secretary of State George C. Marshall, propose the Marshall Plan which would allow European countries needing help to draw up their own reconstruction agenda.

**1948** • Television came to Massachusetts by way of its first two stations, WBZ-TV (Channel 4, NBC) and WNAC-TV (Channel 7, ABC). Brandeis University was established at Waltham and Stonehill College was founded at North Easton. Massachusetts cast 54.7 percent of its popular vote for presidential candidate Harry Truman.

**JANUARY 6, 1949** • Democrat Paul A. Dever took office as governor to serve for two terms, wresting the State House back from the Republicans.

**FEBRUARY 1, 1949** • Former Governor Maurice J. Tobin was appointed secretary of labor by President Truman. He had been serving *ad interim* since August 13, 1948. Southern Massachusetts University would be founded during the year at North Dartmouth.

**1950** • The Boston office of the well-known Brink's armored cars was robbed by masked bandits, earning for a time the unwanted distinction of America's biggest heist. The robbers got away with a total of $2,775,395.12 of which $1,218,211.29 was in cash. Though the criminals were eventually caught and convicted, only some $50,000 of the money was recovered. In the U.S. Senate, Henry Cabot Lodge battled unsuccessfully against the old Electoral College and for his proposed proportional system of electing the president and vice-president. The census revealed the population swelled by some 350,000 residents, totaling 4,690,514 for the entire state.

**1952** • Having joined the Harvard faculty in 1949, economist John Kenneth Galbraith developed his theory of countervailing power in the first of three major works, *American Capitalism,* asserting that other centers of power besides the great corporations would rise in a free enterprise system. He would publish *The Affluent Society* in 1958 and *The New Industrial State* in 1967.

**NOVEMBER 1952** • Though Henry Cabot Lodge successfully managed the presidential campaign of General Dwight Eisenhower, he managed to alientate many Taft Republicans in Massachusetts as Eisenhower took the nomination from Robert Taft, a conservative from Ohio. He also neglected his own re-election campaign at a time when John F. Kennedy, Massachusetts congressman, decided to renew the 1916 Senate battle between the Lodges and the Fitzgeralds. Robert Kennedy managed the campaign of his older brother. Although the state went for Eisenhower by more than 208,000 votes (54.2 percent of the total popular vote was cast Republican) and a Republican governor was elected, Kennedy defeated Lodge by 70,000 votes. Republican Christian A. Herter won the governor's office and would hold it for two terms.

**1953** • Lodge would serve for the next seven and one-half years as U.S. Ambassador to the United Nations and as a member of President Eisenhower's cabinet. The innovation of television would bring important U.N. debates regarding Hungary, the Suez Canal and other major issues into the homes of America, making Lodge a popular and familiar figure. This same year, John Kennedy married Jacqueline Bouvier, and Robert Kennedy served as an assistant counsel to the Senate Permanent Subcommittee on Investigations headed by Republican Senator Joseph R. McCarthy. Neither Lodge nor Kennedy had mentioned McCarthy in the campaign of 1952, as the controversial senator had a significant following in Massachusetts, including Joseph Kennedy who had invited McCarthy several times to Hyannis Port. Though a strong Democrat, Joseph Kennedy was still an isolationist and thus had close ties with the Taft wing of the Republican party, having contributed to one of McCarthy's campaigns. Nathan Marsh Pusey followed Conant as president of Harvard. During this decade, the admissions policy would be deemed "need-blind" which theoretically rendered family wealth completely irrelevant. The admissions door was now comparatively "wide open" and Pusey labored to reaffirm the liberal arts.

**JUNE 9, 1953** • Massachusetts' worst tornado wreaked havoc in Worcester County, killing 86 people.

**1954** • A hurricane battered the coast. Along Route 128, the post-war high-tech electronics and defense boom began to

make itself evident, attracting a new breed of well-educated, well-paid employees, some from out of state, who would have an impact on the voting patterns and political views of suburban Boston and even the state. During the time that the Senate was voting to censure McCarthy, John Kennedy was undergoing serious back surgery, after which he spent six months strapped to a board in his father's house in Florida. During this recuperation, he wrote *Profiles in Courage* which included his choice of courageous political leaders from John Quincy Adams to Robert Taft. The book would earn him a Pulitzer Prize for biography upon its publication in 1956.

**AUGUST 20, 1955** • President Eisenhower declared Massachusetts a major disaster area because of floods along the Connecticut River. The river has since been tamed by flood control dams.

**NOVEMBER 1956** • John Kennedy had successfully led the fight against reform of the Electoral College in the Senate but had lost the nomination for vice-president to Senator Estes Kefauver at the Democratic Convention. Actually this was a favorable turn of events for him as the Republicans virtually buried the Democratic ticket of Stevenson and Kefauver. Massachusetts cast 59.3 percent of its popular vote for Eisenhower and Nixon but, oddly enough, turned from a two-term Republican governor to elect the nation's and the state's first Italian-American governor, Democrat Foster Furcolo.

**1957** • The General Court passed a law prohibiting discrimination in public housing, and St. Hyacinth College and Seminary was established at Granby. Musical prodigy Sarah Caldwell, a product of the New England Conservatory of Music in Boston, founded the Boston Opera Group. Now known as the Opera Company of Boston the company has produced world premieres as well as other firsts, such as the only American performance of Bellini's *I Puritani.* Caroline Kennedy was born, the first child of Jack (John) and Jackie Kennedy.

**JUNE 13, 1957** • Having set out from Plymouth, England, 54 days earlier, the reproduction of the Pilgrim's trusty ship, the *Mayflower II,* landed at Plymouth, Massachusetts, duplicating the trip taken in 1620. The boat, built in England, remains at the city's State Pier on Water Street, often shocks tourists with its small size.

**1958** • E. Virginia Williams formed the New England Civic Ballet Company in Boston while the town of Dudley welcomed the founding and chartering of Nichols College. Belmont, Massachusetts became national headquarters for the newly formed John Birch Society founded by retired candy maker, Robert H.W. Welch, Jr.

**FEBRUARY 16, 1958** • Boston was covered by a record 19.4-inch snowfall. Atop the 600-foot-high Blue Hill 12 miles away, instruments measured 22.3 inches of snow.

**NOVEMBER 1958** • John Kennedy had made more than 350 speeches throughout the country since the 1956 election, laying the foundation for his own bid for the presidency in 1960. Running for re-election to the U.S. Senate in Massachusetts, he won by the largest margin ever recorded in a Bay State race for U.S. senator, tallying a plurality of 874,608 votes.

**1959** • The U.S. Navy's first nuclear-powered surface ship, the cruiser *Long Beach,* slid forth from Quincy's Fore River shipyard. The ship was built by General Dynamics which continued to produce supertankers.

**APRIL 1959** • President Eisenhower appointed former governor Christian A. Herter as secretary of state. Herter served until Kennedy took office in 1961.

**1960** • Massachusetts' high-tech electronics and defense industries hlped spur the state's population to 5,148,578, an increase of about 450,000 residents. At Rowe, in Franklin County, New England's first atomic-powered, steam-electric plant began operations, owned by the Yankee Atomic Electric Company. The plant cost over $50 million and was designed to generate about 150,000 kilowatts of electricity. The national bodies of the Boston-headquartered Unitarians and the Universalists joined to form the Unitarian Universalist Association.

**NOVEMBER 1960** • The Republicans won back the governor's chair with Italian-American, liberal Republican John A. Volpe. Volpe served this first time for only one term, taking office in January, 1961. John Kennedy won the Democratic nomination over Lyndon Johnson who then consented to be Kennedy's running mate. Kennedy had projected a strong, young but capable image in the famous television debates with Nixon and had faced the issues of his religion and his father's money head-on, sometimes with refreshing humor. His main weakness was a lackluster record during eight years in the Senate, with no major legislation passed that bore his name or outspoken stand taken on the more volatile issues of the decade. Massachusetts cast 60.2 percent of its popular vote for its native son and 39.6 percent for the Republicans, giving all of its now-only 14 electoral votes to Kennedy. But across the nation, of some 60 million votes cast, Kennedy received a plurality of only 114,673 votes. Electoral votes totaling 303 gave him the victory, making him the youngest man ever elected president, the first president born in the twentieth century and the first Roman Catholic to hold the nation's highest office. Two weeks later, John Fitzgerald Kennedy Jr. was born. John F. Collins was elected mayor of Boston, a post which he held every year until 1967. Collins would hire urban renewal director Ed Logue, would push through a law slashing the effective tax rate for new buildings in Boston and would then oversee the planning of a 60-acre Government Center. The new tax law would also inspire Prudential to construct a 52-story tower complex in the Back Bay.

**1961** • The year John Kennedy took the Oval Office, his brother Edward M. Kennedy, the youngest of Joseph Kennedy's children, became assistant district attorney of Suffolk County. Bentley College was founded and chartered at Waltham while the recent election was chronicled by Harvard-educated historian Theodore H. White in his popular book, *The Making of a President, 1960.* The work won a Pulitzer Prize. White later published similar works for the elections in 1964 and 1968.

**JANUARY 20, 1961** • John Kennedy set the style of his short term with his famous and often-quoted inaugural address. The following day, his brother Robert Kennedy took a place in the president's cabinet as U.S. attorney general. The new chief executive would also name Harvard economics professor John Kenneth Galbraith as ambassador to India and Pulitzer-Prize-winning Harvard historian Arthur M. Schlesinger Jr. as a special presidential assistant.

**MARCH 1, 1961** • President Kennedy established the Peace Corps on a temporary basis and pondered what he considered to be the proper U.S. role in an already planned invasion of Cuba.

**APRIL 17, 1961** • With a qualified go-ahead from Kennedy, about 1,400 Cuban refugees landed at the Bahia de Cochinos

(Bay of Pigs) on the southern coast of Cuba in order to overthrow Fidel Castro. Kennedy took responsibility for the dismal failure as he had vetoed the involvement of U.S. troops or air support. There was also some question of intelligence leaks regarding the ill-fated project.

**MAY 1961** • President Kennedy called for a national commitment to land men on the moon and return them safely to earth before the end of the decade.

**SEPTEMBER 22, 1961** • Congress approved the Peace Corps Act and the agency became a permanent part of the U.S. government. The president appointed his brother-in-law, R. Sargent Shriver Jr., as head of the Peace Corps.

**1962** • High-tech firms and university research labs in Massachusetts busied themselves with the space race, making such contributions as the space suits to be worn by the astronauts. Berklee College of Music was established in Boston, and a series of fatal strangulations began which would plague the city for the next two years. In Plymouth, a U.S. Mail truck gave up $1,551,277 to robbers in the largest cash theft to that date in the nation's history. Democrat John W. McCormack of Massachusetts replaced the deceased Texan Sam Rayburn as Speaker of the U.S. House of Representatives, holding that position until 1970.

**OCTOBER 1962** • President Kennedy was praised for his handling of the Cuban Missile Crisis in which his naval blockade and firm stand turned back missile-laden Soviet ships and secured an agreement from the Soviets to dismantle their Cuban missile bases. The drama of the incident helped dim the memory of the Bay of Pigs.

**NOVEMBER 1962** • Edward (Ted) Kennedy defeated Republican George Lodge to win the senate seat previously held by his brother John and temporarily filled by Benjamin A. Smith II.

**1963** • The General Court made segregation illegal in the sale or rental of most private dwellings in Massachusetts and ordered that all state school districts should no longer allow prayer in public schools. A Ford Foundation grant allowed the Boston Ballet Company to be permanently established from the New England Civic Ballet, begun in 1958 by artistic director E. Virginia Williams.

**JANUARY 1963** • Having been elected governor the preceding November, Democrat Endicott Peabody took office and served in the State House until January, 1965.

**JUNE 1963** • President Kennedy appointed his old rival, Henry Cabot Lodge, as U.S. ambassador to South Vietnam.

**NOVEMBER 1963** • Democrat Michael S. Dukakis, a Greek Orthodox native of Brookline, won a seat in the state House of Representatives, serving there until 1971.

**NOVEMBER 22, 1963** • The Kennedy family became victim to another in a long string of personal tragedies. President John F. Kennedy was assassinated in Dallas, ending an era labeled "Camelot" by historian Samuel Eliot Morison and beginning a long investigation that would never be solved to the satisfaction of many Americans.

**MARCH 1964** • After enduring two years of terrible murders, the city of Boston breathed easier as Albert Henry De Salvo was finally caught, confessing to be the nationally known "Boston Strangler".

**AUGUST 1964** • Mass transit in Greater Boston was reorganized in the form of the Massachusetts Bay Transportation Authority (MBTA), serving a total of 78 cities and towns.

**SEPTEMBER 1964** • Robert F. Kennedy resigned his post as the nation's attorney general and prepared to run for the U.S. Senate from New York State.

**NOVEMBER 1964** • Republican John A. Volpe was returned to the governor's office and a referendum was passed by voters which lengthened the term of the governor from two to four years, taking effect with the election of 1966. Massachusetts cast 76.2 percent of its vote for Democrat Lyndon B. Johnson, returning Johnson to the White House. He had earlier stepped up to serve the remaining time in President Kennedy's term. Robert Kennedy won a senate seat from New York State. During the year, Colonial Press, New England's largest book printer, printed at its plant in Clinton, 500,000 copies of the Warren Commission's report on the murder of President Kennedy. The copies were run in a record time of 45 hours.

**1965** • Massachusetts was divided, as it had always been, over issues of civil rights as the black citizen of America became a major focus of the 1960s. Boston minister Reverend James Reeb was murdered while taking part in a civil rights demonstration, representing the long list of Massachusetts citizens who had championed the rights of minorities over several centuries. In the Senate, Ted Kennedy led the passage of a major immigrant reform package.

**APRIL 1965** • The Massachusetts Board of Education's Advisory Committee on Racial Imbalance and Education issued a report calling segregation harmful and charging that most of the Commonwealth's black children attended predominantly black schools. About 50,000 black people from Roxbury marched to Boston Common to hear Dr. Martin Luther King deliver a speech protesting racial inequality in both the North and the South. The same month, the state Supreme Judicial Court declared John Cleland's book known as *Fanny Hill* to be obscene literature. The decision was reversed in 1966 by the U.S. Supreme Court.

**AUGUST 1965** • In Springfield, protests against alleged police brutality in cases involving black citizens led to a series of arrests and several burned buildings.

**OCTOBER 1965** • Anti-Vietnam War rallies drew 750 people at Boston University and 2,000 people to Boston Common.

**NOVEMBER 9, 1965** • An electricity "blackout" across the Northeastern section of the country included all of Massachusetts. Hitting Boston at the evening rush hour, the blackout lasted for five hours. Governor Volpe put the National Guard on stand-by but the troops were not called to duty. Mrs. Louise Day Hicks won re-election to the Boston School Committee. Her stand against "shipping children all over the city" and her belief in the neighborhood school system mirrored the beliefs of the mainly Irish-Catholic board.

**DECEMBER 1965** • Under artistic director George Balanchine, the Boston Ballet Company put on a *Nutcracker* performance that was so popular it was made an annual event.

**MARCH 1966** • Draft-card burners and war protesters provoked clashes that put a number of people in the Suffolk County Jail.

**MAY 10, 1966** • The Commonwealth's 87-year-old ban on the dissemination of contraceptives or birth control information was lifted by a bill signed into law by Governor Volpe. The bill took effect on August 8 and restricted the administration of the new freedom to physicians and pharmacists, a fact which would later be challenged. The last such law in the country was finally repealed largely because Cardinal

Cushing, Archbishop of the Boston diocese since 1949, did not oppose it, though neither did he support it.

**JUNE 1966** • The Amherst College commencement became the scene of an anti-Vietnam-policy demonstration as Secretary of Defense Robert S. McNamara received an honorary LLD from the college. Another protest took place days later at Brandeis University.

**NOVEMBER 8, 1966** • Incumbent Governor John A. Volpe was re-elected to become the first Massachusetts governor to win a four-year term. One of the country's first independent peace candidates, Thomas Boylston Adams, had lost the Democratic primary earlier to Endicott Peabody who sought the U.S. Senate seat to be vacated by retiring Leverett Saltonstall. However, Peabody lost the election to liberal Republican Edward Brooke, the first black to win a Senate seat since Reconstruction (1880). Two important amendments to the state constitution were passed by the voters. The first required the governor and lieutenant governor to be elected jointly from the same party and the second returned the right of local government to the towns and the cities. This Home Rule Amendment, number LXXXIX, brought the Commonwealth full circle back to its strong heritage of town government.

**DECEMBER 1966** • The U.S. Labor Department reported the cities of Fall River and Lowell as having substantial unemployment.

**FEBRUARY 1967** • The General Court raised the state's minimum wage to $1.40 and the Boston Strangler escaped from Bridgewater State Hospital but was soon recaptured. Snowstorms, high winds and floods struck New England in both February and March, taking the lives of 35 people.

**JUNE 1967** • Predominantly black Roxbury in Boston was the scene of the city's first large-scale rioting in modern years. Started by a sit-in staged by Mothers for Adequate Welfare, the looting and burning resulted in 60 to 75 injuries and 75 to 100 arrests.

**SEPTEMBER 1967** • Massachusetts' attorney general, Elliot L. Richardson requested that Albert Henry De Salvo be sent from the Bridgewater State Hospital to a state maximum security prison.

**NOVEMBER 1967** • Kevin White was elected the new mayor of Boston and pledged to focus on neighborhood growth as opposed to the downtown sector. He would serve the city as mayor until 1983. Also during the year, the town of Maynard joined the MBTA as the system's 79th member.

**JANUARY 15, 1968** • The U.S. Supreme Court upheld congressional redistricting of Massachusetts. The Court also upheld the Commonwealth's school racial-balance law.

**FEBRUARY 1, 1968** • The General Court again raised the state's minimum wage which would now equal $1.60 per hour.

**MARCH 6, 1968** • Republican Congressman Joseph William Martin Jr. died, having served Massachusetts in the U.S. House from 1924 to 1966. Martin was Speaker of the House from 1946 to 1948 and from 1952 to 1954. A conservative, he opposed the New Deal policies of Franklin Roosevelt.

**JUNE 6, 1968** • Robert F. Kennedy, U.S. senator from New York, who had announced in mid-March that he would run for President, was assassinated in California.

**OCTOBER 1968** • Professor George Wald of Harvard received the Nobel Prize for medicine and a separate MBTA police department was organized.

**NOVEMBER 1968** • Ted Kennedy won re-election to the U.S. Senate beginning his second six-year term in 1969. Though Richard Nixon won the presidency, Massachusetts gave him only 32.9 percent of its popular vote. The year also witnessed the phasing out of the Federal Armory at Springfield.

**1969** • The LXXXVII Amendment to the state constitution, passed in 1966, allowed the governor to prepare and present plans to reorganize departments of the executive branch. This year, the General Court approved a plan which created ten new state departments or secretariats, absorbing 150 smaller departments and agencies. This major reorganization of the executive branch went into effect in 1971. Boston also received a new City Hall which was nationally acclaimed for its architectural design.

**JANUARY 1969** • Governor John A. Volpe was appointed Secretary of Transportation by newly elected President Nixon, taking his place on the cabinet January 21. The following day, Lieutenant Governor Francis W. Sargent, also a Republican, assumed the office of governor. Native Bostonian Charles Colson would also be appointed by President Nixon as a special counsel to the president and would serve in that position until 1973. Harvard professor Henry Kissinger would be named assistant to the president for national security affairs. Kissinger had received his masters and doctorate degrees from Harvard in the early 1950s. In the Senate, Democrat Ted Kennedy mounted a quick and powerful campaign that won him the position of majority whip from Russell Long of Louisiana.

**MAY 29, 1969** • John F. Kennedy's birthplace at Brookline was dedicated as a national historic site.

**JULY 11, 1969** • The Boston Court of Appeals overturned the 1968 conviction of Dr. Benjamin Spock for conspiring to counsel draft evasion.

**JULY 18, 1969** • A car driven by Ted Kennedy took a tragic plunge off of a wooden bridge into a tidal pond on Chappaquiddick Island (Martha's Vineyard) where Kennedy had been taking part in Edgartown's sailing regatta. The only passenger, Mary Jo Kopechne, who had served as Robert Kennedy's secretary, was drowned.

**JULY 20, 1969** • In fulfillment of John Kennedy's goal, Apollo 11 landed on the moon and returned safely to earth four days later.

**JULY 30, 1969** • Ted Kennedy announced that he would remain in the Senate. However, he would seek re-election in 1970 as a mandate from the people even though his normal term would not be up until 1975 (with the election in 1974). A poll reported by the *Boston Globe* concluded that 81 percent of the state's voters felt that Kennedy should keep his seat. He also announced that he would not seek the presidency in 1972.

**APRIL 2, 1970** • Governor Francis Sargent signed a bill into law which allowed Massachusetts servicemen the right to refuse to engage in armed hostilities in absence of a Congressional declaration of war. This act was followed on April 30 by President Nixon's announcement that the United States had invaded Cambodia.

**MAY 6, 1970** • The U.S. Court of Appeals barred Boston's district attorney from prosecuting the producers and cast of the musical "Hair" under the state's obscenity laws.

**JUNE 15, 1970** • Former state attorney general and lieutenant governor, Elliot L. Richardson, was appointed Secretary of Health, Education and Welfare by President Nixon.

**AUGUST 24, 1970** • Governor Francis Sargent signed the nation's first no-fault automobile insurance law.

**SEPTEMBER 1970** • Theaters were closed and some arrests

made in Springfield, Pittsfield and Cambridge due to closed-circuit showings of New York City's "Oh! Calcutta!" On September 8, the Most Reverend Humberto Sosa Medeiros was named to succeed the retiring archbishop of the Boston diocese, Richard Cardinal Cushing. Medeiros had pastored a church in Fall River before assuming a pastorate in Brownsville, Texas in 1966. He had come to Massachusetts in 1931 from the Portuguese Azores.

**OCTOBER 1970** • Paul Samuelson of MIT received a Nobel Prize for economics, and a wave of bombings across the country included Harvard's Center for International Affairs. The bomb exploded in the early morning hours, hurting no one. The act was claimed by the "Proud Eagle Tribe" who billed themselves as a group of "revolutionary women."

**NOVEMBER 1970** • Richard Cardinal Cushing died in Boston at the age of 75 on November 2. The following day, voters elected Francis Sargent governor over Boston mayor Kevin White. Ted Kennedy was re-elected to the Senate and the state voting age was lowered by the XCIV Amendment from 21 to 19. The XCIII Amendment also passed which removed length-of-residency requirements for state voters. The U.S. Census showed the state's population to be at 5,689,170. Also during the year, the Episcopal Diocese of Massachusetts chose the Right Reverend John M. Burgess as the first black to head an American Episcopal diocese. Burgess was the son of a dining-car porter.

**1971** • Early in 1971, Ted Kennedy lost his position of Majority Whip in the Senate to Robert Byrd. Some traditionalists cringed as a graduate of Stanford University in California who had become dean of Harvard Law School also become Harvard's president. Still at the helm in 1986, Derek Bok chose to make a "core curriculum" his emphasis. The year also saw Bradford College established and chartered at Haverhill.

**MARCH 10, 1971** • According to a federal government agency report, Boston had 15.3 percent of its population on welfare, the highest figure of the nation's 20 largest cities.

**MARCH 24, 1971** • The General Court ratified the XXVI Amendment to the U.S. Constitution lowering the voting age for federal elections to 18.

**JUNE 23, 1971** • The Massachusetts Commission Against Discrimination ordered the Boston school system to fully integrate by the opening of the 1972 school year.

**SEPTEMBER 27, 1971** • Massachusetts became the fourth state in the Northeast to have an official state lottery when the General Court overrode Governor Sargent's veto. The lottery was designed to aid the state's cities and towns.

**OCTOBER 1971** • Simon Kuznets of Harvard received the Nobel Prize for economics.

**1972** • Massachusetts faced a recession as the Vietnam conflict wound down, the government cut back the space program and the Commonwealth's strong commitment to social programs produced a strained and failing budget with a tax burden so great that the state was nicknamed "Taxachusetts." The same year, a census survey showed Boston's average number of municipal government employees per 10,000 residents to be 76 percent above the national average. The General Court was one of the state legislatures to ratify the unsuccessful Equal Rights Amendment to the U.S. Constitution. Numerous protests of the Vietnam War were staged in Boston and at Westover Air Force Base in Chicopee.

**APRIL 1972** • A Massachusetts loyalty oath that required the state's public employees to swear that they would oppose violent overthrow of the government was upheld by the U.S. Supreme Court. The Boston Marathon became the first such race to admit women runners and the new Massachusetts State Lottery began generating revenues for local government and regional school districts.

**FALL 1972** • The teachers struck in Somerville and Kenneth Arrow of Harvard received the Nobel Prize for economics.

**NOVEMBER 1972** • Not counting the District of Columbia, Massachusetts was the only state to award its electoral votes to presidential candidate George McGovern and his Democratic running mate, Sargent Shriver. Massachusetts society and politics had evolved to the point that Yankee Republicans and Irish Democrats were moving in the same general direction, a phenomenon usually creditd to the influence of Senator Edward Kennedy. It was also pointed out at the time that seven percent of the eligible voters in the state were students. Although refusing to contribute to the Nixon/Agnew Republican landslide, Massachusetts voters returned Republican Edward Brooke to the U.S. Senate and passed two state constitutional amendments, giving state residents the right to a quality environment and lowering the state's voting age to 18.

**EARLY 1973** • Secretary of Health, Education & Welfare Elliot L. Richardson became Secretary of Defense and Henry Kissinger was named secretary of state. (Kissinger would remain in the position until the new administration in 1977.) A research breakthrough concerning RNA at MIT laid the foundation for gene manipulation, and Pope Paul VI made Boston's Archbishop Medeiros a cardinal.

**APRIL 1973** • Massachusetts faced a job loss of 13,050 jobs when the Defense Department revealed its intentions to close Boston Navy Shipyard, Westover Air Force Base at Chicopee and three other installations in the Commonwealth.

**MAY 1973** • Harvard Law School professor Archibald Cox was appointed an independent special prosecutor in the Watergate investigation by newly confirmed U.S. Attorney General Elliot L. Richardson.

**SUMMER 1973** • At Boston's Logan International Airport, a Delta Airlines jet crashed, killing 88 people. Meanwhile, Governor Sargent vetoed a bill authorizing silent prayer in Massachusetts schools, citing that the state attorney general had found it to be unconstitutional.

**OCTOBER 1973** • The Masschusetts Supreme Court upheld a state plan to redraw Boston's school districts in order to achieve racial balance. In Chelsea, a fire rampaged through 30 blocks, destroyed some 1,000 buildings and left 300 homeless. In Cambridge, a Harvard faculty member received the Nobel Prize for economics for the third year in a row as the honor went this time to Professor Wasily Leontief, director of the school's Economic Research Center. In the nation's capital, President Nixon dismissed Archibald Cox as special prosecutor, causing Attorney General Richardson to resign.

**NOVEMBER 1973** • Massachusetts joined six other states in dropping the state speed limit to 50 m.p.h., and prison guards found former Boston strangler Albert DeSalvo in his Walpole prison cell, dead from 16 stab wounds.

**1974** • The Vietnam controversy began to fade and a new cast of protestors found their way into the headlines, as Massachusetts residents steamed over gas rationing, taxes and school desegregation. By June, the courts had ordered busing plans for both Boston and Springfield. Edward (Ted) Kennedy

announced that, once again, he would not be a presidential candidate. The Bear Swamp Hydroelectric Project was begun on the Deerfield River near Rowe and Zoare and Boston Edison Company decided not to build a third nuclear power plant.

**SEPTEMBER, 1974** • The busing controversy centered in mostly Irish South Boston and heavily black Roxbury. Attempting to speak at an anti-busing rally, Ted Kennedy was forced to retreat before rocks and jeers.

**OCTOBER, 1974** • Busing demonstrations featured members of the Boston School Committee and the Boston City Council. Attendance dropped and violence escalated to the point that Governor Sargent mobilized 450 National Guardsmen and called on President Ford to send federal troops. Ford declined. Meanwhile, someone stabbed a white student at Hyde Park High School, and Boston Mayor White criticized the troops in his city.

**NOVEMBER, 1974** • Republican Governor Sargent lost the gubernatorial election to Michael S. Dukakis, a Greek Orthodox Democrat. Thomas P. O'Neill III was elected lieutenant governor and Democrat Paul Tsongas of Lowell gained entry to the U.S. House. Two new constitutional amendments reduced the Massachusetts House to 160 members and prohibited the use of public money for any private institutions. In Boston, residents defeated a referendum designed to abolish the anti-busing School Committee.

**DECEMBER, 1974** • Violence closed Roxbury and South Boston schools, demonstrators from across the nation swelled the pro-busing ranks, and U.S. District Court Judge W. Arthur Garrity held three School Committee members in contempt of court.

**1975** • Faced with a growing state deficit coupled with rising sentiment against what was considered to be burdensome tax rates, the new governor, Dukakis, cut state spending. He rode the subway to work every day, and appointed Laurie Cabot as Salem's official witch, also recognizing her work with dyslexic children. A television producer challenged an MIT undergrad to design a nuclear bomb using only publicly accessible research material. Experts who later examined the design gave the five-week project a fair chance of successful detonation. In April, Boston College grad Bill Rodgers gained recognition as America's fastest-ever marathon runner in the 79th running of the Boston Marathon. A month later, Boston acknowledged financial problems and admitted collecting the highest combined state and local taxes of the nation's 30 largest cities. The state as a whole ranked second in the country for taxes collected. In August, the Massachusetts Supreme Court reinstated 70-year-old Alger Hiss to the state bar. A Communist Party member, Hiss had been convicted of perjury in 1950. September brought a Boston teacher's strike, continued violence over busing and the downgrading of the state's securities ratings. In November, voters re-elected Boston Mayor Kevin White to his third, four-year term and, in December, Judge Garrity placed Boston High School in federal court receivership.

**1976** • Four men were indicted for a series of 11 New England bombings which included the Suffolk County Courthouse, the Essex County Courthouse in Newburyport and Logan International Airport. Controversial genetic research at Harvard was delayed for three months by a concerned Cambridge City Council. In April, Governor Dukakis and the General Court established an industrial mortgage insurance fund to aid the renovation of mature industries and the growth of small businesses. In November, the state voted for a Democratic president and elected Ted Kennedy to a third term in the U.S. Senate. Voters also approved an equal rights amendment to the state constitution while they defeated a graduated income tax and a ban on the private ownership of guns.

**1977** • Massachusetts fishermen reveled in the new, 200-mile limit established the year before by federal legislation. This protective measure would help revitalize the state's fishing industry. Now serving as Secretary of Commerce, Elliot Richardson presided over a U.S. loan guarantee to General Dynamics for the construction of seven supertankers, a contract which saved 5,000 jobs at the Quincy shipyards. Racial violence closed Hyde Park High School while, in the nation's capital, Massachusetts Congressman Thomas P. (Tip) O'Neill took over as Speaker of the House. The Cambridge City Council lifted its ban on DNA research, a fire destroyed the 19th-century, transcendentalist commune called Brook Farm, and Governor Dukakis officially vindicated Sacco and Vanzetti. Though Radcliffe College women had received Harvard University degrees with a Radcliffe seal since 1963, the two institutions merged in 1977 and became completely coeducational.

**1978** • The Defense Department reported Massachusetts as 4th in the nation with $2.4 billion in defense contracts. The worst snowstorm in the state's history dumped 27 inches of snow on Boston. The February blizzard halted business and manufacturing for five days, resulting in a $441-million loss to businessmen. The state was declared a federal disaster area. In the state courts, land claims by the Wampanoag Indians of Mashpee were dismissed and a Court Reorganization Act transferred most of the responsibility of the court system from the counties to the Commonwealth. The counties would still own their courthouses, collecting from the state a "fair and equitable" rent. Later called "Reagan's favorite Democrat," Edward King defeated Governor Dukakis in the Democratic primary and went on to win the November gubernatorial election on a platform of massive tax cuts, generous business incentives, capital punishment and anti-abortion legislation. Congressman Paul Tsongas stepped up to the U.S. Senate, defeating Republican Edward Brooke. An Eastern Orthodox Democrat from Lowell, Tsongas worked with government and business to revive Lowell's economy. Wang Laboratories' move this same year from Tewkesbury to Lowell would have a significant impact on that city's economic health.

**1979** • Boston welcomed the Pope and hosted the dedication of the John F. Kennedy Library.

**1980** • Summer's Operation Sail brought the world's tall ships to Boston Harbor where tax rebellion was brewing once more. The new high-tech boom had created within the population a significant segment of professionals who were socially liberal but economically conservative. Having formed their own Massachusetts High Technology Council in 1977, they joined the majority of Commonwealth property owners in a tax revolt sparked by California's Proposition 13. Massachusett's Proposition 2 1/2 capped real-estate taxes at 2.5 percent of assessed value and called for revaluation of property throughout the state to market value. Other taxes were cut, and unemployment, which had topped 14 percent in 1976, began to drop. In addition, Proposition 2 1/2 would result in an incredible real-estate boom. Due possibly to John Anderson's pull on the Democratic vote, Massachusetts barely

# CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

squeaked into Reagan's camp in November, giving the state's electoral votes (reduced that year from 12 to 11) to a Republican for the first time since Eisenhower.

**1981** • As Proposition 2 1/2 took effect, property taxes declined significantly throughout the Commonwealth, but so much so in Boston that the city's bond rating was first suspended and then revised to a low "Ba" rating. A fire at Lynn destroyed four city blocks and disrupted a desperately needed, $194-million urban renewal project. The counties of town-oriented Massachusetts received a measure of home rule from the General Court when the legislature transferred appropriating authority for county budgets to a County Advisory Board.

**1982** • With promises to meet certain standards by 1986, the Boston schools united with some 200 Boston businesses to provide entry-level jobs for graduates. This followed one year after the city hired professional school administrator Robert Spillane who cut spending and toughened requirements on both teachers and students. In the Democratic gubernatorial primary, Dukakis returned to defeat Edward King, going on to win in November with running mate John Kerry. Ted Kennedy won his fourth full term in the U.S. Senate by beating high-tech millionaire Republican Raymond Shamie, but by the senator's smallest re-election margin to date. Redistricting helped Democrat Barney Frank oust long-popular Republican Congresswoman Margaret Heckler from the new 4th District. President Reagan later appointed Heckler as Secretary of Health and Human Services but then removed her and named her ambassador to Ireland. Massachusetts voters amended the state constitution, repealing the prohibition of capital punishment.

**1983** • Despite the recession of the early 1980s, Massachusetts' low-tax, high-tech economy maintained one of the lowest unemployment rates in the nation. Back again, Governor Dukakis began to take a pro-business stand. The ancient Blue Laws were lifted, allowing retail sales on Sundays. Personalities in the headlines included Congressman Gerry Studds of the 10th District who was censured by the U.S. House for sexual misconduct, Carl Yastrzemski who retired from the Boston Red Sox after 23 years, and Cardinal Medeiros who died at the age of 67. Under heavy criticism for alleged corruption in his administration, Boston Mayor Kevin White announced that he would not run again. In November, the newly elected mayor was city councilman Raymond Flynn, a native of South Boston.

**1984** • The controversial and shocking New Bedford rape incident, involving four men from the Portuguese Azores and victim Cheryl Araujo, drew national attention. Senator Paul Tsongas announced that he had a form of cancer and would retire after only one term. Many Republicans were surprised when Raymond Shamie defeated formidable office holder Elliot Richardson in the primary election. In November, Democrat John Kerry beat Shamie. Tsongas agreed to retire one day early, giving Kerry tenure over other newly elected U.S. senators. Once again, the Commonwealth went for President Reagan by a narrow margin.

**1985** • Henry Cabot Lodge died in Beverly at the age of 82. Former governor Edward J. King switched to the Republican Party and the Boston School Committee named Dr. Lavel S. Wilson to be the first black superintendent of Boston's public school system, the oldest school system in the nation. General Dynamics announced the closing of the 101-year-old Quincy Shipyards when the last of five Navy cargo ships were completed. The closing affected 4,200 workers. Over the years, more than 600 ships had been built in the yards. In September, Judge Garrity ended his 11-year supervision over the Boston schools while the city braced for Hurricane Gloria. Mature industries legislation went into effect during the year and centers of excellence were established to unite private industry with higher education.

**1986** • A federal jury in Boston sentenced four alleged leaders of Boston's organized crime families to prison. Television anchorwoman Maria Shriver, the daughter of Eunice Kennedy Shriver and Sargent Shriver, married body builder and actor Arnold Schwarzenegger in Hyannis. In May, the state treasury showed a surplus of $575 million in comparison to a deficit of $500 million in 1975. The marriage of Caroline Kennedy and Edward A. Schlossberg took place in Centerville in July. The reception in Hyannis was held by 95-year-old Rose Kennedy. Meanwhile, a lean year and tight federal regulations sorely pressed the fishing industry.

**SEPTEMBER 1986** • While Massachusetts doctors battled a 10-month-old state law requiring that they bill no more than the Medicare-approved rate, W.R. Grace & Company settled with Woburn families over the pollution of Woburn's drinking-water supplies. Refusing to approve evacuation plans for the Northeast, Governor Dukakis delayed the issuance of a federal operating license to the Seabrook I nuclear plant, located on the New Hampshire coast just two miles north of Massachusetts. The plant, owned by 16 New England utilities, received a fuel-loading license in October, despite the protests of Dukakis and others. The state launched its own Immigration/Asylum Project to aid undocumented aliens while Harvard University celebrated its 350th anniversary, an event which included visits from Prince Charles of England and President Corazon Aquino of the Philippines. Awarded an honorary degree from Boston University, Mrs. Aquino later delivered an address at Harvard where her martyred husband had studied. At the time of its anniversary, Harvard claimed 29 Nobel Prize winners and six U.S. presidents.

**NOVEMBER 1986** • Joseph P. Kennedy 2nd, eldest son of Robert Kennedy, won the 8th District House seat vacated by the retiring Thomas P. (Tip) O'Neill Jr. The other ten Massachusetts Congressmen were re-elected, including lone Republican Silvio Conte. Governor Dukakis gained re-election with a new running mate, former Massachusetts secretary of state, Evelyn F. Murphy. Voters said no to mandatory seat belt laws and to the idea of transforming predominantly black Roxbury into the independent city of Mandela, named for the South African activist. The voters agreed to consider hikes in state tax revenues as long as they were tied proportionally to increases in workers' wages. Amy Carter, daughter of former President Jimmy Carter, was arrested along with Abbie Hoffman and others as they were protesting recruiting activities of the Central Intelligence Agency on the Amherst campus of the University of Massachusetts.

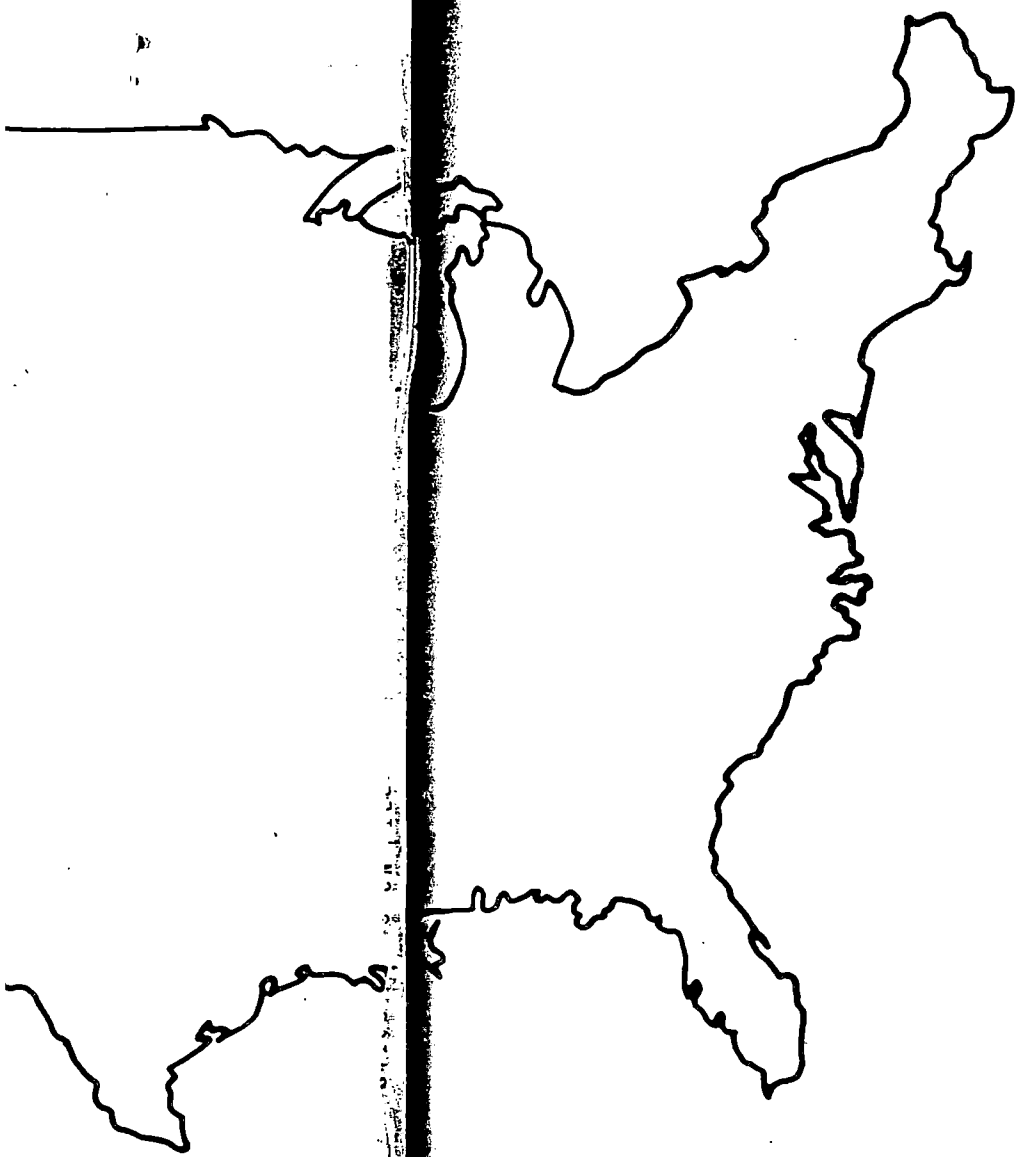
**1987** • The U.S. House approved a $20-billion clean-water bill that included funds to clean up Boston Harbor. Brockton boxer Marvin Hagler lost his World Middleweight Championship by decision to "Sugar" Ray Leonard in a title fight held at Caesar's Palace. Governor Michael S. Dukakis prepared to battle other Democratic hopefuls in the 1988 round of presidential primaries.



*FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS* ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

# AMERICA THE QUOTABLE

*Mike Edelhart and James Tinen*



**Facts On File Publications**
460 Park Avenue South
New York, N.Y. 10016

short time, the city had developed a brawling, pugnacious, and laissez-faire character it has never lost."

Jules Witcover and Richard Cohen
*A Heartbeat Away*
1974

* * *

"All the way back to the first of Baltimore County's post-Civil War political bosses, there stretched an unbroken line of Democratic succession, older than some of the royal houses of Europe and, in its way, equally adept at plunder."

Jules Witcover and Richard Cohen
*A Heartbeat Away*
1974

* * *

"... Baltimore—the state's only city of any importance—remained Maryland's unchallenged capital of political vertigo, a place where even orthodox political activities seemed to be conducted before a fun-house mirror. Even by Maryland standards the city stood alone. It even had its own accent—or accents—and it was the city that saw no future in Babe Ruth, that horrified even Edgar Allan Poe, and whose major literary figures, H.L. Mencken and Ogden Nash, were eccentrics. The city was forever playing the role of dead-end kid."

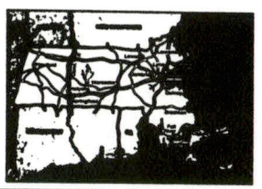
Jules Witcover and Richard Cohen
*A Heartbeat Away*
1974

* * *

"And Ross, Cockburn, and Cochran too,
And many a bloody villain more,
Swore with their bloody savage crew
That they would plunder Baltimore."

"The Battle of Baltimore"
Folk song from the War of 1812

# *MASSACHUSETTS*



Capital: Boston
Entered the union (with rank): Feb. 6, 1788 (6)
State motto: *Ense petit placidam sub libertate quietem* (By the sword we seek peace, but peace only under liberty)
State flower: Mayflower
State bird: Chickadee
State song: "All Hail to Massachusetts"
State tree: American elm
Nicknames: Bay State, Old Colony State
Origin of state name: From a pair of Algonquin Indian words meaning "great mountain place"

Though small in size, Massachusetts looms large in the development of American democracy and ideas. The state's principal export to the rest of the country has always been leaders and ideas. From its earliest days Massachusetts has been the place where the concepts that are now common in American life were enunciated and first put into practice. From Cotton Mather to John Kennedy, the pronouncements of Massachusetts politicians, preachers and scholars have carried a little more weight than those from anywhere else.

Massachusetts got its name from Capt. John Smith, who explored its coast in 1614 and selected for a name the Algonquin phrase for what is now the Blue Hills Reservation at Milton. The area was settled by waves of European religious zealots or malcontents. First came the Pilgrims, who landed at Plymouth Rock by mistake—they were headed toward New York. Other equally steadfast groups followed and then fled inland at the slightest doctrinal or jurisdictional dispute with those already in residence. Some of these groups wandered far enough away to form their own New England colonies, which is why the entire region has, basically, a Massachusetts character.

The feistiness that marked Massachusetts settlers eventually turned against the English government. The American Revolution began at Lexington, following the tea protest in Boston Harbor. And Massachusetts thinkers such as Ralph Waldo Emerson and Henry David Thoreau began challenging the assumptions of the new nation almost as soon as it got started. The state has always been a hotbed of troublemakers.

It has also become known as the home of the stiff, proper Bostonian, a moneyed individual with a great sense of noblesse oblige and an overwhelming devotion to the past and the status quo. The Lodges, the Richardsons and other Boston families sent their starchy sons to serve the government and maintain the proper way of life. Oddly, the rebellious scions of Massachusetts have created the closest thing America has to a genuine aristocracy.

The wealth of history played out by Massachusetts people and in Massachusetts places has left behind a state that is as much a museum as a part of the modern world. History lies strewn across every Massachusetts road and highway. Many cities and towns in the state have witnessed great events, and the towns themselves often look like windows on the past. The eternal American images of Norman Rockwell, for instance, grew from the modern, but unchanging, Massachusetts town of Stockbridge.

Massachusetts people retain much of the feisty individuality that has characterized them from the beginning. Massachusetts was the only state to support George McGovern against Richard Nixon in 1972. Because of its importance as a port, Boston has become a deeply ethnic community with enclaves of Irish, Italian and Black Americans in their own communities that view each other and the Brahmin power structure with unabashed suspicion.

Massachusetts commerce today relies largely on high technology industries tied to the state's superb educational institutions. The old Massachusetts businesses such as textiles and paper still hold important roles but are being overtaken by growth in other areas.

## THE STATE

"The state has always been full of stimulating cross-winds. Life within its borders has never been conditioned by the slow swing of the seasons, the easy tilling of an abundant earth. Marooned on a rocky soil, Massachusetts men had to be ingenious to survive, and they early became skilled at devising shrewd 'notions,' commercial and intellectual."

Ray Bease
*Massachusetts*
1971 (A revision of the Federal Writers Project's 1937 volume)

* * *

"... its driving energy sparked always by independence and freedom of the spirit—can this be anywhere so strong, so fascinating, so enduring, as in Massachusetts?"

Pearl S. Buck
*America*
1971

* * *

"I carry with me from this state to that high and lonely office to which I now succeed more than fond memories and firm friendships. The enduring qualities of Massachusetts—the common threads woven by the Pilgrim and the Puritan, the fisherman and the farmer, the Yankee and the immigrant—will not be and could not be forgotten in this nation's executive mansion. They are an indelible part of my life, my conviction, my view of the past, and my hopes in the future."

President John F. Kennedy
Speech to the Massachusetts Legislature
*New York Times*
Jan. 10, 1961

* * *

"Sir, I confess it: the first public love of my heart is the commonwealth of Massachusetts."

Josiah Quincy
Speech in House of Representatives
Jan. 14, 1811

## THE LANDSCAPE

"The first of December was covered with snow,
so was the turnpike from Stockbridge to Boston,
the Berkshires seemed dream-like on account of
that frosting,
with ten miles behind me and ten thousand more to
go"

James Taylor
"Sweet Baby James"
1970

## WAY OF LIFE

"If you like the taste of lobster stew,
served by a window with an ocean view,
If spending an evening you'll want to stay,
watching the moonlight on ole' Cape Cod Bay,
you're sure to fall in love with ole' Cape Cod,
In love with ole' Cape Cod"

Bette Midler
"Old Cape Cod"
1976

## HISTORY AND POLITICS

"Politics, as a practice, whatever its professions, had always been the systematic organization of hatreds, and Massachusetts politics had been as harsh as its climate."

Henry Adams
*The Education of Henry Adams*
1907

* * *

Thus out of small beginnings greater things have

been produced by His hand that made all things of nothing, and gives being to all things that are; and as one small candle may light a thousand, so the light here kindled hath shone unto many; yea, in some sort, to our whole Nation.

William Bradford
*History of Plymouth Plantation*
Drk

* * *

"The character of the inhabitants of this province [Mass.] is much improved in comparison of what it was—but Puritanism and a spirit of persecution is not yet totally extinguished."

Andrew Burnaby
*Travels Through the Middle Settlements of North America*
1775

* * *

"If we'd begun a few years ago shuttin' out folks that wudden't mind handin' a bomb to a king, they wudden't be enough people in Mattsachoosetts to make a quorum f'r th' Anti-Impeeryal S'ciety."

Finley Peter Dunne
*Observations by Mr. Dooley*
1902

* * *

"I am glad to see [as the crisis over slavery mounted] that the terror at disunion and anarchy is disappearing. Massachusetts, in its heroic day, had no government—was an anarchy. Every man stood on his own feet, was his own governor; and there was no breach of peace from Cape Cod to Mount Horse."

Ralph Waldo Emerson
Speech to Kansas Relief Mission
Cambridge, Mass.
Sept. 10, 1856

* * *

"I have heard it seriously proffered by a non-Irishman that the Boston Irish of the last century were the worst-treated white minority that has ever existed. Not only could they not find jobs but they were forbidden actual entrance into whole districts; people said, 'So long as we live, no Catholic shall enter here.' "

John Gunther
*Inside USA*
1947

* * *

"Happy it is for those who dared insult us, that their naked bones are not now piled up in an everlasting monument of Massachusetts' bravery."

John Hancock
Speech at memorial of Boston Massacre
1774

* * *

"IN The Name of God, Amen. We, whose names are underwritten, the Loyal Subjects of our dread Sovereign Lord King *James*, by the Grace of God, of *Great Britain, France,* and *Ireland,* King, *Defender of the Faith* &c. Having undertaken for the Glory of God, and Advancement of the Christian Faith, and the Honor of our King and Country, a Voyage to plant the first colony in the northern Parts of Virginia; Do by these Presents, solemnly and mutually in the Presence of God and one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil Body Politic, for our better Ordering and Preservation, and Furtherance of the Ends aforesaid; And by Virtue hereof do enact, constitute, and frame, such just and equal Laws, Ordinances, Acts, Constitutions, and Offices, from time to time, as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the general Good of the Colony; unto which we promise all due Submission and Obedience. In WITNESS whereof we have hereunto subscribed our names at *Cape Cod* the eleventh of *November,* in the Reign of our Sovereign Lord King *James* of *England, France,* and *Ireland,* the eighteenth and of *Scotland,* the fifty-fourth. *Anno Domini,* 1620."

The Mayflower Compact
1620

* * *

"The maritime history of Massachusetts, then, as distinct from that of America, ends with the passing of the clipper. 'T was a glorious ending! Never, in these United States, has the brain of man conceived, or the hand of man fashioned, so perfect a thing as the clipper ship. In her, the long-suppressed artistic impulse of a practical, hard-worked race burst into flower. The *Flying Cloud* was our Rheims, the *Sovereign of the Seas* our Parthenon, the *Lightning* our Amiens; but they were monuments carved from snow. For a brief moment of time they flashed their splendor around the world, then disappeared with the sudden completeness of the wild pigeon."

Samuel Eliot Morison
*The Maritime History of Massachusetts*
1921

* * *

"The seaports of Massachusetts have turned their backs to the element that made them great, save for play and for fishing; Boston alone is still in the deep-sea game. But all her modern docks and terminals and dredged channels will avail nothing if the spirit perish that led her founders to 'trye all ports.' "

Samuel Eliot Morison
*Maritime History of Massachusetts*
1921



* * *

"The land to me seemed a paradise: for in my eye, it was nature's masterpiece . . . [I]f this land be not rich, then the whole world is poor."

Thomas Morton
*New English Canaan*
1637

* * *

"If one honest man, in this state of Massachusetts, ceasing to hold slaves, were actually to withdraw from this copartnership, and be locked up in the county jail therefore, it would be the abolition of slavery in America."

Henry David Thoreau
"Civil Disobedience"
1849

* * *

"The inhabitants seem very religious, showing many outward and visible signs of an inward and spiritual grace: But though they wear in their faces the innocence of doves, you will find them in their dealings as subtle as serpents. Interest is their faith, money their God, and large possessions the only heaven they covet."

Edward Ward, writing in 1699
Quoted by Ray Bearse
*Massachusetts*
1971 (A revision of the Federal Writers Project's 1937 volume)

* * *

"I shall enter on no encomium of Massachusetts; she needs none. There she is. Behold her, and judge for yourselves. There is her history; the world knows it by heart. The past, at least, is secure. There is Boston and Concord and Lexington and Bunker Hill; and there they will remain forever."

Daniel Webster
Speech
January, 1830

* * *

"Puritan Massachusetts sturdily insisted that marriage and divorce were civil matters, permitted only justices of the peace to perform marriages until 1692, and granted some 40 divorces prior to that date (when a new charter cut down on Massachusetts independence)."

Bernard Weisberger
*American Heritage*
October, 1971

* * *

"Spring's arrival brought little of its usual inspiration to the province of Massachusetts in the year 1775. America's long-standing quarrel with England had reached a point where an explosion seemed imminent, and Massachusetts was the powder keg."

Richard Wheeler
*American Heritage*
April, 1971

* * *

"No slave-hunt in our borders—no pirate on our strand!
No fetters in the Bay State—no slave upon our land!"

John Greenleaf Whittier
"Massachusetts to Virginia"
1834

* * *

"The voice of Massachusetts! Of her free sons and daughters,
Deep calling unto deep aloud, the sound of many waters!
Against the burden of that voice what tyrant power shall stand?
No fetters in the Bay State! No slave upon her land!"

John Greenleaf Whittier
"Massachusetts to Virginia"
1843

# CITIES, TOWNS AND REGIONS

## Boston

"No doubt the Bostonian had always been noted for a certain chronic irritability—a sort of Bostonitis—which, in its primitive Puritan forms, seemed due to knowing too much of his neighbors, and thinking too much of himself."

Henry Adams
*The Education of Henry Adams*
1907

* * *

[On his birth in 1838]: "A hundred years earlier, such safeguards as his would have secured any young man's success; and although in 1838 their value was not very great compared with what they would have had in 1738, yet the mere accident of starting a 20th century career from a nest of associations so colonial—so troglodytic—as the First Church, the Boston State House, Beacon Hill, John Hancock and John Adams, Mount Vernon Street and Quincy, all crowding on 10 pounds of unconscious babyhood,

was so queer as to offer a subject of curious speculation to the baby long after he had witnessed the solution."

Henry Adams
*The Education of Henry Adams*
1907

* * *

"Boston was cool toward sons, whether prodigals or other, and needed much time to make up its mind what to do with them . . ."

Henry Adams
*The Education of Henry Adams*
1907

* * *

"Boston runs to brains as well as to beans and brown bread. But she is cursed with an army of cranks whom nothing short of a straitjacket or a swamp elm club will ever control."

William Cowper Brann
*Bartlett's Familiar Quotations*
1914

* * *

[On author William Dean Howells' arrival in Boston in 1866]: "In the Western Reserve, where he had lived, Boston was a sort of holy city. The people had largely come from New England, and those who cared for letters regarded Boston as many of the Bostonians regarded London. It was the hub of the universe, as Oliver Wendell Holmes had said, and the intellectual world revolved around it."

Van Wyck Brooks
*New England: Indian Summer*
1940

* * *

"There were many strains in the Boston mind, a warm and chivalrous Tory strain, a passionate strain of rebelliousness, a strain of religious fervor, a marked and even general disposition . . . to sacrifice at other than mundane altars. The town abounded in quixotic souls, 'unmanageable' Adamses, younger sons who refused the social uniform, visionaries, *exaltés*, nonconformists. The future was to provide them with their causes."

Van Wyck Brooks
*The Flowering of New England*
1937

* * *

"Indeed, nearly every house on the [Beacon] Hill has some precious association with letters or art."

Abbie Farwell Brown
*Christian Science Monitor*
Dec. 23, 1923

* * *

"To work Boston fashion means, in the United States, to do anything with perfect precision and without words."

Michael Chevalier
*Society, Manners and Politics in the United States*
1839

* * *

"[When I first saw Boston] the air was so clear, the houses were so bright and gay; the sign boards were painted in such gaudy colors; the gilded letters were so very golden, the bricks were so very red, the stone was so very white, the blinds and area railings were so very green, the knobs and plates upon the street doors so marvelously bright and twinkling; and all so slight and unsubstantial in appearance—that every thoroughfare in the city looked exactly like the scene in a pantomime."

Charles Dickens
*American Notes*
1842

* * *

"The people of Boston are puritans, grave, of extreme austerity of behavior, they never laugh. According to their laws a heavy fine is imposed, and even, for repeated offenses, imprisonment, for singing or playing cards or frequenting taverns on Sunday."

Denis-Jean Dobouchet, French volunteer in the Continental Army
Quoted by Morris Bishop
*American Heritage*
1966

* * *

"We say the cows laid out Boston. Well, there are worse surveyors."

Ralph Waldo Emerson
"The Conduct of Life: Wealth"
1860

* * *

"Don't speak the naked truth—
What's naked is uncouth;
It may go in Duluth—
But not in Boston . . .
Therefore, when all is said,
Life is so limit-ed,
You find, unless you're dead
You never get ahead in Boston."

Ira Gershwin
"The Back Bay Polka"
1946

* * *



"Boston upper zones
Are changing social habits,
And I hear the Cohns
Are taking up the Cabots."

Ira Gershwin
"Love Is Sweeping the Country"
1931

* * *

"Boston State-House is the hub of the solar system. You couldn't pry that out of a Boston man, if you had the tire of all creation straightened out for a crowbar."

Oliver Wendell Holmes
*The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table*
1858

* * *

"Full of crooked little streets; but I tell you Boston has opened and kept open more turnpikes that lead straight to free thought and free speech and free deeds than any other city of live men or dead men."

Oliver Wendell Holmes
*The Professor at the Breakfast Table*
1860

* * *

"And did not indeed the small happy accidents of the disappearing Boston exhale in a comparatively sensible manner the warm breath of history, the history of something as against the history of nothing?"

Henry James
*The American Scene*
1907

* * *

"There would be no Boston Red Sox, for example, if there were no Charles River. Think about it. John Winthrop and the first Bostonians picked the Charles because it offered easy access and the possibility of a quick getaway."

Charles Kuralt
*Signature*
1981

* * *

"Parking spaces luxuriate like civic sandpiles in the heart of Boston."

Robert Lowell
*For the Union Dead*
1964

* * *

"Hog a whole house on Boston's
hardly passionate Marlborough Street,'
where even the man
scavenging filth in the back alley trash cans,
has two children, a beach wagon, a helpmate,
and is a 'Young Republican.' "

Robert Lowell
"Memories of West Street and Lepke"
*Life Studies*
1958

* * *

"Darkness has called to darkness, and disgrace
Elbows about our windows in this planned
Babel of Boston where our money talks
And multiplies the darkness of a land."

Robert Lowell
"The Plane Tree by the Water"
*Lord Weary's Castle*
1946

* * *

"Other American colleges have campuses, but Harvard has always had and always will have her Yard of grass and trees and youth and old familiar ghosts."

David McCord
*About Boston*
1975

* * *

"It comes at the close of evening—usually near a fruit store or a flower shop—just when the office buildings pour their life stream into the streets and people for the moment seem uniformly gay and animated and kindly, and the lights come on with a special brightness and twinkle. This above all is the time not only to talk about but to walk about Boston."

David McCord
*About Boston*
1975

* * *

"By reason of her long, deep-channeled, and intricate harbor, Boston is a riparian city without really enjoying in the larger sense an actual outlook on the ocean; and because of this fact we sometimes forget that she is a seaport city first of all. New York is so very nearly encircled by ships and tugs and barges and ferries, and San Francisco so plainly indented by the Pacific, that we think of them in the maritime sense first and last. Many of us in Boston today can and do go about our business without so much as a sight of any part of the waterfront for months at a time. We know that the waterfront is there."

David McCord
*About Boston*
1948

* * *

"The Boston Custom House—the work of Ammi Young—was the first-magnitude star in the galaxy of Boston's Greek revival buildings. The monolithic columns weigh 42 tons each. It stood, in 1849, facing the waterfront, but its original charm is entirely lost today under the great tower rising above it. A few of its inner columns now form a kind of modern Stonehenge out in Franklin Park."

David McCord
*About Boston*
1948

* * *

"Marriage . . . is a damnably serious business, particularly around Boston."

John Phillips Marquand
*The Late George Apley*
1937

* * *

"Yet the old charm lingers on. You will find it in the lovely old red brick homes of Beacon Hill, with cobblestoned Acorn Street and Louisburg Square, where a little green park is ringed by stately 19th century houses and gas lampposts."

Neal R. Peirce
*The New England States of America*
1976

* * *

"The Bostonians are really, as a race, far inferior in point of anything beyond mere talent to any other set upon the continent of North America. They are decidedly the most servile imitators of the English it is possible to conceive."

Edgar Allan Poe
Letter
Feb. 4, 1849

* * *

"In the middle of the 19th century the center of publishing and intellectual influence in the United States was still Boston."

Barbara Rotundo
*American Heritage*
February, 1971

* * *

"Boston is a moral and intellectual nursery always busy applying first principles to trifles."

George Santayana
Quoted by Daniel Cory
*Santayana: The Later Years*
1963

* * *

"In Boston they ask, How much does he know? In New York, How much is he worth? In Philadelphia, who were his parents?"

Mark Twain
*What Paul Bourget Thinks Of Us*
1899

* * *

"Boston in 1775 was no democratic Garden of Eden. There were many who believed in sharp distinctions in wealth, power, and privilege. There were unfree servants, traders in black gangs. There were rum shops, prostitutes, and violent street gangs. But there were no leftover people. If a man wanted work, he could find work, and by working he could support himself and his family according to the standards of decency for his day. One thing is clear. Boston was not then, as it is now, a giant factory for the manufacture of left-out people."

Sam Bass Warner Jr.
*The American Experiment*
1975

* * *

"I remember Boston as a quiet effect, as something a little withdrawn, as a place standing aside from the throbbing interchange of East and West."

H.G. Wells
"The Future in America"
1906

* * *

"There broods over the real Boston an immense effect of finality. One feels in Boston, as one feels in no other part of the States, that the intellectual movement has ceased."

H.G. Wells
"The Future in America"
1906

* * *

"The common, significant fact in all these cases [Boston, and other cities that enshrine the past] is this, a blindness to the crude splendor of the possibilities of America now, to the tragic greatness of the unheeded issues that blunder towards solution. Frankly, I grieve over Boston—Boston throughout the world—as a great waste of leisure and energy, as a frittering away of moral and intellectual possibilities."

H.G. Wells
"The Future in America"
1906

## Cape Cod

"So it was that the canal [separating Cape Cod from the mainland] had a great symbolic meaning for our bunch—a frontier between mainland reality and the mystic fantasy of the Cape. A moat, as it were, separating schools and jobs and responsibilities and troubles from our sandy make-believe-land, where fried clams and lobsters and steamers awaited; where the waters of the bay were as warm as a bath; where booming surf and low-tide flats and a white cottage in the pines would make everything all right."

Charles N. Barnard
*The Winter People*
1973

* * *

"We'll never get the old town [Provincetown] back. It makes me bitter. If the old-timers could come back to life, I don't know what they'd think. There was one nice old place with a beautiful lawn and beautiful Cape Cod garden with zinnias. What happened? They filled the lawn with concrete slabs then let a caricature artist work there. Took out the Cape Cod windows, put in store windows. Take that place across from the Methodist church . . . they painted it an *off-pink!*"

Charles N. Barnard
*The Winter People*
1973

* * *

"Since Thoreau's visit [the early 19th century], the peninsula has been largely given over to the summer holiday regime, but that regime ends at the outer beach. Those who go in search of Thoreau's Cape will find it if they use their eyes. A hundred years of warring with the gales and the breakers, a hundred years of struggle with the tides have passed over the rampart wall and made their natural changes, but it still fronts the unappeased, the insatiable sea with an earthly strength of sand itself taken from the waves . . . [it is] a noble world . . ."

Henry Beston
Introduction to Henry David Thoreau's *Cape Cod*
1951

* * *

"A first glimpse of the great outer beach of Cape Cod is one of the most memorable experiences in all America. As one looks from the height of the earth-cliff which there confronts and halts the North Atlantic, it is the immense and empty plain of ocean which first seizes on the imagination, the ocean seen as one of the splendors of earth, and ever reflecting the mood of the season and the day. One may gaze at a mirror of summer blue ending at an horizon taut as a gleaming line; one may stare down into a vast and leaden turbulence of storm roaring ashore under violence of the sky."

Henry Beston
Introduction to Henry David Thoreau's *Cape Cod*
1951

* * *

"Animal life had disappeared [in winter] into the chill air, the heavy, lifeless sand. On the surface, nothing remains of the insect world. That multiplicity of insect tracks, those fantastic ribbons which grasshoppers, promenading flies, spiders, and beetles printed on the dunes as they went about their hungry and mysterious purposes, have come to an end in this world and left it all the poorer. Those trillions of unaccountable lives, those crawling, buzzing, intense presences which nature created to fulfill some unknown purpose or perhaps simply to satisfy a whim for a certain sound or a moment of exquisite color, where are they now, in this vast world, silent save for the somber thunder of the surf and the rumble of the wind in the porches of the ears?"

Henry Beston
*The Outermost House*
1928

* * *

"When we think of the beach on Cape Cod, we mean the vast expanse of the back shore—the back side, as they call it here—facing the Atlantic. The gentler side, nestled in the curve of the arm of the Cape, is never the beach; it is always the bay. And, though both are built of sand and both are subject [to] the rhythm of the tides, yet they are utterly different. Even the life upon their shores is different; horseshoe crabs and scallops, oysters and clams cannot be found along the Atlantic at low water; they require the shelter of the bay."

Claire Leighton
*Where Land Meets Sea*
1954

* * *

" 'Let's go down to the beach,' everyone says all summer long. But it is the visitors who say this. Not often do you see the real Cape Codders here. They know too much about this mighty mass of water and carry within them unwilling memories. Sometimes, after the summer people have left, they will go—especially at the height of a storm. But they hold a strange proprietary respect for this Atlantic and are reluctant to share it with outsiders."

Claire Leighton
*Where Land Meets Sea*
1954

* * *

"When I graduated from being classified as a summer person (I do not leave until November), I felt as if I had won the Medal of Honor. . . . I state without reservation that courteous, thoughtful, sensible visitors always find a welcome. But those who come and strew garbage along the roads, drop small kittens as they leave, pile up beer cans on the beautiful

beaches, walk barefoot in the stores and drive 50 miles an hour on the narrow streets build up an image of invasion Cape Codders do not like. The typical Cape remark is, 'You must meet the Careys. Of course they are summer people but they are the nicest couple—and someday they want to cross the bridge for good."

Gladys Taber
*My Own Cape Cod*
1971

* * *

"The caste system on the Cape is simple. If your ancestors were here, you belong to the elite. Some people who have lived here all their lives and raised their children here may be an integral part of Cape society, but someone eventually says they come from Boston or Springfield. They are from across the bridge. A third category consists of people who spend much of the year here but go south with the birds to escape the harsh winter. Then there are the summer people."

Gladys Taber
*My Own Cape Cod*
1971

* * *

"The Cape sunlight has a clarity I have never seen anywhere else. Perhaps the vast expanse of ocean on all sides and the countless small salt ponds may reflect extra light which woods and fields inland swallow up. It is not a hard diamond-like light but reminds me of melted crystal (if that could be)."

Gladys Taber
*My Own Cape Cod*
1971

* * *

"We met with one of these wreckers [scavengers],—a regular Cape Cod man, with whom we parleyed, with a bleached and weather-beaten face, within whose wrinkles I distinguished no particular feature. It was like an old sail endowed with life,—a hanging-cliff of weather-beaten flesh,—like one of the clay boulders which occurred in that sandbank. He had on a hat which had seen salt water, and a coat of many pieces and colors, though it was mainly the color of the beach, as if it had been sanded."

Henry David Thoreau
*Cape Cod*
1855

* * *

"The time must come when this coast will be a place of resort for those New Englanders who really wish to visit the seaside. At present it is wholly unknown to the fashionable world, and probably it will never be agreeable to them."

Henry David Thoreau
*Cape Cod*
1855

* * *

"A man may stand here and put all America behind him."

Henry David Thoreau
*Cape Cod*
1855

* * *

"Cape Cod is the bared and bended arm of Massachusetts: the shoulder is at Buzzard's Bay; the elbow, or crazy bone, at Cape Mallebarre; the wrist at Truro; and the sandy fist at Provincetown—behind which the state stands on her guard, with her back to the Green Mountains, and her feet planted on the floor of the ocean, like an athlete protecting her Bay,—boxing with northeast storms, and, ever and anon, heaving up her Atlantic adversary from the lap of earth—ready to thrust forward her other fist, which keeps guard the while upon her breast at Cape Ann."

Henry David Thoreau
*Cape Cod*
1855

* * *

"The people who are genuinely in love with it [Cape Cod] are Yankees who have been there for several generations. Other people *say* they've fallen in love with the Cape, usually soon after moving there. They are generally retired people writing home to friends in Cleveland telling them how happy they are on the Cape. I question this. I think it's a very boring place to be."

Kurt Vonnegut
Quoted by Charles N. Barnard
*The Winter People*
1973

* * *

"The first settlers in Sandwich came 'to worship God and make money'—not a bad combination if done honestly on both counts. Sandwich men have never been known to shirk their responsibilities in either regard, at times with a vengeance."

Donald Wood
*Cape Cod: A Guide*
1973

* * *

"Named for Elder William Brewster [Pilgrim father] 'for fear he would be forgotten else'—so wrote Thoreau as he hurried through the town. We fear that Thoreau completely missed the considerable charm of Brewster; perhaps all its captains were at sea during his brief visit."

Donald Wood
*Cape Cod: A Guide*
1973

* * *

"Provincetown—the first and last frontier on the Cape—hasn't been tamed as yet! There is no place quite like it anywhere, an unending melodrama unfolding on the sunny sands of the town. Everyone awaits the next curtain to see what Provincetowners will do for an encore."

Donald Wood
*Cape Cod: A Guide*
1973

## Concord

"By the rude bridge that arched the flood,
Their flag to April's breeze unfurled,
Here once the embattled farmers stood
and fired the shot heard round the world."

Ralph Waldo Emerson
"Concord Hymn"
1837

* * *

"Walden Pond was clear and beautiful, as usual. It tempted me to bathe; and though the water was thrillingly cold, it was like the thrill of a happy death. Never was there such transparent water as this. . . . If I were to be baptized, it should be in this pond; but then one would not wish to pollute it by washing off his sins into it."

Nathaniel Hawthorne
*American Notebooks*
1932

* * *

"It may well be called Concord—the river of peace and quietness; for it is certainly the most unexcitable and sluggish stream that ever loitered imperceptibly towards its eternity—the sea."

Nathaniel Hawthorne
*Mosses from an Old Manse*
1846

* * *

[Concord]: "The biggest little place in America."

Henry James
*The American Scene*
1904

* * *

"[the Concord River] draws along the woods and orchards and the field with the ruins of [illegible]

domesticated cat who rubs against the family and the furniture."

Henry James
*The American Scene*
1904

* * *

"What does our Concord culture amount to? There is in this town, with a very few exceptions, no taste for the best or for very good books even in English literature, whose words all can read and spell."

Henry David Thoreau
*Walden*
1854

* * *

"I have traveled a good deal in Concord . . ."

Henry David Thoreau
*Walden*
1854

## Martha's Vineyard

"Every Nantucket fanatic knows that greed and real-estate speculation have turned Cape Cod into Calcutta-by-the-Sea, just as he knows that Martha's Vineyard is a nice place if you like the Pennsylvania countryside. 'It's very pretty over there—sort of like the Pennsylvania Dutch country—but I could never find the ocean,' a friend told me last summer on returning from the Vineyard after a two-day visit."

Russell Baker
*New York Times*
June 13, 1982

* * *

"A Vineyarder seems to require lofty hills to climb and look out from, as if still hoping as the pilots did in old times to catch first sight of ships needing pilotage into the port of Boston. He likes descending slopes into good pasturage and farming country walled with weathered and lichened stone lifted out of the earth a couple of centuries ago. He is accustomed to brooks, which he likes to call rivers, and points to old mill dams as proof."

Henry Beetle Hough
*New York Times*
June 13, 1982

* * *

"The better part of my life is spent on two islands: Martha's Vineyard and Manhattan. It is difficult to believe that the former is four times as large as the latter. But so it is. . . . Manhattan, for all its splendors and wonders, reduces us by means of relativity to the size of insects in both body and spirit. The Vineyard, conversely, places us again in proper perspective to

our battered human dignity. Manhattan takes my breath away. The Vineyard gives it back."

Garson Kanin
*On the Vineyard* (anthology)
1980

* * *

"Somerset Maugham, asked to describe life on Martha's Vineyard, declared, 'Well, there's *ebsolutely* [sic] nothing to do and *ebsolutely* no time to do it!"

Garson Kanin
*On the Vineyard* (anthology)
1980

* * *

"I don't like cocktail parties anywhere, and on the Vineyard I like them even less. The fault's my own. I have illusions about the Vineyard. I think of it as an oasis for recollecting in tranquillity, as a spot for getting away from urban artificialities. I've spent 25 summers on the Vineyard, so I should know better, but the island's beauty sustains the illusions and they just won't go away. On the Vineyard, cocktail parties strike me as faintly sacrilegious, especially since they take place in the late afternoon. . . . It's then that, up-island, where I have a place, I can watch the sun begin its slow descent into the waters of Menemsha Bight, shedding fire on the Elizabeth Islands, fire that pales the wheeling beams of the Gay Head lighthouse; well after the sun has dipped below the horizon, the sky is left aglow—by whom, by what?—with a lingering aftermath of unknown colors arranged in unknown patterns."

Daniel Lang
*On the Vineyard* (anthology)
1980

* * *

"Mostly I love the soft collision here [Vineyard Haven, Martha's Vineyard] of harbor and shore, the subtly haunting briny quality that all small towns have when they are situated on the sea."

William Styron
*On the Vineyard* (anthology)
1980

* * *

"When I think of the Vineyard, my ankles feel good—bare, airy, lean. Full of bones. I go barefoot there in recollection, and the island as remembered becomes a medley of pedal sensations: the sandy rough planks of Dutchers Dock; the hot sidewalks of Oak Bluffs, followed by the wall-to-wall carpeting of the liquor store; the pokey feel of an accelerator on a naked sole; the hurtful little pebbles of Menemsha Beach and the also hurtful half-buried rocks of Squibnocket . . ."

John Updike
*On the Vineyard* (anthology)

## Nantucket

"Just getting there [Nantucket] is an adventure. There's a quixotic car ferry that comes in two or three times a day when it isn't broken down and everybody's in the mood to make the trip and the weather isn't acting up, but naturally they can never fit you on when you want to go. . . . When you finally arrive you feel faraway, you feel you've really gotten *someplace*, you feel you've survived an adventure. Nantucket evenings are spent listening to tales comic and hair-raising about getting there, and when we get there we are proud of ourselves. It must be the way the pioneers felt when they finally got to Oregon."

Russell Baker
*New York Times*
June 13, 1982

* * *

"On a deep winter night with all the visitors gone, stars glittering above like diamonds against black velvet, wind howling through wires and naked trees, you can walk the streets [of Nantucket] and feel like a passenger on a great abandoned ocean liner far out in the North Atlantic, outward bound toward God knows where. That's some feeling. And you can hear majestic thunder from the beach as the ocean claws the land away, pounding and pounding, with nobody there to book it on charges of trespassing."

Russell Baker
*New York Times*
June 13, 1982

* * *

"Geologists assert that Nantucket has 'the most remarkable terminal moraine anywhere in the world.' The last glaciers, feeling the rise in temperature from the Gulf Stream when they hit the New York area, started to melt, releasing vast masses of ice, earth, and stone. As these tons of debris-loaded ice stumbled east over the hills of what was then a vast coastal plain, they dumped their load. The melt water raised the sea level and what land was not drowned became Nantucket, Martha's Vineyard, and Cape Cod."

Patricia Coffin
*Nantucket*
1971

* * *

"For this was an island that was once, and for almost a hundred years held the honor of being, the greatest whaling center in the world (surpassing even England who long ruled the waves). . . . But then came the decline. . . . So rapid was the decline that by 1870 the town was an empty shell. Houses had no market value; no taxes were collected; and the island was



what it had been 30 years before. In retrospect it is fortunate that the decline was so swift and thorough. For the island was unable to experience even a small measure of the industrial revolution and the accompanying Victorian architecture that swept across the mainland. Now, much like Brigadoon, the island has returned off the coast of America after an absence of almost a hundred years."

Robert Gambee
*Nantucket Island*
1978

* * *

"Have you ever been to Nantucket? And when you got home did your friends ask you how you enjoyed the Cape? Or maybe they told you about a relative of theirs who used to spend the summer on the Vineyard too. It's interesting how little known Nantucket really is. Yet one of its greatest treasures is its isolation. Being just a little further away and harder to get to has protected it over the years."

Robert Gambee
*Nantucket Island*
1978

* * *

"You could cut the brackish winds with a knife
Here in Nantucket, and cast up the time
When the Lord God formed man from sea's slime
And breathed into his face the breath of life."

Robert Lowell
"The Quaker Graveyard in Nantucket"
*Lord Weary's Castle*
1946

* * *

"Nantucket! Take out your map and look at it. See what a real corner of the world it occupies; how it stands there, away offshore, more lonely than the Eddystone lighthouse. Look at it—a mere hillock, and elbow of sand; all beach without a background. There is more sand there than you would use in twenty years as a substitute for blotting paper."

Herman Melville
*Moby Dick*
1851

## Western Massachusetts

"In Western Massachusetts,
I could almost feel the frontier
crack and disappear.
Edwards thought the world would end there."

Robert Lowell
"Jonathan Edwards in Western Massachusetts"
*For the Union Dead*

"Most of the smart ones [small town residents] get away."

Edith Wharton
*Ethan Frome*
1911

* * *

"I was struck by the contrast between the vitality of the climate and the deadness of the community."

Edith Wharton
*Ethan Frome*
1911

* * *

"Day by day, after the December snows were over, a blazing blue sky poured down torrents of light and air on the white landscape [of Western Massachusetts], which gave them back in an intenser glitter."

Edith Wharton
*Ethan Frome*
1911

## Other Towns and Cities

### *Gloucester:*

And I think of the fleet that sailed
From the lovely Gloucester shore,
I think of the fleet that sailed
And came back nevermore;
My eyes are filled with tears,
and my heart is numb with woe—
It seems as if 'twere yesterday,
And it all was long ago!

Thomas Bailey Aldrich
*The Voice of the Sea*
1907

### *Marblehead:*

"Marblehead is a yachting center; its harbor gay with snowy winged craft; its streets uneven, winding, full of surprises, and its back country appealing from its variety of roadsides."

Wallace Nutting
*Massachusetts Beautiful*
1923

### *Plymouth:*

"The rock [Plymouth Rock] underlies all America: it only crops out here."

*Quincy:*

"Quincy had always been right, for Quincy represented a moral principle—the principle of resistance to Boston."

Henry Adams
*The Education of Henry Adams*
1907

* * *

"Yet he [Adams] felt also that Quincy was in a way inferior to Boston, and that socially Boston looked down on Quincy. The reason was clear enough even to a five-year-old child. Quincy had no Boston style."

Henry Adams
*The Education of Henry Adams*
1907

*Stockbridge:*

"I want to tell you about the town of Stockbridge, Massachusetts; they got three stop signs, two police officers and one police car."

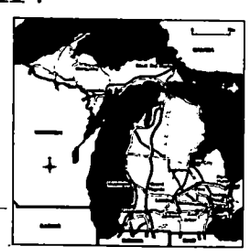
Arlo Guthrie
"Alice's Restaurant"
1966

*Worcester:*

"All the buildings [of Worcester] looked as if they had been built and painted that morning, and could be taken down on Monday morning with very little trouble. . . . The clean cardboard colonnades had no more perspective than a Chinese bridge on a teacup, and appeared equally well calculated for use."

Charles Dickens
*American Notes*
1842

# *MICHIGAN*



Capital: Lansing
Became a territory: Jan. 11, 1805
Entered the union (with rank): Jan. 26, 1837 (26)
State motto: *Si quaeris peninsulam amoenam circumspice* (If you seek a pleasant peninsula, look around you)
State flower: Apple blossom
State bird: Robin
State song: "Michigan, My Michigan"
State tree: White pine
Nicknames: Great Lake State, Wolverine State
Origin of state name: From two Indian words meaning "great lake"

Michigan is the heart of the Great Lakes region; four of the five lakes touch it. It also stands among the nation's foremost industrial centers: Detroit, the motor city, remains America's automotive center despite recent declines in that industry's vigor. Michigan ranks second in American copper and iron mining. Technology even affects the state's geography: The finger-like upper peninsula is connected to the rest of Michigan only by the spectacular Mackinac Bridge, at five miles one of the longest suspension spans in the world; farther north, Michigan's Sault Ste. Marie Canals link Lakes Superior and Huron.

With most of its industry concentrated in the southern third, Michigan remains surprisingly rural, for all its commercial clout. More than 11,000 inland lakes dot the state's countryside; there are more than 36,000 miles of streams. As a result, tourism is very important in Michigan, especially fishing.

Michigan has been heavily influenced by the French. The area was first explored by Frenchman Etienne Brulé in 1618. Marquette, Jolliet, La Salle and other French adventurers followed, and the first permanent settlement was established at Sault Ste. Marie in 1668.

It was not until 1763 that Great Britain took over the Michigan peninsula, only to give it up to the United States after the Revolution. British and American troops and various Indian allies battled over the state, however, right through the War of 1812.

## THE STATE

"When all is said and done with Michigan, the whole may be something less than the sum of the parts. . . . With its wealth and opportunities, Michigan should never have let [the] Detroit [riot of 1967] 'happen.' or for that matter let Lansing or Flint happen quite the way they did. In race, housing, regional government, Michigan is a disappointment. For too long men of much wealth but little breeding or culture held the ultimate power in Michigan, and even today one senses a lack of strong forces challenging the power system. . . . Why aren't Michiganders fighting and dreaming and thinking more about their future? They are certainly more awake than they were a decade ago—events saw to that. But are they awake enough?"

Neal R. Peirce
*The Megastates of America*
1972



## THE LANDSCAPE

"First there was the ice; two miles high, hundreds of miles wide, and many centuries deep. It came down from the darkness at the top of the world, and it hung down over the eaves, and our Michigan country lay along the line of the overhang."

Bruce Catton
*American Heritage*
February, 1972

* * *

"One of the interesting things to see up here is the canal at Sault Ste. Marie, whose big locks connect Lake Superior with the lower lakes. The Soo, as everybody calls it, is a lively little city during the eight months of the navigation season; it boasts that its canal handles more traffic than Panama and Suez combined. All day and all night the ships—enormous things, 500 and 600 feet in length—come majestically in from the upper lake, floating high above your head, sinking slowly as the water burbles out of the locks, and then gliding off for the great industrial region hundreds of miles to the south. In an average day, 80 or 90 of them will go through."

Bruce Catton
*American Panorama*
1947

* * *

"The boats came up from Lake Erie ports, Cleveland and Buffalo and Sandusky, and they gave a theatrical touch to the whole business. Lake Erie is beautiful and shallow and treacherous, with a capacity for whipping up unexpected storms that would bother any mariner who ever lived, although mostly it is pleasant enough; and the old side-wheelers came paddling down its length, usually in the middle of the night—it was nice sleeping, in a snug stateroom on one of those boats, with an air-conditioned wind coming in at the open porthole, and the wash of the paddle wheels beating a quiet rhythm in the darkness—and in the morning that boat came up the Detroit River, and the factories and pumping stations on the bank suddenly made you realize that man had taken over nature and was trying to make something out of it. Then, a little after breakfast time, the boat docked along the Detroit waterfront, and no city in America offered a more thrilling or exciting entrance."

Bruce Catton
*American Panorama*
1947

* * *

"The only state in the Union boasting a spare part."

Leonard Lanson Cline
*These United States*
1924

* * *

"Standing on the water bastion of Detroit, a pleasant landscape spread before the eye. The river, about half a mile wide, almost washed the foot of the stockade; and either bank was lined with the white Canadian cottages. The joyous sparkling of the bright blue water; the green luxuriance of the woods; the white dwellings, looking out from the foliage; and, in the distance, the Indian wigwams curling their smoke against the sky,—all were mingled in one broad scene of wild and rural beauty."

Francis Parkman
*The Conspiracy of Pontiac*
1851

* * *

"The lake country of Michigan handsome as a well-made woman, and dressed and jeweled."

John Steinbeck
*Travels with Charley*
1962

## HISTORY AND POLITICS

"Here, perhaps more clearly than in most places, can be seen the enormous increase in the speed of society's movement, the pressures that come when a society adjusted to one era is suddenly compelled to shape itself to an entirely new one, the torment of modern man torn by the astounding discovery that the things he makes have taken charge of his life. Living in memory of an interesting past and imagining himself to be relaxing in the warmth of a long afternoon, man finds himself facing a terrifying dawn—and it seems to be a little too much for him. Without intending anything of the kind, he discovers that he is involved in an enormous revolution, simply

...not the Massachusetts miracle... but the miracle that is Massachusetts...

Pg. 41: city upon a hill.

PS507
.N67
1989
v.1
WH

# The Norton Anthology of American Literature

THIRD EDITION

VOLUME 1

Nina Baym
UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS

Ronald Gottesman
UNIVERSITY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Laurence B. Holland
LATE OF THE JOHNS HOPKINS UNIVERSITY

David Kalstone
LATE OF RUTGERS, THE STATE UNIVERSITY OF NEW JERSEY

Francis Murphy
SMITH COLLEGE

Hershel Parker
UNIVERSITY OF DELAWARE

William H. Pritchard
AMHERST COLLEGE

Patricia B. Wallace
VASSAR COLLEGE

W • W • NORTON & COMPANY • *New York* • *London*

could not get to Ma-re Mount. Upon this island he stayed a month at least and was relieved by savages that took notice that mine host was a sachem[3] of Passonagessit, and would bring bottles of strong liquor to him and unite themselves into a league of brotherhood with mine host, so full of humanity are these infidels before those Christians.

From this place for England sailed mine host in a Plymouth ship (that came into the land to fish upon the coast) that landed him safe in England at Plymouth; and he stayed in England until the ordinary time for shipping to set forth for these parts, and then returned, no man being able to tax[4] him of anything.

But the worthies (in the meantime) hoped they had been rid of him.

* * *

c. 1635 1637

---

# JOHN WINTHROP
## 1588–1649

John Winthrop, the son of Adam Winthrop, a lawyer, and Anne Browne, the daughter of a tradesman, was born in Groton, England, on an estate which his father purchased from Henry VIII. It was a prosperous farm, and Winthrop had all the advantages which his father's social and economic position would allow. He went to Cambridge University for two years and married at the age of seventeen. It was probably at Cambridge University that Winthrop was exposed to Puritan ideas. Unlike Bradford and the Pilgrims, however, Winthrop was not a Separatist; that is, he wished to reform the national church from within, purging it of everything that harked back to Rome, especially the hierarchy of the clergy and all the traditional Catholic rituals. For a time Winthrop thought of becoming a clergyman himself, but instead he turned to the practice of law.

In the 1620s severe economic depression in England made Winthrop realize that he could not depend upon the support of his father's estate. The ascension of Charles I to the throne—who was known to be sympathetic to Roman Catholicism and impatient with Puritan reformers—was also taken as an ominous sign for Puritans, and Winthrop was not alone in predicting that "God will bring some heavy affliction upon the land, and that speedily." Winthrop came to realize the he could not antagonize the king by expressing openly the Puritan cause without losing all that he possessed. The only recourse seemed to be to obtain the king's permission to emigrate. In March of 1629 a group of enterprising merchants, all sympathetic believers, were able to get a charter from the Council for New England for land in the New World. They called themselves "The Company of Massachusetts Bay in New England."

From four candidates, Winthrop was chosen governor in October 1629; for the next twenty years most of the responsibility for the colony rested in his hands. On April 8, 1630, an initial group of some seven hundred emigrants sailed from England. The ship carrying Winthrop was called the *Arbella*. Somewhere in the middle of the Atlantic ocean Winthrop delivered his sermon A *Model of Christian Charity*. It set out clearly and eloquently the ideals of a harmonious Christian community,

3. Ruling chief.
4. Charge. Morton was successful more than once in having charges made against him by the Puritans dismissed.



and reminded all those on board that they would stand as an example to the world either of the triumph or else the failure of this Christian enterprise. When Cotton Mather wrote his history of New England some fifty years after Winthrop's death, he chose Winthrop as his model of the perfect earthly ruler. Although the actual history of the colony showed that Winthrop's ideal of a perfectly selfless community was impossible to realize in fact, Winthrop emerges from the story as a man of unquestioned integrity and deep humanity.

# A Model of Christian Charity[1]

I

### A MODEL HEREOF

God Almighty in His most holy and wise providence, hath so disposed of the condition of mankind, as in all times some must be rich, some poor, some high and eminent in power and dignity; others mean and in subjection.

### THE REASON HEREOF

First, to hold conformity with the rest of His works, being delighted to show forth the glory of His wisdom in the variety and difference of the creatures; and the glory of His power, in ordering all these differences for the preservation and good of the whole; and the glory of His greatness, that as it is the glory of princes to have many officers, so this great King will have many stewards, counting Himself more honored in dispensing His gifts to man by man than if He did it by His own immediate hands.

Secondly, that He might have the more occasion to manifest the work of His Spirit: first upon the wicked in moderating and restraining them, so that the rich and mighty should not eat up the poor, nor the poor and despised rise up against their superiors and shake off their yoke; secondly in the regenerate, in exercising His graces, in them, as in the great ones, their love, mercy, gentleness, temperance, etc., in the poor and inferior sort, their faith, patience, obedience, etc.

Thirdly, that every man might have need of other, and from hence they might be all knit more nearly together in the bonds of brotherly affection. From hence it appears plainly that no man is made more honorable than another or more wealthy, etc., out of any particular and singular respect to himself, but for the glory of his creator and the common good of the creature, man. Therefore God still reserves the property of these gifts to Himself as [in] Ezekiel 16.17. He there calls wealth His gold and His silver.[2] [In] Proverbs 3.9, he claims their service as His due, honor the Lord with thy riches etc.[3] All men being thus (by divine providence) ranked into two sorts, rich and poor;

1. The text is from Old South Leaflets, Old South Association, Old South Meetinghouse, Boston, Massachusetts, No. 207, edited by Samuel Eliot Morison. The original manuscript for Winthrop's sermon is lost; but a copy made during Winthrop's lifetime was published by the Massachusetts Historical Society in 1838.
2. "Thou hast also taken thy fair jewels of my gold and my silver, which I had given thee, and madest to thyself images of men, and didst commit whoredom with them."
3. "Honor the Lord with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase: so shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses burst out with new wine."

under the first are comprehended all such as are able to live comfortably by their own meanes duly improved; and all others are poor according to the former distribution.

There are two rules whereby we are to walk one towards another: justice and mercy. These are always distinguished in their act and in their object, yet may they both concur in the same subject in each respect; as sometimes there may be an occasion of showing mercy to a rich man in some sudden danger of distress, and also doing of mere justice to a poor man in regard of some particular contract, etc.

There is likewise a double law by which we are regulated in our conversation one towards another in both the former respects: the law of nature and the law of grace, or the moral law or the law of the Gospel, to omit the rule of justice as not properly belonging to this purpose otherwise than it may fall into consideration in some particular cases. By the first of these laws man as he was enabled so withal [is] commanded to love his neighbor as himself.[4] Upon this ground stands all the precepts of the moral law, which concerns our dealings with men. To apply this to the works of mercy, this law requires two things: first, that every man afford his help to another in every want or distress; secondly, that he performed this out of the same affection which makes him careful of his own goods, according to that of our Savior. Matthew: "Whatsoever ye would that men should do to you."[5] This was practiced by Abraham and Lot in entertaining the Angels and the old man of Gibeah.[6]

The law of grace or the Gospel hath some difference from the former, as in these respects: First, the law of nature was given to man in the estate of innocency; this of the Gospel in the estate of regeneracy.[7] Secondly, the former propounds one man to another, as the same flesh and image of God; this as a brother in Christ also, and in the communion of the same spirit and so teacheth us to put a difference between Christians and others. *Do good to all, especially to the household of faith:* Upon this ground the Israelites were to put a difference between the brethren of such as were strangers though not of Canaanites.[8] Third, the law of nature could give no rules for dealing with enemies, for all are to be considered as friends in the state of innocency, but the Gospel commands love to an enemy. Proof. If thine Enemy hunger, feed him; Love your Enemies, do good to them that hate you. Matthew: 5.44.

This law of the Gospel propounds likewise a difference of seasons and occasions. There is a time when a Christian must sell all and give to the poor, as they did in the Apostles' times.[9] There is a time also when a Christian (though they give not all yet) must give beyond their ability, as they of Macedonia,

4. Matthew 5.43; 19.19.
5. "All things therefore whatsoever ye would that men should do unto you even so do ye also unto them: for this is the law of the prophets" (Matthew 7.12).
6. Abraham entertains the angels in Genesis 18: "And the Lord appeared unto him in the plains of Mamre: and he sat in the tent door in the heat of the day; and he lifted up his eyes and looked, and, lo, three men stood by him: and when he saw them, he ran to meet them . . ." (Genesis 18.1–2). Lot was Abraham's nephew, and he escaped the destruction of the city of Sodom because he defended two angels who were his guests from a mob (Genesis 19.1–14). In Judges 19.16–21, an old citizen of Gibeah offered shelter to a traveling priest or Levite and defended him from enemies from a neighboring city.
7. Men lost their natural innocence when Adam fell; that state is called unregenerate. When Christ came to ransom man for Adam's sin, he offered salvation for those who believed in him and became regenerate, or saved.
8. One who lived in Canaan, the Land of Promise for the Israelites.
9. In Luke, Jesus tells a ruler who asks him what he must do to gain eternal life: "sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me" (Luke 18.22).



Corinthians: 2,8.[1] Likewise community of perils calls for extraordinary liberality, and so doth community in some special service for the Church. Lastly, when there is no other means whereby our Christian brother may be relieved in his distress, we must help him beyond our ability, rather than tempt God in putting him upon help by miraculous or extraordinary means.

This duty of mercy is exercised in the kinds, *giving, lending* and *forgiving.*—

*Quest.* What rule shall a man observe in giving in respect of the measure?

*Ans.* If the time and occasion be ordinary, he is to give out of his abundance. Let him lay aside as God hath blessed him. If the time and occasion be extraordinary, he must be ruled by them; taking this withal, that then a man cannot likely do too much, especially if he may leave himself and his family under probable means of comfortable subsistence.

*Objection.* A man must lay up for posterity, the fathers lay up for posterity and children and he "is worse than an infidel" that "provideth not for his own."

*Ans.* For the first, it is plain that it being spoken by way of comparison, it must be meant of the ordinary and usual course of fathers and cannot extend to times and occasions extraordinary. For the other place, the Apostle speaks against such as walked inordinately, and it is without question, that he is worse than a infidel who through his own sloth and voluptuousness shall neglect to provide for his family.

*Objection.* "The wise man's eyes are in his head" saith Salomon, "and foreseeth the plague,"[2] therefore we must forecast and lay up against evil times when he or his may stand in need of all he can gather.

*Ans.* This very argument Salomon useth to persuade to liberality, Ecclesiastes: "Cast thy bread upon the waters," and "for thou knowest not what evil may come upon the land."[3] Luke 6. "Make you friends of the riches of iniquity."[4] You will ask how this shall be? very well. For first he that gives to the poor, lends to the Lord and He will repay him even in this life an hundred fold to Him or his—The righteous is ever merciful and lendeth and his seed enjoyeth the blessing; and besides we know what advantage it will be to us in the day of account when many such witnesses shall stand forth for us to witness the improvement of our talent.[5] And I would know of those who plead so much for laying up for time to come, whether they hold that to be Gospel, Matthew 6.19: "Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth," etc.[6] If they acknowledge it, what extent will they allow it? if only to those primitive times, let them consider the reason whereupon our Saviour grounds it. The first is

1. "Moreover, brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God bestowed on the churches of Macedonia; how that in a great trial of affliction, the abundance of their joy and their deep poverty abounded unto the riches of their liberality. For to their power, I bear record, yea, and beyond their power they were willing of themselves; praying us with much entreaty that we would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowship of the ministering to the saints" (2 Corinthians 8.1–4).
2. Ecclesiastes 2.14. Solomon was the son of David and successor to David as king of all Israel.
3. "Cast thy bread upon the waters: for thou shalt find it after many days. Give a portion to seven, and also to eight; for thou knowest not what evil shall be upon the earth" (Ecclesiastes 11.1–2). Winthrop either makes his own translations from the Bible or uses the King James or Geneva versions; his quotations therefore differ occasionally from the King James version used in these notes.
4. The passage in Luke refers to the servant who, removed from his stewardship, resolves to be received in the houses of his master's debtors and cuts their bills in half. "And I say unto you. Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations" (Luke 16.9).
5. Originally a measure of money.
6. "Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal."

that they are subject to the moth, the rust, the thief. Secondly, they will steal away the heart; where the treasure is there will the heart be also. The reasons are of like force at all times. Therefore the exhortation must be general and perpetual, with always in respect of the love and affection to riches and in regard of the things themselves when any special service for the church or particular distress of our brother do call for the use of them; otherwise it is not only lawful but necessary to lay up as Joseph[7] did to have ready upon such occasions, as the Lord (whose stewards we are of them) shall call for them from us. Christ gives us an instance of the first, when he sent his disciples for the ass, and bids them answer the owner thus, the Lord hath need of him.[8] So when the tabernacle was to be built he sends to His people to call for their silver and gold, etc.; and yields them no other reason but that it was for His work. When Elisha comes to the widow of Sareptah and finds her preparing to make ready her pittance for herself and family, He bids her first provide for Him; he challengeth first God's part which she must first give before she must serve her own family.[9] All these teach us that the Lord looks that when He is pleased to call for His right in anything we have, our own interest we have must stand aside till His turn be served. For the other, we need look no further than to that of John 1: "He who hath this world's goods and seeth his brother to need and shuts up his compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him," which comes punctually to this conclusion: if thy brother be in want and thou canst help him, thou needst not make doubt, what thou shouldst do, if thou lovest God thou must help him.

*Quest.* What rule must we observe in lending?

*Ans.* Thou must observe whether thy brother hath present or probable, or possible means of repaying thee, if there be none of these, thou must give him according to his necessity, rather than lend him as he requires. If he hath present means of repaying thee, thou art to look at him not as an act of mercy, but by way of commerce, wherein thou art to walk by the rule of justice; but if his means of repaying thee be only probable or possible, then is he an object of thy mercy, thou must lend him, though there be danger of losing it, Deuteronomy 15.7: "If any of thy brethren be poor," etc., "thou shalt lend him sufficient."[1] That men might not shift off this duty by the apparent hazard, He tells them that though the year of Jubilee[2] were at hand (when he must remit it, if he were not able to repay it before) yet he must lend him and that cheerfully: "It may not grieve thee to give him" saith He; and because some might object; "why so I should soon impoverish myself and my family," he adds "with all thy work," etc;[3] for our Saviour, Matthew 5.42: "From him that would borrow of thee turn not away."

*Quest.* What rule must we observe in forgiving?

7. Joseph, the son of Jacob and Rachel, stored up the harvest in the seven good years before the famine (Genesis 41).
8. Matthew 21.5–7.
9. 1 Kings 17.8–24.
1. "If there be among you a poor man of one of thy brethren within any of thy gates in thy land which the Lord thy God giveth thee, thou shalt not harden thine heart, nor shut thine hand from thy poor brother: But thou shalt open thine hand wide unto him, and shalt surely lend him sufficient for his need, in that which he wanteth."
2. According to Mosaic law, every seventh year the lands would lie fallow, all work would cease, and all debts would be canceled. The Jubilee year concluded a cycle of seven sabbatical years.
3. "The seventh year, the year of release, is at hand; and thine eye be evil against thy poor brother, and thou givest him nought; and he cry unto the Lord against thee, and it be sin unto thee. Thou shalt surely give him, and thine heart shall not be grieved when thou givest unto him: because that for this thing the Lord thy God shall bless thee in all thy works, and in all that thou puttest thine hand unto" (Deuteronomy 15.9–10).



*Ans.* Whether thou didst lend by way of commerce or in mercy, if he have nothing to pay thee, [you] must forgive, (except in cause where thou has a surety or a lawful pledge) Deuteronomy 15.2. Every seventh year the creditor was to quit that which he lent to his brother if he were poor as appears—verse 8: "Save when there shall be no poor with thee." In all these and like cases, Christ was a general rule, Matthew 7.22: "Whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye the same to them also."

*Quest.* What rule must we observe and walk by in cause of community of peril?

*Ans.* The same as before, but with more enlargement towards others and less respect towards ourselves and our own right. Hence it was that in the primitive church they sold all, had all things in common, neither did any man say that which he possessed was his own. Likewise in their return out of the captivity, because the work was great for the restoring of the church and the danger of enemies was common to all, Nehemiah exhorts the Jews to liberality and readiness in remitting their debts to their brethren, and disposing liberally of his own to such as wanted, and stand not upon his own due, which he might have demanded of them.[4] Thus did some of our forefathers in times of persecution in England, and so did many of the faithful of other churches, whereof we keep an honorable remembrance of them; and it is to be observed that both in Scriptures and later stories of the churches that such as have been most bountiful to the poor saints, especially in these extraordinary times and occasions, God hath left them highly commended to posterity, as Zacheus, Cornelius, Dorcas, Bishop Hooper, the Cuttler of Brussells[5] and divers others. Observe again that the Scripture gives no caution to restrain any from being over liberal this way; but all men to the liberal and cheerful practice hereof by the sweetest promises; as to instance one for many, Isaiah 58.6: "Is not this the fast I have chosen to loose the bonds of wickedness, to take off the heavy burdens, to let the oppressed go free and to break every yoke, to deal thy bread to the hungry and to bring the poor that wander into thy house, when thou seest the naked to cover them. And then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thy health shall grow speedily, thy righteousness shall go before God, and the glory of the Lord shall embrace thee; then thou shalt call and the Lord shall answer thee" etc. [Verse] 10: "If thou pour out thy soul to the hungry, then shall thy light spring out in darkness, and the Lord shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones; thou shalt be like a watered garden, and they shalt be of thee that shall build the old waste places" etc. On the contrary, most heavy curses are laid upon such as are straightened towards the Lord and His people, Judges 5.[23]: "Curse ye Meroshe because ye came not to help the Lord," etc. Proverbs [21:13]: "He who shutteth his ears from hearing the cry of the poor, he shall cry and shall not be heard." Matthew 25: "Go ye cursed into everlasting fire" etc. "I was hungry and ye fed me not." 2 Corinthians 9.6: "He that soweth sparingly shall reap sparingly."

Having already set forth the practice of mercy according to the rule of God's law, it will be useful to lay open the grounds of it also, being the other part of

4. Nehemiah was sent by King Artaxerxes to repair the walls of the city of Jerusalem; he saved the city as governor when he persuaded those lending money to charge no interest, and to think first of the common good. See Nehemiah 3.
5. Christian martyrs.

the commandment, and that is the affection from which this exercise of mercy must arise. The apostle[6] tells us that this love is the fulfilling of the law, not that it is enough to love our brother and so no further; but in regard of the excellency of his parts giving any motion to the other as the soul to the body and the power it hath to set all the facilities on work in the outward exercise of this duty. As when we bid one make the clock strike, he doth not lay hand on the hammer, which is the immediate instrument of the sound, but sets on work the first mover or main wheel, knowing that will certainly produce the sound which he intends. So the way to draw men to works of mercy, is not by force of argument from the goodness or necessity of the work; for though this course may enforce a rational mind to some present act of mercy, as is frequent in experience, yet it cannot work such a habit in a soul, as shall make it prompt upon all occasions to produce the same effect, but by framing these affections of love in the heart which will as natively bring forth the other, as any cause doth produce effect.

The definition which the Scripture gives us of love is this: "Love is the bond of perfection." First, it is a bond or ligament. Secondly it makes the work perfect. There is no body but consists of parts and that which knits these parts together gives the body its perfection, because it makes each part so contiguous to others as thereby they do mutually participate with each other, both in strength and infirmity, in pleasure and pain. To instance in the most perfect of all bodies: Christ and His church make one body. The several parts of this body, considered apart before they were united, were as disproportionate and as much disordering as so many contrary qualities or elements, but when Christ comes and by His spirit and love knits all these parts to Himself and each to other, it is become the most perfect and best proportioned body in the world. Ephesians 4.16: "Christ, by whom all the body being knit together by every joint for the furniture thereof, according to the effectual power which is the measure of every perfection of parts," "a glorious body without spot or wrinkle," the ligaments hereof being Christ, or His love, for Christ is love (1 John 4.8). So this definition is right: "Love is the bond of perfection."

From hence we may frame these conclusions. 1. First of all, true Christians are of one body in Christ, 1 Corinthians 12.12, 27; "Ye are the body of Christ and members of their part." Secondly: The ligaments of this body which knit together are love. Third: No body can be perfect which wants its proper ligament. Fourth. All the parts of this body being thus united are made so contiguous in a special relation as they must needs partake of each other's strength and infirmity; joy and sorrow, weal and woe. 1 Corinthians 12.26: "If one member suffers, all suffer with it, if one be in honor, all rejoice with it." Fifth. This sensibleness and sympathy of each other's conditions will necessarily infuse into each part a native desire and endeavor to strengthen, defend, preserve and comfort the other.

To insist a little on this conclusion being the product of all the former, the truth hereof will appear both by precept and pattern. 1 John 3.10: "Ye ought to lay down your lives for the brethren." Galatians 6.2: "bear ye one another's burthens and so fulfill the law of Christ." For patterns we have that first of our Saviour who out of His good will in obedience to His father, becoming a part

6. St. Paul in his Epistle to the Romans 9.31.



of this body, and being knit with it in the bond of love, found such a native sensibleness of our infirmities and sorrows as He willingly yielded Himself to death to ease the infirmities of the rest of His body, and so healed their sorrows. From the like sympathy of parts did the apostles and many thousands of the saints lay down their lives for Christ. Again, the like we may see in the members of this body among themselves. Romans 9. Paul could have been contented to have been separated from Christ, that the Jews might not be cut off from the body. It is very observable what he professeth of his affectionate partaking with every member: "who is weak" saith he "and I am not weak? who is offended and I burn not;"[7] and again, 2 Corinthians 7.13. "therefore we are comforted because ye were comforted." Of Epaphroditus[8] he speaketh, Phil: 2.30. that he regarded not his own life to do him service. So Phoebe[9] and others are called the servants of the church. Now it is apparent that they served not for wages, or by constraint, but out of love. The like we shall find in the histories of the church in all ages, the sweet sympathy of affections which was in the members of this body one towards another, their cheerfulness in serving and suffering together, how liberal they were without repining, harborers without grudging and helpful without reproaching; and all from hence, because they had fervent love amongst them, which only make the practise of mercy constant and easy.

The next consideration is how this love comes to be wrought. Adam in his first estate[1] was a perfect model of mankind in all their generations, and in him this love was perfected in regard of the habit. But Adam rent himself from his creator, rent all his posterity all so one from another; whence it comes that every man is born with this principle in him, to love and seek himself only, and thus a man continueth 'til Christ comes and takes possession of the soul and infuseth another principle, love to God and our brother. And this latter having continual supply from Christ, as the head and root by which he is united, gets the predomining in the soul, so by little and little expels the former. 1 John 4.7. "love cometh of God and every one that loveth is borne of God," so that this love is the fruit of the new birth, and none can have it but the new creature. Now when this quality is thus formed in the souls of men, it works like the spirit upon the dry bones. Ezekiel 37: "bone came to bone." It gathers together the scattered bones, of perfect old man Adam, and knits them into one body again in Christ, whereby a man is become again a living soul.

The third consideration is concerning the exercise of this love which is twofold, inward or outward. The outward hath been handled in the former preface of this discourse. For unfolding the other we must take in our way that maxim of philosophy *simile simili gaudet*, or like will to like; for as it is things which are turned with disaffection to each other, the ground of it is from a dissimilitude arising from the contrary or different nature of the things themselves; for the ground of love is an apprehension of some resemblance in things loved to that which affects it. This is the cause why the Lord loves the creature, so far as it hath any of His image in it; He loves His elect because they are like

7. 2 Corinthians 11.29.
8. St. Paul tells the Philippians that he will send to them as a spiritual guide "Epaphroditus, my brother and companion in labor, and fellow soldier, but your messenger, and he that ministered to my wants" (Philippians 2.25).
9. A Christian woman praised by St. Paul in Romans 16.1.
1. I.e., in his innocence.

Himself, he beholds them in His beloved son. So a mother loves her child, because she throughly conceives a resemblance of herself in it. Thus it is between the members of Christ. Each discerns, by the work of the spirit, his own image and resemblance in another, and therefore cannot but love him as he loves himself. Now when the soul, which is of a sociable nature, finds anything like to itself, it is like Adam when Eve was brought to him. She must have it one with herself. This is flesh of my flesh (saith the soul) and bone of my bone. She conceives a great delight in it, therefore she desires nearness and familiarity with it. She hath a great propensity to do it good and receives such content in it, as fearing the miscarriage of her beloved she bestows it in the inmost closet of her heart. She will not endure that it shall want any good which she can give it. If by occasion she be withdrawn from the company of it, she is still looking towards the place where she left her beloved. If she heard it groan, she is with it presently. If she find it sad and disconsolate, she sighs and moans with it. She hath no such joy as to see her beloved merry and thriving. If she see it wronged, she cannot hear it without passion. She sets no bounds to her affections, nor hath any thought of reward. She finds recompense enough in the exercise of her love towards it. We may see this acted to life in Jonathan and David.[2] Jonathan a valiant man endowed with the spirit of Christ, so soon as he discovers the same spirit in David had presently his heart knit to him by this lineament of love so that it is said he loved him as his own soul. He takes so great pleasure in him, that he strips himself to adorn his beloved. His father's kingdom was not so precious to him as his beloved David. David shall have it with all his heart, himself desires no more but that he may be near to him to rejoice in his good. He chooseth to converse with him in the wilderness even to the hazard of his own life, rather than with the great courtiers in his father's palace. When he sees danger towards him, he spares neither rare pains nor peril to direct it. When injury was offered his beloved David, he would not bear it, though from his own father; and when they must part for a season only, they thought their hearts would have broke for sorrow, had not their affections found vent by abundance of tears. Other instances might be brought to show the nature of this affection, as of Ruth and Naomi,[3] and many others; but this truth is cleared enough.

If any shall object that it is not possible that love should be bred or upheld without hope of requital, it is granted; but that is not our cause; for this love is always under reward. It never gives, but it always receives with advantage; first, in regard that among the members of the same body, love and affection are reciprocal in a most equal and sweet kind of commerce. Secondly, in regard of the pleasure and content that the exercise of love carries with it, as we may see in the natural body. The mouth is at all the pains to receive and mince the food which serves for the nourishment of all the other parts of the body, yet it hath no cause to complain; for first the other parts send back by several passages a due proportion of the same nourishment, in a better form for the strengthening and comforting the mouth. Secondly, the labor of the mouth is accompanied with such pleasure and content as fare exceeds the pains it takes. So is it in all the labor of love among Christians. The party loving, reaps love again,

2. The story of David and Jonathan is told in I Samuel 19ff.

3. Naomi was the mother-in-law of Ruth, whom Ruth refused to leave when her husband died, telling her, "For whither thou goest; I will go; and where thou lodgest, I will lodge" (Ruth 1.16).



as was showed before, which the soul covets more than all the wealth in the world. Third: Nothing yields more pleasure and content to the soul than when it finds that which it may love fervently, for to love and live beloved is the soul's paradise, both here and in heaven. In the state of wedlock there be many comforts to bear out the troubles of that condition; but let such as have tried the most, say if there be any sweetness in that condition comparable to the exercise of mutual love.

From former considerations arise these conclusions.

1. First, This love among Christians is a real thing, not Imaginary.

Secondly: This love is as absolutely necessary to the being of the body of Christ, as the sinews and other ligaments of a natural body are to the being of that body.

Third: This love is a divine, spiritual nature free, active, strong, courageous, permanent; undervaluing all things beneath its proper object; and of all the graces, this makes us nearer to resemble the virtues of our heavenly father.

Fourth: It rests in the love and welfare of its beloved. For the full and certain knowledge of these truths concerning the nature, use, and excellency of this grace, that which the Holy Ghost hath left recorded, 1 Corinthians 13, may give full satisfaction, which is needful for every true member of this lovely body of the Lord Jesus, to work upon their hearts by prayer, meditation, continual exercise at least of the special [influence] of his grace, 'til Christ be formed in them and they in him, all in each other, knit together by this bond of love.

## *II*

It rests now to make some application of this discourse by the present design, which gave the occasion of writing of it. Herein are four things to be propounded: first the persons, secondly the work, third the end, fourth the means.

1. For the persons. We are a company professing ourselves fellow members of Christ, in which respect only though we were absent from each other many miles, and had our employments as far distant, yet we ought to account ourselves knit together by this bond of love, and live in the exercise of it, if we would have comfort of our being in Christ. This was notorious in the practise of the Christians in former times; as is testified of the Waldenses,[4] from the mouth of one of the adversaries *Æneas Sylvius*[5] " mutuo [ament] penè antequam norunt," they use to love any of their own religion even before they were acquainted with them.

Secondly, for the work we have in hand. It is by mutual consent, through a special overvaluing providence and a more than an ordinary approbation of the Churches of Christ, to seek out a place of cohabitation and consortship under a due form of government both civil and ecclesiastical. In such cases as this, the care of the public must oversway all private respects, by which, not only conscience, but mere civil policy, doth bind us. For it is a true rule that particular estates cannot subsist in the ruin of the public.

4. The Waldenses took their name from Pater Valdes, an early French reformer of the Church. They still survive as a religious community.

5. Aeneas Sylvius Piccolomini (1405–64), Pope Pius II, was a historian and scholar. *Solent amare* is a closer approximation of the Latin than Morison's suggestion of *ament*.

Third. The end is to improve our lives to do more service to the Lord; the comfort and increase of the body of Christ whereof we are members; that ourselves and posterity may be the better preserved from the common corruptions of this evil world, to serve the Lord and work out our salvation under the power and purity of His holy ordinances.

Fourth, for the means whereby this must be effected. They are twofold, a conformity with the work and end we aim at. These we see are extraordinary, therefore we must not content ourselves with usual ordinary means. Whatsoever we did or ought to have done when we lived in England, the same must we do, and more also, where we go. That which the most in their churches maintain as a truth in profession only, we must bring into familiar and constant practice, as in this duty of love. We must love brotherly without dissimulation; we must love one another with a pure heart fervently. We must bear one another's burthens. We must not look only on our own things, but also on the things of our brethren, neither must we think that the Lord will bear with such failings at our hands as he doth from those among whom we have lived; and that for three reasons.

1. In regard of the more near bond of marriage between Him and us, wherein He hath taken us to be His after a most strict and peculiar manner, which will make Him the more jealous of our love and obedience. So He tells the people of Israel, you only have I known of all the families of the earth, therefore will I punish you for your transgressions. Secondly, because the Lord will be sanctified in them that come near Him. We know that there were many that corrupted the service of the Lord, some setting up altars before His own, others offering both strange fire and strange sacrifices also; yet there came no fire from heaven or other sudden judgment upon them, as did upon Nadab and Abihu,[6] who yet we may think did not sin presumptuously. Third. When God gives a special commission He looks to have it strictly observed in every article. When He gave Saul a commission to destroy Amaleck, He indented with him upon certain articles,[7] and because he failed in one of the least, and that upon a fair pretense, it lost him the kingdom which should have been his reward if he had observed his commission.

Thus stands the cause between God and us. We are entered into covenant[8] with Him for this work. We have taken out a commission, the Lord hath given us leave to draw our own articles. We have professed to enterprise these actions, upon these and those ends, we have hereupon besought Him of favour and blessing. Now if the Lord shall please to hear us, and bring us in peace to the place we desire, then hath He ratified this covenant and sealed our commission, [and] will expect a strict performance of the articles contained in it; but if we shall neglect the observation of these articles which are the ends we have propounded, and, dissembling with our God, shall fall to embrace this present world and prosecute our carnal intentions, seeking great things for ourselves

6. "And Nadab and Abihu, the sons of Aaron, took either of them his censer, and put fire therein, and put incense thereon, and offered strange fire before the Lord, which he commanded them not. And there went out fire from the Lord, and devoured them, and they died before the Lord" (Leviticus 10.1–2). Winthrop's point is that the chosen people are often punished more severly than unbelievers.

7. I.e., made an agreement with him on parts of a contract or agreement. Saul was instructed to destroy the Amalekites and all that they possessed, but he spared their sheep and oxen, and in doing so disobeyed the Lord's commandment and was rejected as king (1 Samuel 15.1–34).

8. A legal contract; the Israelites entered into a covenant with God in which he promised to protect them if they kept his word and were faithful to him.



and our posterity, the Lord will surely break out in wrath against us; be revenged of such a perjured people and make us know the price of the breach of such a covenant.

Now the only way to avoid this shipwreck, and to provide for our posterity, is to follow the counsel of Micah,[9] to do justly, to love mercy, to walk humbly with our God. For this end, we must be knit together in this work as one man. We must entertain each other in brotherly affection, we must be willing to abridge ourselves of our superfluities, for the supply of other's necessities. We must uphold a familiar commerce together in all meekness, gentleness, patience and liberality. We must delight in each other, make other's conditions our own, rejoice together, mourn together, labour and suffer together, always having before our eyes our commission and community in the work, our community as members of the same body. So shall we keep the unity of the spirit in the bond of peace. The Lord will be our God, and delight to dwell among us as His own people, and will command a blessing upon us in all our ways, so that we shall see much more of His wisdom, power, goodness and truth, than formerly we have been acquainted with. We shall find that the God of Israel is among us, when ten of us shall be able to resist a thousand of our enemies; when He shall make us a praise and glory that men shall say of succeeding plantations, "the lord make it like that of NEW ENGLAND." For we must consider that we shall be as a city upon a hill.[1] The eyes of all people are upon us, so that if we shall deal falsely with our God in this work we have undertaken, and so cause Him to withdraw His present help from us, we shall be made a story and a by-word through the world. We shall open the mouths of enemies to speak evil of the ways of God, and all professors for God's sake. We shall shame the faces of many of God's worthy servants, and cause their prayers to be turned into curses upon us 'til we be consumed out of the good land whither we are agoing.

And to shut up this discourse with that exhortation of Moses, the faithful servant of the Lord, in his last farewell to Israel, Deuteronomy 30.[2] Beloved, there is now set before us life and good, death and evil, in that we are commanded this day to love the Lord our God, and to love one another, to walk in His ways and to keep His commandments and His ordinance and His laws, and the articles of our covenant with Him, that we may live and be multiplied, and that our Lord our God may bless us in the land whither we go to possess it. But if our hearts shall turn away, so that we will not obey, but shall be seduced, and worship other gods, our pleasures and profits, and serve them; it is propounded unto us this day, we shall surely perish out of the good land whither we pass over this vast sea to possess it.

9. The Book of Micah preserves the words of this eighth-century-B.C. prophet. Micah speaks continually of the judgment of God on his people and the necessity to hope for salvation: "I will bear the indignation of the Lord, because I have sinned against him, until he plead my cause, and execute judgment for me: he will bring me forth to the light, and I shall behold his righteousness" (Micah 7.9).

1. "Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house" (Matthew 5.14–15).

2. "And it shall come to pass, when all these things are come upon thee, the blessing and the curse, which I have set before thee, and thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath driven thee, and shalt return unto the Lord thy God, and shalt obey his voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thine heart, and with all thy soul; that then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion upon thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee" (Deuteronomy 30.1–3).

Therefore let us choose life,
that we and our seed
may live by obeying His
voice and cleaving to Him,
for He is our life and
our prosperity.

1630 — 1838

## *From* The Journal of John Winthrop[1]:

[June 8, 1630] The wind still W. and by S., fair weather, but close and cold. We stood N. N. W. with a stiff gale, and, about three in the afternoon, we had sight of land to the N. W. about ten leagues, which we supposed was the Isles of Monhegan, but it proved Mount Mansell.[2] Then we tacked and stood W. S. W. We had now fair sunshine weather, and so pleasant a sweet air as did much refresh us, and there came a smell off the shore like the smell of a garden.

There came a wild pigeon into our ship, and another small land bird.

[July 5, 1632] At Watertown there was (in view of divers witnesses) a great combat between a mouse and a snake; and, after a long fight, the mouse prevailed and killed the snake. The pastor of Boston, Mr. Wilson, a very sincere, holy man, hearing of it, gave this interpretation: That the snake was the devil; the mouse was a poor contemptible people, which God had brought hither, which should overcome Satan here, and dispossess him of his kingdom. Upon the same occasion, he told the governor,[3] that, before he was resolved to come into this country, he dreamed he was here, and that he saw a church arise out of the earth, which grew up and became a marvellous goodly church.

[December 27, 1633] The governor and assistants met at Boston, and took into consideration a treatise, which Mr. Williams[4] (then of Salem) had sent to them, and which he had formerly written to the governor and council of Plymouth, wherein, among other things, he disputes their right to the lands they possessed here, and concluded that, claiming by the king's grant, they could have no title, nor otherwise, except they compounded[5] with the natives. For this, taking advice with some of the most judicious ministers, (who much condemned Mr. Williams's error and presumption,) they gave order, that he should be convented[6] at the next court, to be censured, etc. There were three passages chiefly whereat they were much offended: 1, for that he chargeth King James to have told a solemn public lie, because in his patent he blessed God that he was the first Christian prince that had discovered this land; 2, for that he chargeth him and others with blasphemy for calling Europe Christendom, or the Christian world; 3, for that he did personally apply to our present king, Charles, these three places in the Revelations,[7] viz., [*blank*].

1. The text used here is from *Winthrop's Journal: History of New England 1630–1649*, edited by James Kendall Hosmer (New York, 1908).
2. What Winthrop saw was Mount Desert, Maine, named by the French explorer Champlain in 1604.
3. I.e., Winthrop himself.
4. Roger Williams (c. 1603–83), who had emigrated to New England in 1630 and refused a call to the First Church of Boston because he would not preach to "an unseparated people."
5. Arranged to purchase.
6. Summoned to appear.
7. I.e., the biblical Book of Revelation. Winthrop never added the citations.

Mr. Endicott being absent, the governor wrote to him and let him know what was done, and withal added divers arguments to confute the said errors, wishing him to deal with Mr. Williams to retract the same, etc. Whereto he returned a very modest and discreet answer. Mr. Williams also wrote to the governor,[8] and also to him and the rest of the council, very submissively, professing his intent to have been only to have written for the private satisfaction of the governor, etc., of Plymouth, without any purpose to have stirred any further in it, if the governor here had not required a copy of him; withal offering his book, or any part of it, to be burnt.

At the next court he appeared penitently, and gave satisfaction of his intention and loyalty. So it was left, and nothing done in it.

[January 20, 1634] Hall and two others,[9] who went to Connecticut November 3, came now home, having lost themselves and endured much misery. They informed us that the small pox was gone as far as any Indian plantation was known to the west, and much people dead of it, by reason whereof they could have no trade.

At Naragansett, by the Indians' report, there died seven hundred; but, beyond Pascataquack, none to the eastward.

[January 24, 1634] The governor and council met again at Boston, to consider of Mr. Williams's letter, etc., when, with the advice of Mr. Cotton[1] and Mr. Wilson, and weighing his letter, and further considering of the aforesaid offensive passages in his book[2] (which, being written in very obscure and implicative phrases, might well admit of doubtful interpretation,) they found the matters not to be so evil as at first they seemed. Whereupon they agreed, that, upon his retraction, etc., or taking an oath of allegiance to the king, etc., it should be passed over.

[January 11, 1636] The governor[3] and assistants met at Boston to consider about Mr. Williams, for that they were credibly informed, that, notwithstanding the injunction laid upon him (upon the liberty granted him to stay till the spring) not to go about to draw others to his opinions, he did use to entertain company in his house, and to preach to them, even of such points as he had been censured for; and it was agreed to send him into England by a ship then ready to depart. The reason was, because he had drawn above twenty persons to his opinion, and they were intended to erect a plantation about the Naragansett Bay,[4] from whence the infection would easily spread into these churches, (the people being, many of them, much taken with the apprehension of his godliness). Whereupon a warrant was sent to him to come presently to Boston, to be shipped,[5] etc. He returned answer, (and divers of Salem came with it,) that he could not come without hazard of his life, etc. Whereupon a pinnace[6] was sent with commission to Capt. Underhill, etc., to apprehend him, and carry him aboard the ship, (which then rode at Natascutt;) but, when they came at his house, they found he had been gone three days before; but whither they could not learn.

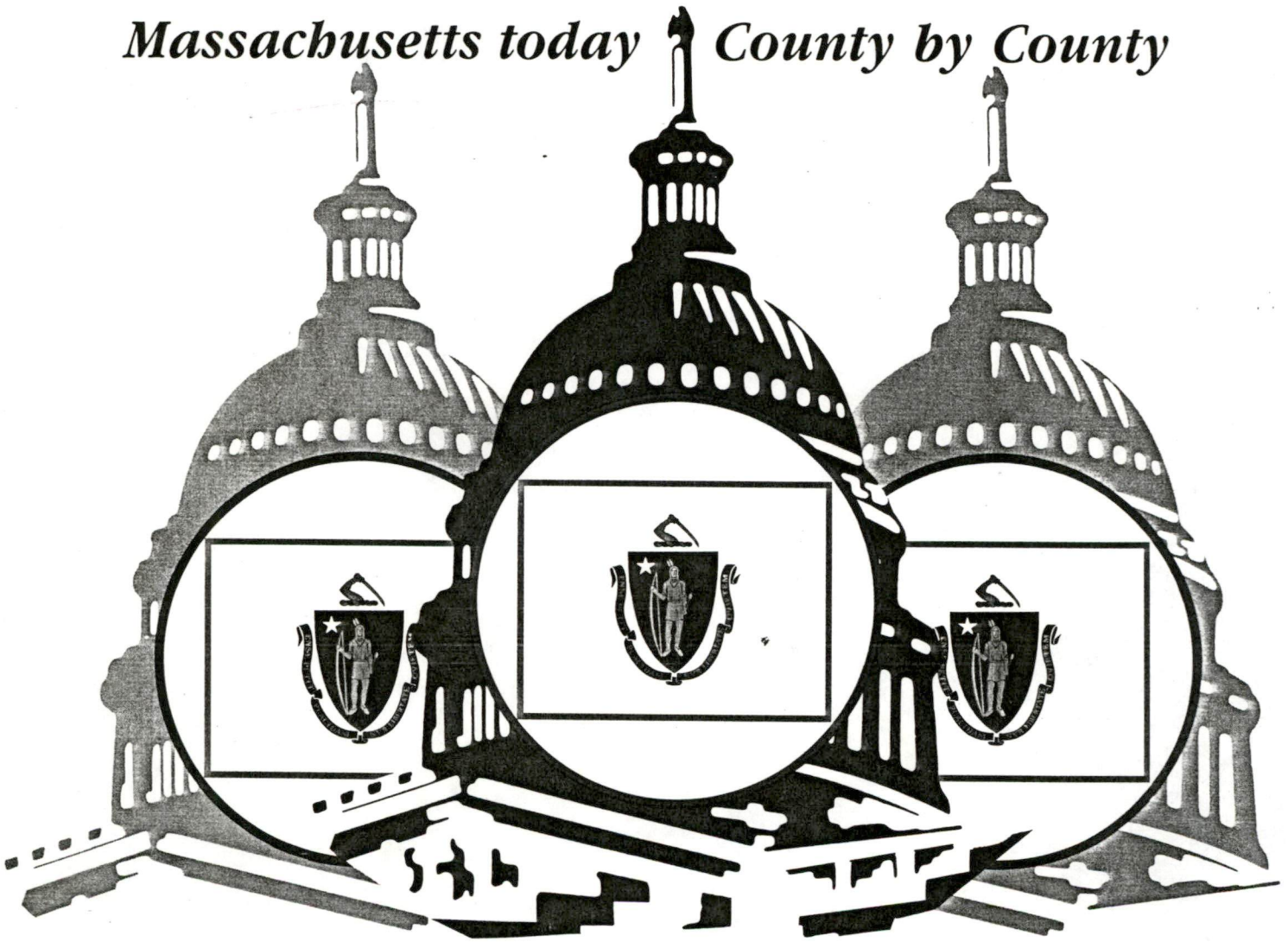
8. In 1633 Edward Winslow was governor.
9. Not further identified.
1. John Cotton (1584–1652) emigrated to Boston in 1633 and from that time until his death was a major figure in the hierarchy of the town. He was pastor of the First Church of Boston.
2. Winthrop is referring to a now-lost Williams manuscript or treatise, mentioned in the entry for December 27, 1633, rather than a published book.
3. John Hays (1594–1654). Winthrop was re-elected governor in 1637.
4. Providence Plantation in Rhode Island received its patent in 1644.
5. I.e., returned to Boston by ship.
6. A small, light vessel, usually with two masts.

E169
.C57
MA
WH

*More Than An Almanac*

# MASSACHUSETTS FACTS

*A Comprehensive look at Massachusetts today County by County*



Flying the Colors

## MASSACHUSETTS TODAY

When most Americans think of Massachusetts they think of history. Of Pilgrims, of Paul Revere, of a bridge at Concord, of the Boston Tea Party. And why not? Massachusetts' history is inextricable from American history. Today Massachusetts is writing a new and possibly just as "revolutionary" chapter to its history, only this time the memorable phrases will be "Route 128," and "Revitalization." Outlining the Boston Metropolitan area, the Route 128 State Highway literally displays the rampant, pace-setting success of the state's high-tech industry, and industry is at the center of the dynamic economic resurgence that has transformed Massachusetts' image from a state in trouble to the shining paradigm of modern prosperity. But Route 128 is also the symbolic ribbon that binds together the cooperative effort of business, academia, state and local government, and a population both deeply committed to a fascinating historical and ethnic past and working toward a "state of the art" future. The revitalization, though, has moved statewide, from the resurgence of mature industries in Worcester and Lowell to stepped-up timber production in Hampshire County. Phrases like "Centers For Excellence" and "Targets of Opportunity" vibrate across the state. Accentuating all of this are the rich contrasts of the Bay State: the beaches of Nantucket and the forest of Berkshire Hills; the Portuguese New Bedford fisherman and the transplanted Cambridge electrical engineer; the Hub—the flurry of activity in the heart of downtown Boston and the quiet upland towns of Hampshire County. Massachusetts today is the culmination of 380 years of pioneering, politicking, transitions, bravery, and artistry. The remarkable diversity of Massachusetts life today is inseparable from the ebbs and flows of its gloried past: the Puritan rigidness of the Pilgrims, their refusal to be manipulated as a prelude to the sparks that fed the fire of the American Revolution; the Irish potato famine of the 1830s resulting in a large influx of Irish Catholics; the establishment of the New World's primary whaling and fishing port in New Bedford; the creation of some of the world's finest institutions for higher education; the high profile of Massachusetts politics and its politicians; these are part of the past, the present, and surely the future of the Bay State. A visit to Massachusetts today would belie the struggle of the recent past. Suffering economically in the 1970s, Massachusetts was considered the epitome of a high-taxation, mature-industry. But once again, "Yankee Ingenuity," the utilization of its natural, educational, and cultural resources, have put the Bay State back in the driver's seat. From cranberry bogs in Plymouth County to the production of medical instruments in Middlesex County, business is booming. Fun? Bay Staters thrive on it. With four distinct seasons, islands, coastline, forests, and mountains, whatever strikes the imagination is possible. Massachusetts is the third most densely populated state, and the sixth smallest in land area, yet it has the sixth largest state park system. Massachusetts has professional sports teams in all major leagues. The Bruins, Celtics, and Red Sox from Boston have long and storied histories. The Boston Symphony Orchestra/Boston Pops Orchestra is internationally known. Massachusetts newspapers, public television stations, and writers ranging from the transcendentalists to masters of modern fiction, have made the state one of the most respected communications centers in the world. Visitors can walk the beaches of the island counties, Dukes and Nantucket, or surf cast off the shores of Cape Cod, visit the museums in historic Salem, or ski the slopes of several western mountains. One can visit the land of the Plymouth Colony in the east or visit the home of Herman Melville in Berkshire County and see where he penned *Moby Dick*. Not forgetting some of the best seafood in the world, the ethnic diversity of the Bay State's population makes it an epicurian's delight: Italian, Portuguese, French, and Irish. Visitors can walk the campuses of some of the world's most famous universities, or see the homes of three U.S. Presidents born and raised in the Bay State. Wherever one goes, there are reminders of the storied past, evidence of the prosperous present, and signals of a successful future.

## THE LAND

Massachusetts' 8,284 square miles ranks it 45th in size among the 50 states. It lies between the parallels of 41° 10« and 42° 55« north latitude and between 69° 57« and 73° 30« west longitude. At its widest parts the state runs 190 miles east-west and 110 miles north-south. While it is the third most densely populated state, 56% of its area is still forestland. Known as the Bay State (though more because of the original Massachusetts Bay Colony than because of its geography), its 192 miles of coastline feature no less than 17 bays and untold numbers of inlets. If one were to trace the coastline, mileage would jump to between 1,500 and 2,000. This land left an indelible impression upon its first English settlers, many of whom in their writings described it as a paradise. Indeed, the richly forested land supported game in abundance and the seashore teemed with a variety of aquatic life. While the coastal lands are not particularly suited to crop production, fruits and berries abound. Though small, Massachusetts is rich in natural beauty, diverse in flora and fauna, and offers many geographic and geologic contrasts. If one were to take an aerial view of the state they would see that it is dominated by several north-south geographic distinctions. The eastern quarter is coastal lowlands which rise gradually as the Commonwealth spreads west. The southern lowlands and south shore include Cape Cod Peninsula, the state's most obvious geographic feature. Sixty-five miles long, it juts into the Atlantic Ocean like an arm bent at the elbow. Not only does it support a large part of the state's fishing industry, it is also a major tourist area as well. Sand dunes are common along the Cape, particularly along the north end of the narrow peninsula. Scrub oak and pine dominate this area and the surrounding islands of Nantucket, the 16 Elizabeth Islands, and Martha's Vineyard, which is more heavily forested than the other islands. This is one of the few areas of the state not part of the extensive northern hardwood forests. Buzzards Bay and southern Massachusetts Bay offer many good harbors. The southwest coastal lowlands, taking up much of Plymouth County, feature much of the marsh and bog areas that support the state's substantial cranberry industry. The rolling hills, or drumlins, that encompass Boston give way to the northern coastline, which is noted for its rugged and mountainous shoreline. The land has primarily high bedrock which results in rock outcroppings being a common sight. Though heavily developed in many areas, the indigenous vegetation consists of oak, maple, birch, and pine forests.

# MASSACHUSETTS TODAY

Elevations vary from sea level to 100 feet in the Cape Cod region, though some points reach 300 feet. The northeast coast has many shallow troughs but rises to heights of 500 feet. Southwest out of Boston lie the Blue Hills, the eastern most foothills of the state's uplands, its primary geographic configuration and Massachusetts' contribution to the New England Uplands. The state encompasses two interior lowlands, the Connecticut River Valley and the Berkshire Valley, and two distinct upland regions, the Eastern and Western. The Eastern Uplands, primarily Worcester County, are the southern extension of New Hampshire's White Mountains. They gradually slope to the east and the coastal lowlands. The Western Uplands consist mostly of the Berkshire Hills and represent the state's loftiest lands. To the southwest of the hills, in a narrow northward line, lies the Berkshire Valley, which goes as far north as Vermont. From Pittsfield north, it is only six miles wide. The very western sliver of the state consists of the Taconic Mountains, making a rugged border frontier with New York. The uplands have nine peaks that reach over 2,000 feet. Eight of the nine are located west of the Connecticut River. The larger of the two lowland regions, the Connecticut River Valley stretches north to Vermont, with its widest points in the south. The Valley includes the state's most fertile soils as well as the city of Springfield. From the Eastern Uplands west to the Taconic Mountains, the vegetation is hardwood forest—oak, maple, birch, and pine. The highest of the Berkshire Hills and Taconic Mountains feature spruce and firs mixed with maple and birch where the elevation is routinely over 1,800 feet. According to geologists, many of the physical features of Massachusetts today can be traced to glaciation. For instance, the Connecticut River Valley is actually a great glacier furrow and was for a time an enormous lake. As well, the nature of the various soils are a direct result of glaciers depositing the material in which the soils formed. The lower landscapes occupy the terrace soils, which formed in glacial meltdown deposits. The terraces are usually intermingled with uplands and generally near drainageways. These soils normally have evidence of stratifications by water deposition in the substructure. The upper part of the soil ranges from loamy to sandy with varying amounts of gravel. Lowland slopes are moderate. Many upland soils formed in glacial till. Most of these soils are loamy although some have sandy substrata. They usually have some sandy and some cobble-sized fragments throughout. Surface stones and boulders are common features. Upland soils are predominantly sloping to steep. The more fertile soils in Massachusetts are the result of alluvial or floodwater deposited material. They are minor in extent but locally important. The floodplains of the Housatonic and Connecticut Rivers (making up the Berkshire and Connecticut Valleys respectively) have excellent soils for farming. Slopes are nearly level in this feature. Massachusetts has over 250 square miles of surface water made up of over 1,300 lakes and ponds, of which over a quarter supply drinking water to neighboring communities. The two largest inland bodies of water are manmade reservoirs. The largest is the Quabbin Reservoir, located on the eastern edge of the Connecticut River Valley, taking up 38.6 square miles. The other is the Wachusett Reservoir, located north of Worcester and covering an area of 6.5 square miles. Both are major recreational sites as well as a source of water. The largest natural body of water is Assawompsett Pond at 2,656 acres. The lake with the longest name, in fact the longest name of any lake in the United States, is Lake Chargoggagogmanchaugagogchaubunagungamaug (1,188 acres), meaning "You fish your side of the lake. I fish my side. Nobody fishes the middle." There are over 4,230 miles of river in Massachusetts. The Charles is the longest river wholly within the state's borders, travelling a bit more than 100 miles. The major river is the Connecticut, which runs the length of the state, north-south in the Connecticut River Valley. Once used to move huge logs to the Holyoke paper mills, the Connecticut is now dammed in several places, curbing flooding that once caused millions of dollars in damage. The second largest river is the Housatonic, located in the extreme western part of the state. Land use in 1982 broke down as follows: 56% forest, 5.6% cropland, 3.8% pasture-land, 16.7% urban, 6.8% water and 1.7% federal. The remaining 9.4% is made up of rural transporation and other minor land uses. Of the state's 5.3 million acres, 264,000 are operated by the Division of Forest and Parks, making it the sixth largest system in the nation. The largest amount of privately-owned conservation land, more than 17,000 acres, is held by the Trustees of Reservation.

**CLIMATE** Massachusetts weather is noted for variety rather than monotony. With large ranges in temperature possible on a daily basis, having four distinct seasons in which, from year to year, the weather may vary drastically, and enough topographical influences to affect the weather to the point where a state of only 8,266 square miles can claim three climatological regions, the adage about waiting five minutes for the weather to change may hold true where the Bay State is concerned. Massachusetts' climate does not result from the predominance of any one controlling weather regime, but is the integrated effect of several weather patterns. Massachusetts lies in the "prevailing westerlies," the belt of generally eastward air movement which encircles the globe in the middle latitudes. Most of the air masses affecting Massachusetts belong to three types: cold, dry air pouring in from subarctic areas of North America; warm, moist air streaming up from the Gulf of Mexico and subtropical waters eastward; and cool, damp air coming in from the North Atlantic. Since the atmospheric flow is usually offshore, Massachusetts is influenced by the first two types more than it is by the third. In other words, the Atlantic Ocean affects Massachusetts' weather but does not dominate it. This procession of contrasting air masses and the relatively frequent passage of storm centers bring about a roughly twice weekly alternation from fair to cloudy or stormy conditions, attended by often abrupt changes in moisture, temperature, sunshine, and wind direction and speed. There is no regular rhythm to this sequence, and it is interrupted by periods of several days or even weeks during which the weather patterns remain the same. The three climatological zones are as follows: the Western Region, made up of the western quarter of the state and including the Berkshire Hills; the Coastal Region, a strip roughly ten to twenty miles wide running up and down the eastern edge of the state; and the Central Region, simply the middle of the state, comprising more than 50% of the Commonwealth's area. The average annual temperature ranges from about 46°F in the Western Region to 49°F in the Central Region, and about 50°F in the Coastal Region.



*FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS* ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

Averages will vary within the region depending upon elevation, slope, and other features. The Bay State's highest temperature of record is 106°F, observed at several locations in many different years. The lowest temperature was a chilly -34°F, observed at Birch Hill Dam in north central Massachusetts on January 18, 1957. For the most part, summer temperatures are comfortable, with averages nearly uniform across the state. Averages for July range from 67°F to 70°F in the west and in the islands off the coast, and from 70°F to 74°F elsewhere. The number of days with maximum temperatures of 90°F or higher generally average from 5 to 15 per year, varying not only from place to place but from year to year. One year there may be only a few days over 90°F and other years, 25 or more. The Cape and offshore islands are exceptions, averaging less than one day per year with temperatures over 90°F. Average daily temperatures may not reflect marked differences in day to night changes. The Islands and the Cape may have a daily range of 10°F to 15°F, while inland areas may vary 20°F to 30°F. The diurnal range can be as much as 40°F to 50°F, during cool, dry weather in valleys and marshes, making frost a threat even in warmer months in these areas. Variances in average temperature from place to place are much greater in winter. They range from the low 20s for January in the Western Region, to the middle and upper 20s in the Central Region, and near 30°F in the Coastal region. The daily ranges, though less in winter, are also greater inland than in the coastal areas. Days with subzero readings are rare on the offshore islands, where the average is only a few per year. The frequency increases as one goes farther inland, reaching 5 to 15 days annually in the Berkshire Hills. Mean number of days within periods of nonfreezing temperatures varies widely across the state. Over a 29-year period the station with the mean fewest days between freezes was at West Cummington, near 2,080 foot Bryant Mountain in the Berkshire Hills. Its nonfreeze period registered only 102 days, compared to the longest period, 223 days, recorded in New Bedford in the southeast part of the state. Massachusetts is fortunate in that its precipitation is evenly distributed through the year. In this respect, the state is located in one of the relatively few areas of the world that does not have "rainy" and "dry" seasons. The principal year-round moisture producers are storm systems. Total precipitation averages from 40 to 50 inches per year, stations having long-period records report, with most in the 42 to 44 inch range. Local influences cause considerable differences from station to station but regional differences vary only slightly. The Coastal Region (the driest) receives only about two inches of precipitation less per year than the Western Region (the wettest). The mountainous character of the west is an additional cause for the heaviest annual totals being recorded in that part of the state. Measurable amounts of precipitation fall on an average of one day in three. Frequency is higher in upland areas. For example, Pittsfield in the western uplands may see precipitation four days out of ten. Six inches of rain in one day is a rare occurance in Massachusetts. In fact, some stations have never recorded that much in a single day. However, in 1955 Hurricane Diane dumped 18.5 inches on Westfield in a single 24 hour period. Average amounts of snowfall increase rapidly as one moves inland. About 25 to 30 inches fall over the Cape Cod area while between 60 and 80 inches are recorded in parts of the Berkshire Hills. Less than four inches for an entire season can be recorded at some Cape stations, while totals of over 100 inches have been received in most areas of the Central and Western Regions. The average number of days with one inch or more of snowfall varies from about 8 to 15 in coastal areas to between 20 and 30 in the Western Region. The heaviest amount recorded in a 24-hour period was 28.2 inches at Blue Hill Observatory in Milton, 12 miles southwest of Boston. In most areas of the state, melting is usually gradual enough to avoid serious flooding. The prevailing wind on a yearly basis comes from a westerly direction. It is more northwesterly in winter and southwesterly in summer. Topography has a strong influence on the prevailing direction. Points in the Connecticut Valley for instance may have prevailing north-south winds paralleling the direction of the valley. Coastal storms, called northeasters, are one of the state's most serious weather hazards. They often generate very strong winds and heavy rain or snow, producing abnormally high tides that can cause heavy damage to coastal installations. While tornadoes are not a common phenomena, on a per unit basis Massachusetts ranks fairly high among states. One or more may occur in the state each year. The Bay State's coastline has endured many hurricanes through the years. The percentage of possible sunshine averages from 50 to 60 in most sections with higher elevations in the Berkshires reducing their percentage to 45 to 50. The number of clear days averages between 90 to 120 per year for most of the state. Heavy fog is frequent and sometimes persistant south of Cape Cod. Nantucket Island has heavy fog on nearly one day out of four. Fog frequently diminishes along the Massachusetts coast north of the Cape. Across the state the number of days with fog varies from as low as 15 to nearly 100.

**ENVIRONMENT** S. Russell Sylva, Commissioner of the Massachusetts Department of Environmental Quality and Engineering (DEQE), describes groundwater as what may be the state's most critically threatened resource. As of 1985, 275 of the 351 cities and towns in Massachusetts relied upon groundwater totally or in part for drinking water. Forty-six communities have recently had their entire or a portion of their public water supplies closed due to contamination. Forty-five of the incidents involved groundwater sources. The contaminants principally came from industrial activity, accidental spills, road salting, landfills, overdevelopment and pesticides. To compound this, on June 1, 1986 it was reported that the Quabbin Reservoir, which serves 43 cities and towns in greater Boston, was at 82% capacity, which meets current demands but poses severe long-term problems, since it can take several years to replenish the reservoir. In the meantime it will be strained by continued growth in the metropolitan area. Eighteen communities had imposed mandatory water use restrictions as a result of the reservoir's status. Since the 1972 Federal Pollution Control Amendments were enacted, surface water quality has improved considerably in Massachusetts. Of the rivers and streams found to be partially supporting or non-supporting their classification (drinking water, recreational, etc.), municipal pollution sources were attributed to 26%, nonpoint sources (pesticides, for the most part) were attributed to 24%, combined sewer overflows to 16%, natural conditions to 14%, in place sediment to 7%, industrial source to 6%, and other sources to 7%. The major pollutants in the rivers and harbors are bacteria/pathogens,

dissolved oxygen, biochemical oxygen demand, and nutrients. In 1972, only 27.5% of the tested surface water supported its use classification. By 1986 this had improved to 48%, while the non-support classification had dropped from 45% to 18%. In that time the Construction Grants Program of the Division of Water Pollution Control had administered nearly $1.5 billion in federal, state, and local grants for the design and construction of wastewater collection and treatment facilities. A major piece of legislation became law in 1986, providing a $427 million water and sewer construction bond authorization allowing more Massachusetts cities and town to build new much needed, wastewater treatment facilities and make vital repairs to their existing water and sewer systems. Other strategies in this area have been the administration of the Clean Lakes Program and the overseeing of a $33 million state-funded grant program to build sewers in communities not targeted to receive federal assistance. The DEQE, within the Executive Office of Environmental Affairs and the Department of Environmental Management, was established in 1975, and is the environmental regulatory agency for the Commonwealth. Among its authorities and responsibilities are the following: control and prevention of air and water pollution; regulation of the drinking water supply; management of hazardous waste; regulation of disposal and storage of solid wastes; control of nuisance vegetation in recreational lakes and ponds; and testing for possible contamination of shellfish and shellfish harvesting areas. Considering the various types of threats to the environment—hazardous waste, acid rain, development, industrial and auto emmissions—and the scope of what is being protected—all lakes, rivers, streams, marsheds, coastal shores and waters, extensive forest lands, as well as the air we breathe—protecting it now takes a sophisticated networking system, one allowed to implement policy and invoke the law. Massachusetts recently took steps to insure this power in the DEQE by passing a law which allows the DEQE to levy fines of up to $25,000 a day against environmental polluters. Governor Michael Dukakis called the bill a priority of his administration that will "serve notice on those who would flout our environmental laws and the state's commitment to strict and constant enforcement." Until this bill, which was signed in 1985, the DEQE had been limited to notices of violation or asking the attorney general to take cases to court. In 1974, an important step was taken in meeting environmental problems head-on when the legislature developed the Area of Critical Environmental Concern program (ACEC). This action was a recognition of the fact that certain land and water resources are either of such limited nature or of central importance to the welfare, safety, and pleasure of all Massachusetts citizens, that the protection and management of these resource transcends purely local concerns. In the first 12 years of the program more than 20 sites have been investigated, and nine have been designated ACEC's. Seven of these are in the coastal zone, and thus were designated through the Coastal Zone Management office, another regulatory branch of the Department of Environmental Management, and two were inland. Thus far the program has been used primarily as a tool to protect wetlands. The largest coastal ACEC is the Parker River Essex Bay zone in Essex County, with 23,793 acres of barrier beach, dunes, saltmarsh, and water bodies. The Coastal Zone Management office, along with other agencies, is also involved in the clean-up of Boston Harbor. As a regional resource that supports commerce and provides unlimited recreational opportunities, the state has been investing heavily in the Harbor's reclamation. Boston Harbor has long suffered from wastewater, originating throughout the metropolitan Boston area, that is transported in one of the oldest sewer systems in the country. During periods of heavy rain and snow, the more than 100 combined sewer outfalls in the metropolitan area release raw sewage into numerous water bodies which ultimately flow into the harbor. Further fouling the harbor waters are the 70 tons of industrial sludge that are discharged into it every day. In 1986, Boston Harbor flounder were found to have the highest prevalence of liver lesions and tumors of flounder taken from the state's sampled harbors and coastal waters by the Division of Water Pollution Control. In 1984 legislation was passed establishing the Massachusetts Water Resources Authority (MWRA), whose main task includes planning and management of a capital program to clean-up Boston Harbor and rehabilitate the water works and sewage collection disposal, and treatment systems for the 43 member communities. Boston Harbor is not the only coastal water needing help. Many of the North Shore shellfish flats have been closed since the early 1930s. Added together, Boston Harbor and the North Shore have a total of 24,780 acres of closed shellfish areas. The southeast region of the state has an additional 25,298 acres of shellfishing flats closed due to pollution. In New Bedford Harbor, due to elevated PCB levels in the sediments and water, the catching of fish has been banned. New Bedford Harbor and the accompanying Acushnet River, also had the highest incidence of lobster disease and soft shell blood diseases. The inland water supply of greatest concern is the Housatonic River in the southwestern part of the state, where fishing for consumption has been banned. A major issue that is being addressed is the problem of solid waste disposal. Massachusetts generates more than 6 million tons of garbage each year. Proper solid waste disposal is a fundamental principle of public health, yet 75% of the state's current landfill capacity will have been consumed by 1990. This problem is made worse by the fact that many older landfills are contaminating groundwater supplies. Falling rain percolates through the mixture of organic and inorganic trash. The water dissolves or leaches a great variety of chemicals, some of which are toxic. DEQE reports that 70% of the landfills which accept municipal and commercial solid waste do not comply with environmental regulations. Thirty facilities have never obtained DEQE's approval of the design and operating plans. Closing a landfill is always a last resort as it can create other problems, forcing communities to find alternative ways to dispose of their garbage. According to the DEQE, the shortage of disposal space is becoming a critical problem, the agency estimating that by 1988 the landfills which are being used by 118 communities will have reached the maximum capacity for which they were designed. Other communities will face the problem of finding alternative ways to dispose of their garbage in the immediate future. For example, 2,000 tons of garbage each day were shipped from Massachusetts communities to a Rhode Island landfill which was scheduled to close in early 1986. Solutions are varied. One solution is an attempt to reduce the need for additional landfill capacity through the promotion of resource recovery and recycling. Eastern Massachusetts should see the opening



*FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS* ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

of three resource recovery facilities which will convert solid waste into steam and electricity. However, these plants take a long time to plan and build and are often subscribed at or near their capacity even before they open. With regard to capping and properly closing existing landfills, the legislature in 1985 set aside $10 million for financial assistance to communities. The governor has proposed to establish a $60 million Waste Management Incentive Loan program which would allow the payment of up to 75% of project costs to municipalities of multi-municipal districts who agree to cleanup, phase out, or expand their landfills in accordance with state approved regional plans. According to the 1986 Governor's Budget Recommendations, improper hazardous waste disposal represents one of the greatest concerns to our society. Between 750 and 1,000 spills of hazardous materials and oil are reported to DEQE each year. A hazardous waste site is a place where waste have been deposited in a manner which threatens or can potentially threaten public health, safety, and the environment. Hazardous waste landfills can contaminate water supplies with cancer-causing chemicals, and poorly engineered incinerators can cause toxic air pollution. Massachusetts industries produce 190,000 tons of hazardous waste each year. The DEQE has implemented a four phase program to deal with hazardous waste site cleanup. Phase I is an initial determination of the hazardous waste or non-hazardous waste condition of the site. Phase II consists of a detailed site assessment for the sites deemed hazardous. Cleanup options are detailed in Phase III and the actual site cleanup is conducted in Phase IV. As of 1986, a total of 217 sites were in some phase of the clean-up process. Since March of 1985, 41 sites have progressed forward at least one phase and, most significantly, 18 sites entered Phase IV. Over 200 new sites have been confirmed since 1983. Almost 50% of those were identified in FY 1986. Intermediate remedial measures such as fencing, removal of noxious wastes, or leakage containment have been taken at seven sites since 1983. These measures, which minimize the public health risks, were expected to be completed at 20 sites in FY 1987. Final cleanup has been completed at 57 sites. Each year, 90,000 tons of hazardous waste must be sent out of state because appropriate disposal technology is not available in the Commonwealth. This creates the added hazard of moving the materials. To better insure a safe transport, the state has been developing tougher licensing standards. Not only have there been no major accidents involving hazardous waste on Massachusetts highways since the licensing program was begun in 1972, but there are approximately 40 fewer companies eligible to haul the waste. To add to this, the DEQE now has a computerized manifest tracking system. Currently the state is trying to encourage the reduction of waste generated by Massachusetts industries and expand in-state disposal capacity. Acid rain, a complicated and not yet fully understood environmental problem, is currently showering Massachusetts with its adverse effects. It is related to the change in chemical composition of rainfall associated with long distance transport of the air pollutants from the combustion of fossil fuels. The damages of acid rain were first seen in the decline of the state's freshwater fish population. Effects of acid rain are now showing up in forest and cultural resources. Massachusetts takes pride in its efforts to be a leader in combating and researching acid rain. In 1984, the Governor's Advisory Council on Acid Rain prepared a comprehensive agenda for research, funded at over $1.5 million. Included will be damage assessments to forests, lakes, and streams. Massachusetts began its lobbying efforts on acid rain by sponsoring annual Acid Rain Awareness Weeks in 1983, trying to force federal action rather than wait for it. An environmental problem receiving recent attention has been the loss of wetlands in Massachusetts, most noticably salt marshes that cannot be restored. Wetlands form a natural flood plain and their filling for developmental or agricultural purposes increases flooding and erosion. Air quality standards have been achieved for most pollutants, though carbon monoxide and hydrocarbon standards were still violated at some locations. Among the five Massachusetts cities with monitoring stations that figured the air Pollutant Standard Index in 1984, only the city of Springfield showed a level that reached "unhealthful," and this was for one-quarter of the year. Neither Worcester nor Boston came close to an "unhealthful" reading.

## THE PEOPLE

Massachusetts' 1980 population of 5,737,037 ranked the state 11th nationally and showed less than a 1% increase from 1970, compared to an 11.4% national increase. For the decade of the '80s, Massachusetts is projected to decrease in population by 0.8% and another 3.7% in the 1990s, at which time it will have become the 15th most populated state. The Bay State ranked number three in population density, with 733 people per square mile. Nearly 5 million of its citizens, over 86%, inhabit the eastern two-thirds of the state. Over 90% live within 95 miles of Boston. More than 2.65 million people, 46% of the population, live in either Suffolk, Middlesex, or Essex County. More than 56% of the people live in population centers of 25,000 or more. Massachusetts ranks eighth nationally in the percentage of its population living in metropolitan areas. Only 16.2% live in rural areas, though this is an increase from 15.4% in 1970. Boston is the state's largest city, with a 1980 population of 562,994, making it the nation's 20th largest. It has shown a steady decline in population since 1950 when it claimed 801,444 residents. In the decade of the '70s, Boston's population dropped 12.2% from 641,071. Census provisional projections show that its population was on the rise in the early 80s, up 1.4% in the period between 1980 and 1984. Even with its gradual loss in population, Boston holds more than a 3 to 1 advantage over the second largest city, Worcester, at 161,799 in 1980. Worcester, too, had seen its population decline. In 1960 its population was 186,587. Worcester also is experiencing growth in the early '80s with a 2% increase projected from 1980 to 1985. Springfield is the third largest city, with a 1980 census of 152,319. The increase in people moving to rural areas is reinforced by the fact that, between 1970 and 1980, nine out of the state's 10 largest cities, and 18 out of the top 20,and 32 of the top 40 cities showed a decrease in population. The only top-ten city to gain in population was Brockton, the state's sixth largest. Massachusetts' slow growth tendencies are further reflected in its major SMSAs, especially when compared to national trends. In a ranking of 305 SMSAs nationwide, the Boston SMSA ranked 287th in growth between 1970 and 1980, actually losing in population, though at a lesser rate than the city of Boston. Springfield, the second largest SMSA in Massachusetts, ranked 282 in growth.

# MASSACHUSETTS TODAY

Worcester came in at 263. In the west, Pittsfield SMSA ranked 297th. Factors vary as to the reasons for the slow growth. Massachusetts was particularly hard hit by the economic recession of the 1970s, causing many citizens to leave for greener pastures. Another consideration is Massachusetts' low birth rate, ranking 50th in the nation, which causes a small natural increase in population. For instance, the national rate for natural increase (births vs. deaths per 1,000 people) was 7.1 in 1980 compared to a very low 3.1 in Massachusetts. From 1970 to 1980 the national rate dropped from 8.7 to 7.1, while the Massachusetts rate fell from 6.4 to 3.1. In 1984 the state rate was still markedly lower than the national rate, 4.0 to 7.0. The low birth rate is connected to a significant and long-term problem—the aging of the population. As of July 1, 1984, Massachusetts ranked eighth in the percentage of its population over age 65, with 13.4% (the national average was 11.9%), reflecting a total of 777,000 people. This shows a sharp rise from 12.7% in 1980 when the number was 727,000. Between 1970 and 1980 the percentage of the population over the age of 60 rose from 15.6% to 17.5%. Between 1980 and 1984 there was also a 13.1% decrease in the number of residents between the ages of 5 and 17. The largest concentration of persons over the age of 60 is located in the Boston SMSA where, in 1980, 475,013 resided, making up 17% of the population. The city of Fall River in Bristol County has 33,922 residents over age 60, comprising 22% of the population. Of Quincy's 84,743 inhabitants, where the median age is 34.3, 23% were over age 60. The median age statewide in 1980 was 31.2 compared with 30 nationally. The county with the highest median age is Barnstable (Cape Cod) with 37.3. The island counties, Dukes and Nantucket, follow with 34.6 and 34.8. Hampshire is the county with the youngest median age, 27.5. Ironically, Suffolk County, the heart of the Boston SMSA and the most elderly by number in the state, has the second lowest median age at 29.3. Though containing Boston, Suffolk County cannot claim the title of the most populated county. That goes to Middlesex County, whose 1,367,034, was more than double that of the 650,142 claimed by Suffolk County. Seven of the state's seventeen largest cities are located in Middlesex County, whose largest city, Cambridge with 95,172, is the state's fifth largest. The smallest counties by population are the island counties. Nantucket's 1980 population was only 5,959 in 1980 and Dukes County had but 10,023 residents. The inland county with the least population was Franklin County, located in the Berkshire Hills, with 64,849. Other than Boston, Suffolk County contains only three cities or towns: Winthrop, Chelsea, and Revere. Because all cities and towns are contiguous there are no unincorporated areas in Massachusetts. Worcester, the county with the third largest population, has the most cities and towns, 60. Middlesex County is second with 54. The county with the fewest cities and towns is Nantucket, where the town and the county are one and the same. The largest population growth by percentage has taken place in the Cape Cod area and on the island counties. Barnstable County (Cape Cod) showed the most growth in the 70s with a 53% jump. From 1980 to 1985 another 10% increase is projected. Dukes County (Martha's Vineyard) increased in population by 46.2% between 1970 and 1980, after experiencing only a 4.9% rise in the previous decade. It is expected to have another 12% influx in the 1980 to 1985 period. Nantucket County experienced a 34.8% increase in the decade of the '70s, after a mild 6% increase in the 1960s. It, too, will see more growth in the 1980s, with a 17% jump forseen for the first half of the decade. The two inland counties to experience noticeable growth in the 1970s were Hampshire at 12% and Franklin at 8.6%. Several counties saw a significant slowdown in growth in the 1970s from the 1960s, particularly Norfolk County which dropped dramatically from a rate of 18.5% in the 1960s to .3% in the 1970s. It is projected to lose population at a rate of 0.3% in the first half of the 1980s. Two other counties which experienced similar slowdowns were Plymouth, dropping from 34.2% to 21.6% and Hampshire, going from 20.1% to 12.1%. Statewide Massachusetts slowed from 10.5% growth in the '60s to 0.8% in the '70s. The densest areas in population are in the counties along the north shore. By far the county with the highest density is Suffolk, which manages to find room for 11,406 people per square mile. This rate easily outdistances Middlesex County, which fits 1,663 people per square mile within it borders. No Massachusetts county falls below the national density rate of 64 person per square mile. The county with the lowest population density is Dukes, the third smallest in area, with 87.7 people per square mile. Nantucket County, the other island county, ranks third lowest with 108.2 people per square mile, while the upland county of Franklin is second lowest with 91.6 persons per square mile. The percentage of people living in urban areas varies widely. In the western region, Berkshire County has only 34.8% and Franklin County only 35% of its population living in urban areas. On the other hand, 100% of Suffolk County's and 92.1% of Middlesex County's population lives in urban areas. Statewide, only 14% of the population live outside designated SMSAs. Massachusetts' population shows substantial racial diversity, consisting of 5,362,836 Whites, 221,279 Blacks (3.9% of the population), 49,501 Asians, and 7,743 American Indians and Eskimos in 1980. The state's percentage of Blacks ranks it 29th nationally. Two cities, Springfield and Boston, are home to 69% of the state's Black population. The Boston and Springfield SMSAs contain 85% of the Black population. The city of Boston has 126,229 Blacks, which comprises 22% of its total population, ranking it 172nd nationwide among cities of 25,000 or more residents. The Boston SMSA has 160,434 Blacks, which makes up 72% of the state total. Springfield has 25,219 Black residents, 16% of its population. With the exception of Springfield, the Black population is centralized in the eastern cities. Of the state's 25,015 Chinese, the largest Asian Group in Massachusetts, 21,541 live in the Boston SMSA, while 3,156 of the total of 4,483 Japanese also live within the Boston SMSA. Suffolk County (Boston), though making up 11% of the state's population, contains 48% of its non-white residents. In an overlapping non-racial category, the state contains 141,043 people of Spanish origin (people of Spanish origin can be of any race), of which 66,417 live within the Boston SMSA and 36,068 within the city of Boston. Of the state's major cities, Springfield has the highest percentage of this group, with a total of 13,804 or 8% of its population. The median age of the Springfield group is a very low 17.2. The highest percentage statewide, over 50%, are Puerto Rican. Suffolk County is home to 28% of the Spanish in the state. Massachusetts, for good reason, is know for its ethnicity. No less than six distinct single ancestry groups claim more than 160,000 residents. The largest number are Irish,



*FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS* ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

with 666,567 (almost 12% of the state's population), then the English with 460,687, and the Italians with 430,412. Almost two-thirds of the Irish live in the Boston SMSA, and 14% live in the city of Boston. Thirty-seven percent of the state's English live in the northeast counties of Middlesex and Essex. Over half the Italian population lives in the Boston SMSA. Strong pockets still exist for several ancestry groups. For example, the largest number of Polish descendants reside in Hamden County, the seventh most populated county in the state. Worcester County has the largest concentration of Swedes containing 11,949 of the state's total of 44,900. Worcester County also has the largest number of people with French ancestry, claiming 75,075 of the state's 312,515. Perhaps the most distinctive settling of one ancestry group is in Bristol County where 119,846 of the state's 190,298 Portugese reside. New Bedford and Fall River (not surprisingly, both are port cities), the county's two largest cities, have concentrations of Portuguese. Of New Bedford's 98,478 citizens, 37,462 claim Portuguese decent, and of Fall River's 92,382 people, 36,821 are Portuguese. Ninety-one percent of the people living in Massachusetts in 1980 were native to the United States or Puerto Rico. Current residents born within the state make up 71.7% of the total population. Of the 500,982 foreign born residents, 299,929 are naturalized citizens.

**VOTER PARTICIPATION** Bay Stater's have always had a keen interest in presidential elections. Three U.S. Presidents, John Adams, his son John Quincy Adams, and John F. Kennedy were born and raised in Massachusetts. Another, Calvin Coolidge, spent most of his youth there. With respect to voter turnout in the post-World War II era, this interest peaked in 1960, the year John Kennedy (a Democrat) ran for president. That year, 91.7% of those registered to vote did so, though, interestingly, the 39.6% who voted Republican represented the highest percentage voting Republican in any of the three presidential election of the 1960s. Since 1960, there has been a steady decrease in the percentage of registered voters turning out (with the exception of 1976 when there was less than a 2% increase from 1972) for presidential elections, reaching a low of 79.8% in 1984. This was still well above the national average of 72.9% and ranked Massachusetts 10th in the nation. The actual number of Massachusetts votes cast in presidential elections has stayed between 2.5 million and 2.6 million since 1972. Following national trends, a much higher percentage of registered voters turn out for presidential elections than for "off-year" elections (election years between presidential elections), when many state elections are held. In Massachusetts, the Governor and Lieutenant Governor, the Attorney General, and the State Treasurer are elected every four years in off-year elections. Representatives and Senators in the state General Court are elected every two years. The total of 3,253,785 registered voters in October 1984 represented an all-time high. Registered voters have steadily increased since 1948, when the total was 2,484,938. Off-year voter registration has also steadily increased during the same time period, topping three million for the first time in 1982. Off-year turnout reached a low in 1974 when only 64.8% of registered voters showed up at the polls, a significant decrease from 1970 when 76.1% of registered voters participated. In 1982, there was a 69.5% turnout among registered voters, a less than 1% increase from 1978. Massachusetts' 13 electoral votes (down from 14 in 1980) went to Ronald Reagan, who defeated Walter Mondale, 1,310,936 (51.4%) to 1,239,606 (48%). Reagan's 51.4% of the Massachusetts vote ranked 49th nationwide in a year when Walter Mondale would win only his home state and the District of Columbia. The 51.4% figure showed an increase of nine percentage points over 1980 when Reagan collected 42%, but was still able to beat Democrat Jimmy Carter by 2,500 votes. Statewide, Reagan carried nine of the Bay State's 14 counties in 1984, showing the largest margin of victory in Plymouth and Worcester Counties. Of the five counties carried by Mondale, only Suffolk, where he won by 61,000 votes, showed a significant margin of victory. Third party influence had no real affect on 1984 presidential elections in the Bay State, as opposed to 1980 when Independent candidate John Anderson garnered 15% of the vote, possibly costing Jimmy Carter the state. In 1984, only 8,911 votes were cast for candidates other than Reagan and Mondale. Of these, 7,998 were cast for the Massachusetts Independence Alliance ticket of Serrette and Ross. Since 1952, Massachusetts has voted for the winning presidential ticket seven of nine elections. The Massachusetts presidential primary is one of the nation's earliest, occurring on "Super Tuesday" in mid-March. The state's large constituency draws heavy media usage by the primary candidates. The Massachusetts primary has not been without its surprise winners; witness Henry Jackson in 1976 and Gary Hart in 1984. In the 1984 presidential Democratic primary, Hart gathered 243,943 votes (38.4%), Mondale collected 160,893 (25.1%), George McGovern had 134,341 (21%), and John Glenn and Jesse Jackson managed less than 10% each. On the Republican side, it was the only state primary in 1980 in which Ronald Reagan failed to finish ahead of either George Bush or John Anderson. Reagan ran unopposed in the 1984 Massachusetts primary. State politics lean heavily towards the Democrats. As of 1986, the governor and lieutenant governor, the secretary of state, both U.S. Senators, and 10 of the state's 11 members of the U.S. House of Representatives were Democrats. In the Massachusetts General Court, 32 of the 40 senate seats and 128 of the 160 house seats were won by Democrats in the fall of 1986. This reflected no change from 1984 in the state senate and a Democratic gain of four seats in the House. On a county level, 10 of the 11 district attorneys and 12 of the 14 county sheriffs were Democrats. As of February 1984, of the 3,054,129 registered voters in Massachusetts, 1,475,942 (48.5%) were Democrats, 391,072 (12.7%) were Republicans, and 1,187,115 (38.7%) were unenrolled. The city of Boston and Suffolk County remain a Democratic stronghold where 226,711 voters are registered Democrats compared with 19,837 Republicans. Middlesex County also has over a four to one ratio of registered Democrats to Republicans. Two counties, Dukes and Nantucket, which are also the two smallest in population, had more registered Republicans than Democrats. In several parts of the state, party affiliations are so strong that winning the primary can be a more formidable task than winning the general election. In the general election, nine of the 11 U.S. House seats were won by a wide margin (at least 60% to 40%) or were unopposed in 1984. In four of the nine, the Congressman won a smaller percentage of the vote in their primary than in the general election. In 1986, ten of the 11 races for U.S. House were unopposed in the general election, as were

27 of the 40 state senate races. In 1982, Massachusetts returned a former governor to the state's highest office. Democrat Michael Dukakis, who has held the governorship from 1975 through 1979 before losing in the 1978 Democratic primary to Edward King (who went on to win the general election), defeated King in a close primary race in 1982, 631,911 to 549,335. Dukakis went on to handily defeat Republican John Sears in the general election. In 1986, Dukakis ran unopposed in the Democratic primary and won a clear victory against Republican George Kariotis in the general election, 1,157,786 to 525,364. The lieutenant governor runs on the same ticket as the governor in Massachusetts, but must win separately in the primary. The office was vacant from 1983 through 1986, when John Kerry, who was elected as part of the Dukakis ticket in 1982, ran for and won the U.S. Senate seat held by Paul Tsongas, who had retired for health reasons. Kerry was re-elected to the Senate in 1984. The lieutenant governor position was filled in 1986, when Evelyn Murphy, who had finished second to Kerry in the 1982 primary, won on the ticket with Governor Dukakis. Only one U.S. Representative election, in the eighth district, produced a new winner in 1986. Since 1946, the eighth district had been represented by either John F. Kennedy or by Thomas B. (Tip) O'Neill. O'Neill, who had been Speaker of the U.S. House of Representatives, resigned effective January, 1987. This seat was won by Joseph Kennedy, II, the nephew of both John Kennedy and current United States Senator (Massachusetts) Edward Kennedy, and the son of former United States Senator (New York) Robert Kennedy. Winning a seat in the U.S. House can lend itself to job security. Among Massachusetts Congressmen holding office in 1986, the average length of stay was just under 16 years. Two had been in over 30 years (one of which was O'Neill) and another for 28 years. Kennedy's eighth district win was the first time a seat had changed hands since 1980. The lone Republican U.S. Representative is Silvio Conte from District One in the Berkshire Hills, who has held the seat since 1958. Massachusetts voters have the right to vote on both inactive and referendum questions. Eleven questions were included on the 1986 state ballot: two constitutional amendments, one referendum on an existing law, three laws proposed by initiative petition, two nonbinding question, and three public policy questions. Question No. 1 was a constitutional amendment that would have allowed the legislature to prohibit or regulate abortions to the extent permitted by the U.S. Constitution, and in effect would have allowed the state not to require public or private funding for abortions beyond what is required under the U.S. Constitution. This measure was rejected by 959,311 to 689,908. The second constitutional amendment, Question No. 2, would have allowed the expenditure of public funds for private schools and private school students. This measure also failed, 1,154,069 to 502,170. Question No. 3 was a law proposed by initiative petition that would reduce, then repeal, the 7 1/2% surtax on state income taxes, and limit state tax revenue growth to the level of growth in total wages and salaries of the state's citizens. This measure passed, 866,583 to 726,684. A proposal to require the State Department of Environmental Quality Engineering to search for oil or hazardous spill sites and then clean up those sites, was the second law proposed by initiative petition, passing 1,174,676 to 404,521. The third proposed law by initiative petition would have provided a system of voter registration by mail applicable to all qualified voters, and would have eliminated statutory provisions permitting certain persons to vote only for presidential electors. This measure failed, 966,229 to 603,370. The existing law that requires all drivers and passengers to wear safety belts and imposes a fine on violators was approved by a referendum, 892,580 to 769,806.

## THE ECONOMY

Massachusetts' dynamic economy has become a model for other states. Diverging from its historical role as a leading manufacturer of textiles and durable goods, the state has promoted a cooperative effort among government, business, and academic institutions to develop industries on the leading edge of high technology. This effort has created a domino effect, impacting construction and housing, services, and retail and wholesale trade. Rebounding from a high mark of 14% unemployment in 1976, the rate had stabilized at around 4% in 1986. Between 1985 and 1986, employment in construction increased by approximately 7,000 jobs, trade employment was up by 22,000 jobs, and services employment improved by almost 31,000. These increases offset declines in the manufacturing of durable goods, down 18,000, and non-durable goods, a decrease of 7,000 jobs. Overall, the Massachusetts' economy posted a 3.1% increase in total employment significantly above the United States average of 2.5%. Other leading economic indicators also reflect continued growth and prosperity. Personal income increased 11.6% between 1983 and 1984, and per capita income grew 10.9%. Nominal income grew by 8.3% in 1986, and is expected to grow 8.7% in 1987. A 4.6% increase in the number of total housing permits authorized between 1985 and 1986, provided the impetus for the increase in employment in that sector. A primary contributor to the economic boom has been the reduction of the tax burden to individuals and business. State and local taxes and fees, as a percentage of personal income, are among the ten lowest in the nation. Proposition 2 1/2, a 1980 ballot initiative, slashed property taxes, reducing the property tax burden to a low of $40.30 per $1000 in 1984. This is 41% below its 1979 level. At the same time, the state did not raise taxes in other areas. In 1977, the business tax burden ranked fourth highest among 17 large industrial states. By 1984, reductions in unemployment insurance and reform in workers' compensation regulation had improved the state's ranking to 12th. Further changes in unemployment insurance reduced the overall business tax burden from 4.44% of business income in 1984 to 4.06% in 1986. This was sufficient to drop Massachusetts to 14th nationally. The 1985 *Places Rated Almanac* measures economic indicators, taxes, and several other factors, to evaluate 329 metropolitan areas. The *Almanac* rated the Boston metropolitan area as the second-best in which to live in the nation, and the rankings of Lawrence-Havervill, Springfield, Worcester, and Salem-Gloucester were rated above average. Overall, eight of ten metro areas improved in the rankings from 1981. With continued growth and a stable climate for business opportunity, the future of the Massachusetts economy is very positive.

**EMPLOYMENT** The men and women who labor in Massachusetts have a history of turning difficult employment cycles into economic rebirth and technological advancement. When the emerging nation relied on overseas trade for its economic

survival, it turned to Massachusetts workers for the building of ships, canvas, and rope. Later, when the War of 1812 prohibited a reliance on England and France for finished products, and the U.S. was forced to become more of a manufacturing center, workers in Massachusetts delivered once again—in textiles, leather products, apparel, and machinery. Massachusetts eventually became the birthplace of the nations's first telephone, railroad, transformer, and gasoline-powered automobile. Massachusetts was hit hard during the recessionary cycles of the 1970s, but successfully moved into the 1980s with job growth in high technology, services, and trade industries. This contributed to a boom in the construction industry, and a favorable employment outlook in the mid-1980s.The state lost thousands of manufacturing jobs and watched its unemployment rate climb above the national average, beyond 10%, by the mid-1970s. Forced to harness its resilience, Massachusetts successfully revamped its economy, boosting the training and educational aptitude of its workers, and emerged victorious a decade later. During a 10-year period from 1975 to 1985, Massachusetts brought its unemployment rate down from nearly 11% to under 4%. By 1985, Massachusetts had the lowest unemployment rate (3.9%) of any of the nation's top 10 industrialized states. Economists point to limited growth in the state's population, coupled with job growth in high technology industries, aggressive state economic development programs, and low relative production costs as the major contributing factors in the state's reduction in unemployment. Yet stiff competition from overseas manufacturers continued to cause strife for this sector of the employment force, as manufacturing in Massachusetts, as well as the rest of the United States, continued to decline during the mid-1980s. Within the span of one 12-month period, from June 1985 to June 1986, the state lost 27,000 manufacturing jobs. But while the manufacturing sector continued to decline, service and high technology jobs increased. Massachusetts also experienced a significant improvement in its level of average hourly earnings, especially when compared to national averages. In 1980, Massachusetts was a low wage state, with average hourly wages at only 89.4% of the U.S. average. But by 1985, the state's wage rate climbed to 94.5% of the U.S. average. In September 1986, Massachusetts showed a total nonagricultural labor force of 2,299,300, including 816,800 in services and 625,600 in manufacturing. The remainder of the state's employed labor force included 554,100 in retail trade; 157,400 in wholesale trade; 204,500 in finance, insurance, and real estate; 125,800 in construction; 130,600 in transportation, communications, and public utilities; and 1,400 in mining. Government employees totaled 374,100. While economic indicators showed a continuing trend of employment growth in the Commonwealth, the distinction between the ups and downs in the overall job market was clear. Industries suffering the biggest losses in employment during this period were in durable goods manufacturing, which had 443,500 employed workers in September 1985, but witnessed a loss of 23,800 jobs (-5.4%) during the next 12 months. Transportation equipment had a loss of 4,100 (-10.1%) workers, from 40,400 to 36,300 during the period. Measuring and controlling devices lost 2,300 employed workers (-10%), from 23,000 to 2,700. Metalworking machinery lost 1,300 workers (-8.7%), declining from 14,900 to 13,600. Special industries machinery dropped during this period from 14,900 to 13,900, a decline of 1,000 (-6.7%) employees. The lumber and furniture workforce declined from 12,000 to 11,200 (-6.7%), affecting 3,000 workers. Fabricated metals lost 3,000 jobs (-6.3%), declining from 47,500 to 44,500. Among non-durable goods manufacturers, leather and leather products manufacturers lost 2,200 workers (-17.2%), from 12,800 to 10,600. Employment in the service industries jumped by 35,700 (4.6%) from September 1985 to the same month in 1986, from 781,000 to 816,800 workers. Within this sector, educational services employment increased by 4,100 workers (4%), from 102,900 to 107,000. Retail trade employment gained 15,900 workers (3%), going from 193,400 to 204,500. Employment in finance, insurance and real estate jumped by 11,000 (5.7%). In wholesale trade, employment increased from 153,300 to 157,400 (2.75%) adding 4,100 workers. In response to a building boom, construction employment increased by 7,500 workers (6.3%), going from 118,300 in September 1985 to 125,800 for the same month in 1986. Employment in transportation, communications and public utilities expanded from 126,800 to 130,600, an increase of 3,000 (1.2%) workers. The Massachusetts labor market is dominated by the Boston Primary Metropolitan Statistical Area (PMSA). With a labor force of 1,515,540, the Boston PMSA accounts for 49.3% of the Commonwealth's total labor force of 3,077,100. More than 30% of the state's labor force is found within five of the state's remaining statistical areas: the Springfield Metropolitan Area (MSA), 242,630—7.8% of the state's total; the Worcester MSA, 206,150—6.7%, the Lawrence-Haverhill PMSA, 185,210—6%; the Lowell PMSA, 152,210—4.9%; and the Salem-Gloucester PMSA, 151,210—4.9%. Unemployment rates in September 1986 were recorded at the following levels in these major metropolitan statistical areas: Boston (3.9%), Springfield (4.4%), Worcester (4.9%), Lawrence-Haverhill (5.3%), Lowell (4.9%), and Salem-Gloucester (3.8%). A review of average hourly earnings among Massachusetts workers in the manufacturing sector in September 1986 showed some of the Commonwealth's top hourly wage earners to be employed in industries most vulnerable to unemployment woes. These included hourly wage-earners in special industry machinery ($11.73); transportation equipment ($11.58); stone, clay, and glass ($11.35); and metalworking machinery ($10.79). Other manufacturing workers earning top hourly wages were in communications equipment ($10.73); cutlery, hand tools, and hardware ($10.67); and instruments ($10.00). In nondurable goods manufacturing, top hourly wage earners were employed in chemicals ($10.73), printing and publishing ($9.67), food and kindred products ($9.38), and paper and allied products ($9.37). A governor's executive summary has projected a 15.8% growth rate in new jobs from 1984 to 1995, with more than half of these new jobs in the service sector. Top growth industries within the services sector include business services, expected to grow by 87,500 (60%) during the 10-year period. Health services are projected to grow almost 23%. The outlook in education services was mixed. Elementary and secondary schools are estimated to experience a 13% growth in employment, while colleges and universities will decline by 5%. Manufacturing is expected to grow approximately 6%, providing an additional 38,400 jobs. This overall increase includes an 11.8% growth in durable goods and a 6.5% decline in nondurable goods. Wholesale

and retail trades are expected to maintain 23% of the Commonwealth's employment during the period. Construction employment is predicted to show an 18% increase in residential and operative construction, and 33% in both public works and special trade construction. Government employment is projected to decline from 6.2% to 5.4% of the total employment force during the period.

**UNIONS** As of 1986, Massachusetts had not legislated a Right-to-Work law. The Labor Relations Commission is the state counterpart to the National Labor Relations Board (NLRB). The Commission administers the Public Employee Bargaining Law and the "Baby Wagner Act," General Laws 150E and 150A, respectively. The laws give employees of state and local government, and employees in private business which do not come within the jurisdiction of the NLRB, the right and protection to form unions, enter into collective bargaining, or not to participate in a union if so desired. The Commission has existed since 1937, and its jurisdiction has evolved as the legislature has granted full collective bargaining rights to government employees. Currently, 98% of the Commission's caseload involves labor matters affecting public employees and 2% of the caseload concerns employees of private employers. Pursuant to its responsibility for timely resolutions of labor disputes, the Commission performs five primary functions. The Commission investigates and adjudicates charges of unfair labor practices, determines the organization which represents employees as a bargaining unit, and pursues litigation in the Courts when a party to a dispute does not comply with an order. The Commission also has the authority to prevent and terminate strikes by public employees and to determine levels for an agency service fee. Chapter 150E allows public employees to enter into collective bargaining agreements which require non-union employees covered by the agreement to pay an agency service fee to the union, to aid in covering the cost of collective bargaining and contract administration. As of October 1982, over 65,510 state employees (74.8% of all state employees) and 139,649 public employees on the local level (65.0%) were members of bargaining units. A total of 2,152 bargaining units existed in the public sector. Of 797 state and local governments, including special districts, 395, or 49.6% had collective bargaining obligations.

**AGRICULTURE** Although relatively small compared to other states, the farm industry has been and is an important economic activity in Massachusetts. In 1984, the state ranked first in the production of cranberries, accounting for 50.1% of the national total. Massachusetts also ranked eighth in the production of sweet corn. According to 1985 agricultural figures, Massachusetts had 214,000 acres in crops; 52,000 acres in pastures; 48,000 acres in grassland, 2,811,000 acres of forest; 525,000 acres in specialties, such as federal and state areas used primarily for recreation and wildlife purposes, and military areas; 1,342,000 acres classified as "other"; and 16,000 acres idle, for a total of 5,008,000 acres. Although Massachusetts, like many other states, experienced a decrease in the number of farms during the period from the end of World War II to the mid-1970s, the number has stabilized in the 1980s. In 1985, there were 680,000 acres of land in 6,000 farms in Massachusetts, an increase of 500 farms since 1974. In 1985, the average farm size in Massachusetts was 113 acres, compared to the national average of 445 acres. In 1982, 4,541 of Massachusetts' farms were owned by individuals or families, while 377 were owned in partnership and 413 were corporately owned. In 1982, those farmers pursuing agriculture as their principal occupation numbered 2,941, while 2,460 farmers were primarily engaged in non-farming occupations. Over 78% of farm operators in 1982 resided on the farms which they operated. In 1982, the state's hired farm labor force totaled 17,458 workers. As of April 1, 1985, the total value of farmland and buildings in Massachusetts was $1.613 billion, with buildings comprising $597 million of this total. Total value of farmland and buildings increased 31.6% from 1981 to 1985. The average value of state farmland and buildings per acre in 1985 was $2,372, compared to the national average of $679. The state's cash receipts from farming in 1984 totaled $389.1 million, including $3.1 million representing home consumption. Crop production brought in $251.1 million, accounting for 66% of the total cash receipts, while livestock grossed $131.8 million. In 1984, total farm assets in Massachusetts were reported as $1.15 billion, with proprietors' equities at $945 million. Total liabilities equaled $207 million. Massachusetts' gross farm income for 1983 totaled $420.4 million, a decrease of 1.2% from 1982, but a 4.0% increase from the 1981 figure. The value of farm inventory increased $8.5 million from 1982 to 1983. With a large increase in inventory value and a relatively small increase in production expenses, Massachusetts' agriculture had a net farm income, after inventory adjustment, of $102.6 million in 1983. This figure reflected a 3.4% increase from 1982, and a 73% increase from the 1980 low of $59.3 million. Cash receipts from all crops and products sold in 1984 totaled $384.9 million, not including government payments and the value of home consumption, a 4.2% increase from 1983. Cash receipts from greenhouse/nursery products were $107.5 million, or 28% of the total, while cash receipts from cranberries totaled $84.955 million, or 22% of the total, and cash receipts from dairy products equaled $83.9 million, also 22% of the total. Total livestock cash receipts decreased 3.9% from 1983 to 1984, while total crop cash receipts increased 9.1%. The state livestock totals for 1984 were 100,000 head of cattle and calves, 11,000 head of sheep and lambs, and 40,000 head of hogs and pigs. The number of cattle and calves was up 2% from the previous year due to the largest number of calves born since 1978. The cattle and calf inventory included 47,000 milk cows, 9,000 beef cows, 19,000 heifers, 5,000 bulls and steers over 500 pounds, and 20,000 calves. Value per head for sheep and lambs in 1984 was $121, higher by $12 than the previous record set in 1982. Sheep and lamb production equaled 801,000 pounds, with 720,000 pounds being marketed in 1984. Gross income from sheep and lambs was $644,000, an increase of 42% from 1983. Wool production during 1984 totaled 73,000 pounds, with a value of $49,000. Hog and pig production in 1984 totaled 9.7 million pounds, a decrease of 16% from 1983. The gross income from the 9.6 million pounds marketed was $4.7 million, the lowest gross income since 1971. In 1984, dairy products accounted for 22% of the cash receipts from farm marketing in Massachusetts. According to the 1982 county figures, Worcester, Franklin, and Berkshire were the state's top three counties in the sale of dairy products. In 1984, milk production totaled 575 million pounds, of which 565 million



*FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS* ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

pounds were marketed and 10 million pounds were used on the farms where produced. Total cash receipts from milk marketed was $83.9 million, down 7.6% from the record high set in 1983. Of the 565 million pounds of milk marketed in 1984, 540 million pounds were sold to processing plants, and 11.6 million quarts were sold directly to consumers. Cash receipts from milk sold to processing plants totaled $77.8 million, while cash receipts from milk sold directly to consumers totaled $6.2 million. The 1984 production of manufactured dairy products in Massachusetts was below the 1983 levels in all commodities except ice cream. A total of 11.7 million pounds of cheese was produced in 1984, down 8% from the 1983 production. Massachusetts' egg production in 1984 totaled 268 million eggs, an increase of 3 million from the 1983 total. Poultrymen received a record high $1.09 per dozen eggs in 1984. The gross income from egg production equaled $24.3 million, 21% higher than the previous year's gross. The 1984 inventory of chickens on farms (excluding broilers) totaled 1.5 million birds. Poultrymen marketed 3.9 million pounds of poultry during 1984, for a total gross income of $651,000. Crop production in Massachusetts accounted for 66% of the cash receipts from farm marketing in 1984. Corn silage production from the .40,000 acres harvested totaled 620,000 tons in 1984, the smallest output on record since 1977. The value of the corn silage crop was $18.7 million. In 1984, 126,000 acres of hay were harvested, producing 300,000 tons valued at $28.95 million. Hay production was down 4% from 1983, but the crop value of hay in 1984 was slightly above the 1983 value. Massachusetts farmers produced 785,000 pounds of tobacco in 1984: 490,000 pounds of shade type and 295,000 pounds of Havana Seed. Fruit and vegetable crops accounted for 35% of the cash receipts from farm marketing in Massachusetts in 1984. Cranberry production amounted to 22% of this figure. In 1984, cranberry production surpassed all its previous records. Growers harvested 11,200 acres, producing 1.7 million barrels, an increase of 242,000 barrels from 1983. Of the barrels produced in 1984, 170,000 were utilized for fresh sales, 1.442 million were sold to processors, and 51,000 were paid for by processors but lost because of dehydration and berry breakdown after delivery. The value of the utilized cranberry production in 1984 totaled $90.5 million, a 23% increase in value from 1983. According to the 1982 county figures, Plymouth ranked first in production of cranberries, with Barnstable second and Bristol third. The value of both apple and tomato production increased in 1984. The production of apples totaled 2.3 million, 42-pound units, with a total value of $18.1 million, the highest on record. Tomato growers harvested 660 acres, producing 152,000 cwt., at a total value of $4.1 million, nearly a 46% increase in value from 1983. Sweet corn and potato growers experienced decreases in both production and crop value in 1984. Total sweet corn production was 713,000 cwt., down 87,000 cwt. from 1983, while the value of production declined from $10.6 million in 1983 to $10.3 million in 1984. Spring floods in 1984 destroyed many potato fields in Massachusetts, reducing the number of acres harvested to 2,900, the fewest on record. Total potato production was 580,000 cwt., down 66,000 cwt. from 1983, while the total value of production declined 32% from 1983 to 1984. In 1984, greenhouse and nursery production accounted for 42.5% of the cash receipts from crop sales in Massachusetts. Middlesex and Bristol Counties led the state in greenhouse and nursery production in 1982. Franklin, Hampshire, and Berkshire Counties were among the state's top five counties in Christmas tree production in 1986. Massachusetts is one of the several Northeastern states that produce maple syrup. The production of maple syrup in the state during the 1985 season totaled 24,000 gallons, a decrease of 7.6% from 1984. The total value of maple syrup production in 1985 was $509,000. In 1986, Franklin County led the state in the production of maple syrup, with Hampshire second and Berkshire third. Honey producers also experienced a poor season in 1985. The combination of poor weather conditions and low nectar secretion by honey plants caused no significant honey crop to be produced. In 1985, Massachusetts reported 3,695 beekeepers and 18,711 owned bee colonies. Worcester County had the most beekeepers with 834, while Middlesex County led the state in owned colonies with 3,927. Agribusiness in Massachusetts in 1984 was valued at several billion dollars, while food stores, the largest retail business in the state, generated sales of over $4.5 billion. Roadside stands have become a vital marketing tool in Massachusetts over the past several years. In 1985, there were close to 1,000 roadside stands, with an annual volume of more than $100 million of produce. This direct marketing approach has been profitable for local growers as well as consumers, who save food dollars by buying products at these roadside stands. In 1985, Massachusetts' agri-business firms earned $71 million from agricultural exports. Emphasis has been placed on the importance of adding value to products by processing them before they are sold abroad. These value-added products have significantly increased export earnings in Massachusetts in recent years. Massachusetts has also been involved in developing overseas markets for its agri-technologies. In 1985, Massachusetts had the second largest bio-technology program in the nation, with over $500 million invested in bio-technology. Several million dollars worth of research was being done on commercial applications of agricultural bio-technology, for which foreign markets were being developed. Massachusetts has also received the support of several computer companies in integrating computer technology with agriculture in overseas marketing. Agri-computer technology has become a viable part of Massachusetts' agricultural exports.

**INDUSTRY** Following the deep recession of the late 1970's and early 1980's, Massachusetts rebounded strongly as a leader in industrial growth. In 1976, the state's unemployment rate was 14%. The rate in June of 1986 was 3.6%, nearly 50% below the national average of 7.1%, and the second lowest rate of any state. Between 1983 and 1984, the workforce increased by 7.7%, from 2,337,339 to 2,516,528. The number of establishments grew by 5.4%, from 135,809 to 143,163. Much of this growth occurred in manufacturing and construction. Manufacturing employment increased 7.3%, from 618,517 to 663,507. A significant proportion occurred in the technology sector of the industry. Electric and electronic equipment expanded by 10.8%, from 96,950 to 107,409, while instruments and related products increased 8.9%, from 46,910 to 51,069. Modest gains were recorded in the textiles and apparels industries, 7.2% and 4.5%, respectively. However, a decrease in the number of establishments in these industries continued a trend of decline (textiles: 237 to 234; apparels:

659 to 641). According to the report of the Governor's Commission on the Future of Mature Industries, the greatest number of plant closings in 1983 occurred in the apparel and leather products industries (22), accounting for 32% of all plant closings in the state. Value added by manufacture totaled $27 billion in 1983, placing Massachusetts eleventh in the nation as compared to twelfth in 1977 at $16.3 billion. Construction employment expanded at a higher rate than manufacturing, improving 9.3%. The number of employees increased to 93,332 from 85,397 while the number of establishments increased by more than 500, from 11,407 to 11,956. Housing starts were up by more than 6,000 in 1983, from 16,000 in 1982 to 22,800, an increase of 40%. Improvements in manufacturing and construction employment provided the impetus for increases in the service sector of the economy. Retail trade employment improved 6.2%, from 454,986 to 483,101. Wholesale trade increased 8.6% in 1983, from 136,200 to 147,899. Service industries expanded their number of employees to 795,055 from 729,573, a difference of 9%. Retail sales for the state in 1982 were $28 billion. Wholesale trade accounted for $49.8 billion in sales for 1982. Finance, insurance, and real estate yielded the smallest increase in employment between 1983 and 1984, only 0.6%. Transportation, communication, and public utilities increased its number of employees 4.1%, from 112,346 to 116,910. Agricultural services, forestry, and fisheries employed 6.8% more workers in 1984 than in 1983. However, the number of persons employed in fishing, hunting, and trapping decreased 8.3%, from 2,734 to 2,506. Tourism has a significant impact on the Massachusetts economy. Tourism is the state's second largest industry, with travel-generated employment estimated at 91,223 jobs in 1985. These include 10,920 in Barnstable County, 17,149 in Middlesex County, and 36,858 in Suffolk County. In 1985, travelers spent almost $6 billion in Massachusetts. These expenditures generated $1.2 billion in payroll, $208 million in state tax revenue, and $43.8 million in local tax revenue. A primary factor for Massachusetts' recovery has been the significant reduction in the tax and fee burden on individuals and business. Since 1977, the overall tax and fee burden has fallen 20.3%, and in 1984 was 10.3% below the national average. In 1985, Massachusetts ranked 42nd in total tax and fee burden. For business, the tax and fee burden has fallen 36% since 1977, and in 1984 was 3% below the national average. Although the state as a whole has recovered dramatically, some areas have lagged behind. Southeastern Massachusetts has been particularly slow in achieving economic stability. One of the region's greatest assets, its orientation to the Atlantic Ocean, also is one of its greatest weaknesses. The jagged shoreline and its southern and easternmost settlements have placed the southeast region out of the mainstream of growth along the northeastern corridor. Recent expansion of state and federal highway systems in southeastern Massachusetts has greatly improved opportunities for industrial growth. Unemployment rates in this area were approximately 7.5% in 1984, a significant improvement from the 10.5% experienced in 1983. Economic trends indicate a continued decline in the manufacturing of durable goods and textiles in this region. However, employment in electrical machinery and metal working have shown improvement which should continue. To ensure economic growth and stability throughout the state, the Massachusetts government has targeted areas for state assistance and initiated several programs to help industries modernize and remain competitive in the world market. The Governor's Commission on the Future of Mature Industries, formed in 1983, was assigned the task of analyzing traditional manufacturing industries and providing public policy recommendations to stabilize this sector of the economy. The areas of primary concern included the development of public and private resources for modernizing viable industries, effectively addressing the plight of troubled firms, methods to cushion the impact to communities of plant closings, and developing policies to aid in the transition of "mature industries" to modern, "high-tech" industries. The policies recommended by the Commission attempted to address each of these issues. The first recommendation encourages quasi-public financing for modernization and growth through the Massachusetts Industrial Finance Agency (MIFA). Specific firms were targeted in cities where the unemployment rate was 50% above the state rate. Establishment of the Product Development Fund and an upgrading of the MIFA Insurance Fund were also recognized as important components. Next, the Massachusetts Industrial Service was directed to coordinate on a case-by-case basis, to evaluate, and when appropriate, to assist troubled firms which are potentially viable. If a firm cannot be saved, MIS assists in the re-employment of workers and in finding ways to reuse plant facilities. An important component of the Commission's recommendation package is the voluntary Social Compact between business and the state. The Compact encourages businesses to notify workers well in advance of plant closings, provide income maintenance and health insurance, and establish re-employment assistance programs. The final recommendation directs the state to create an Industrial Advisory Board to analyze economic trends and provide guidance to industries in transition. In addition, the Board oversees the implementation of the Commission's recommendations. In 1984, the state legislature enacted seven bills which represented a major addition to the state's array of development finance tools. The MIFA Guaranteed Loan program was established to provide financial assistance to small businesses. Previously, MIFA had been important for downtown revitalization projects and the expansion of large companies. The Thrift Fund for Economic Development created a $100 million fund for target projects in communities with an unemployment rate 50% above the state average. The Massachusetts Government Land Bank, originally created to manage the conversion of closed military bases, was transformed to aid cities and towns with a broad range of development opportunities. Community Development Action Grants (CDAG), established in 1982, had used up its bond authorization. One of the seven bills created new funding for CDAG, which had provided $17.5 million to 38 communities since its inception. Two bills under the heading of the Massachusetts Housing Partnership are also important tools for revitalization. These bills are the Abandoned Housing Act, which encourages and expedites the procedures for reusing abandoned housing, and the State Housing Assistance for Rental Production (SHARP), a program to help meet the housing needs of low and moderate income households. The final bill signed by the Governor also formalized the Centers for Excellence program, an administrative initiative designed to forge a new partnership between industry, government, and



FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

academic institutions. The primary goal of the Centers for Excellence is to develop specific emerging technologies in communities with outstanding universities and a need for new industry. The Center for Polymer Sciences was established at the University of Massachusetts at Amherst, in conjunction with Monsanto and General Electric. In 1983, the first polymer-related firm to locate in Amherst opened its doors, joining the more than 400 polymer firms in Massachusetts. Combined sales for these companies equaled $3.5 billion and provided more than 33,000 jobs. The Center for Biotechnology was established in Worcester at the University of Massachusetts Medical School. This center has been instrumental in bringing research and development firms to the Worcester Bio-Tech Park. The Marine Sciences Center, located at the Woods Hole Oceanographic Institute and the Marine Biology Laboratory, was established in an effort to make Southeastern Massachusetts University a leader in marine research. This center will have a significant impact on fishing industries, ocean mining, marine electronics, and aquaculture. As recognized leaders in research and development of industrial technology, Massachusetts Institute of Technology and the University of Lowell were chosen for the Center for Photovoltaics, an emerging technology which transforms the sun's rays directly into electricity. This industry will be vitally important to Massachusetts economy for many years to come. In 1983, sales of photovoltaic industrial products in Massachusetts were $30.3 million. This is 51% of the U.S. market and 28% of worldwide production. The most important component of the Centers for Excellence plan is the Massachusetts Microelectronics Center in Westboro. Developed and operated by the Massachusetts Technology Park Corporation, a quasi-public agency of the state, this center will assist in linking together the other centers and providing computer support. The Centers have served as catalysts for new job creation in Western, Central, and Southeastern Massachusetts, and the Merrimac Valley. Additionally, they have strengthened Massachusetts' traditional industries, providing opportunities for modernization and worker training to meet future needs. The Industrial Service Program provides firms with consulting services and financial assistance, allowing firms to capitalize on profit-making opportunities. The Massachusetts Division of Employment Security projects that between 1984 and 1995 the fastest growing industries will include computer and data processing services (109%), outpatient care services (82%), and miscellaneous electrical equipment and supplies (65%). Largest gains in employment for the same period will include business services (87,500), health services (60,500), eating and drinking establishments (51,750), and electric and electronic equipment (39,900). The agency also predicts continuing trends in declining industries such as textiles (-27.%), primary metals (-121%), and garments (-12%).

**BUSINESS** The business climate in Massachusetts is robust, with the state very receptive to new entrepreneurial initiatives. Sales in retail and wholesale trade and service industries have increased significantly as the state has prospered. In 1982, a total of 9,709 wholesale trade establishments accounted for $49.8 billion in sales. This is an increase of 602 establishments (6.6%) and $19.6 billion (64.9%) in sales since 1977. Sales of $9.1 billion by groceries and related products wholesalers accounted for 18.3% of the state's total sales by all wholesalers. This is down slightly from the 21.2% share this group held in 1977. Other leading wholesale groups in 1982 included machinery, equipment and supplies products (14.9%, $7.4 billion), petroleum and petroleum products (13.1%, $6.5 billion), and motor vehicles and automotive parts and supplies (10.7%, $2.5 billion). Sales per establishment for all wholesalers was $5.1 million. The leaders in this category were petroleum and petroleum products, $40.5 million per establishment; beer, wine, and distilled beverages, $15 million; and groceries and related products, $7.8 million. Massachusetts had retail sales of $28.8 billion for 1982, a 55.7% increase since 1977. During this same period, the number of establishments increased to 47,312 from 47,183. Grocery stores accounted for $5.3 billion, or 18.7%, of all retail sales. This reflects an increase of 39.5% from 1977, up from $3.8 billion. Motor vehicle dealers-new and used cars-accounted for $3.92 billion, up from $2.44 billion, a 13.9% share of all retail sales. Eating and drinking establishments had sales totaling $3.06 billion, representing 10.0% of all retail sales. In 1982, sales per establishment was $609,000, compared to $391,000 in 1977. This is an increase of 55.8%. The 1982 Census of Service Industries shows 33,947 establishments of firms with payroll subject to Federal income tax. These firms had receipts totaling $13.3 billion. Receipts of engineering, architectural, and surveying services totaled $2.1 billion, up from $828 million in 1977. Other leading service businesses included offices of physicians, $1.1 billion; legal services, $885 million; and management, consulting, and public relations services, $805 million. Receipts per establishment were $392,000 in 1982 for all service industry establishments. Research and development laboratories averaged $3 million per establishment; data processing services, $1.9 million; and engineering, architectural, and surveying services, $1.6 million. Service industries with payroll exempt from Federal income tax totaled 5,022 establishments, and had revenue of $2.6 billion. Noncommercial educational, scientific, and research organizations had revenue of $484 million, and individual and family social services accounted for $277 million. Massachusetts was effected less severely than most states by the recession of 1980-82, due to efforts to diversify the economy and expand high-tech and service related industries. Another business which has experienced significant growth has been the construction industry. The commitment of business and government leaders during the late 1970s to revitalize Boston and expand office and plant facilities across the state led to a boom in construction. (See Construction and Housing.) Between 1985 and 1986, filings for new corporate charters for commercial corporations increased 10%, with 19,461 new charters filed. During this same period, the number of filings for new corporate charters for nonprofit corporations decreased slightly, from 1,359 to 1,339. As of December 31, 1986, there were a total of 290,280 filings for incorporation. The number of filings for limited partnerships totaled 96,000. During 1986, a total of 72,000 corporate dissolutions occurred. The economic outlook for Massachusetts over the next five years appears to be as bright as the last five years have been. Between 1985 and 1995, projections show expected growth in most sectors of business. The service industries are projected to grow 25.1%. Manufacturing, although expected to have a shrinking share of the total economy, is projected to grow

5.7%. High technology industries are expected to increase at a rate of 38.3%. For business and labor, the future looks positive in Massachusetts.

**CONSTRUCTION/HOUSING** The mid-1980s found the Commonwealth of Massachusetts in the midst of a dynamic building boom as the state's residential and commercial construction markets expanded during a period of economic revitalization. This heavy growth in construction brought about a strong increase in property values, which encouraged the state to implement a home-buying program for moderate-income citizens. The boost in housing construction in Massachusetts from 1980 to 1986 contributed to the Northeastern sector of the United States becoming the nation's "hot spot" for builders and developers, while many markets in the South and West experienced a curtailment of building. In particular, the Boston metropolitan area became one of the nation's leading growth markets for real-estate development. From 1983 to 1985, Boston's median price for existing single-family homes increased from $82,600 to $144,000. As a result, Boston had not only the greatest one-year increase in real-estate values from 1984 to 1985, but reached the highest median sale price for single-family homes in the nation. Massachusetts taxpayers, meanwhile, benefited from a 3.8% decline in property taxes from 1980 to 1984. The per capita tax level from state and local governments in the state dropped to $534 in 1984. Although this was 30.9% above the $408 United States average, the state's decline in property taxes over the four-year period compared favorably with the national average, in which a 35.1% increase was shown. As the state was on the verge of its housing construction boom, in 1982, 33,177 establishments operated as general contractors or operative builders, special trade contractors or subdividers, and developers in Massachusetts. The number of construction industry establishments increased 13.5% from 1977 to 1982, an indication of the significant growth in the state's construction industry. During the same five-year period, business receipts for construction industry establishments increased 82.5%, and the number of employees increased by 10.1%. Business receipts among these establishments totaled $8.4 billion, and during 1982, average employment for construction establishments with payroll in Massachusetts was 96,300 employees. These employees earned a total payroll of $1.7 billion. Of total construction receipts in 1982, 77.3% was for new construction, with the following breakdown for building construction receipts: single-family houses (19.5%); apartment buildings with two or more apartments (9.7%); other residential buildings (4%); industrial buildings and warehouses (17.8%); and other nonresidential buildings, including stores, restaurants, public garages, automobile service stations, religious buildings, hospitals, institutional buildings, amusement, social, and recreational buildings (25.3%). Nonbuilding construction accounted for 21.5% of total construction receipts in the Commonwealth in 1982. Busiest nonbuilding construction categories included heavy industrial facilities, power plants, highways and streets, power and communication transmission lines and lines and facilities related to each of these. In value, residential building construction contracts in 1983 reflected the highest percentage of the overall building market. With the total value of construction contracts for the year reaching $3.9 billion statewide, $1.7 billion was for residential building construction (43%), $1.6 billion was for nonresidential building construction (41%), and $615 thousand was in nonbuilding construction (16%). New private housing-units authorized by building permits increased from 15,400 in 1982 to 22,800 in 1983, a 48.1% increase. Total valuation of construction contracts in 1983 was $1.2 billion, a 67% increase from $720 million in 1982. The construction cycle showed a continuing increase during the following year, with 27,500 new private housing-units authorized by building permits, valued at $1.5 billion. This marked a 20.6% increase in the number of units authorized and a 25% increase in total valuation for new contracts. In 1980, 47.3% of the state's year-round housing-unit structures were built prior to 1940, while 15.4% had been constructed between 1970 and 1980. Of all the state's year-round housing unit structures, 84.7% were classified as urban. Of all housing structures inside urbanized areas, 39.3% were in central cities and 60.7% were in urban fringe areas. Of the state's urban housing structures in 1980, 7.8% were located outside urbanized areas. Among these, 37.3% were in places of 10,000 population or more, and 62.7% were in places of 2,500 to 10,000 population. The state's rural housing accounted for 15.3% of total housing structures. Of these, 1% were classified as rural farms and 12.9% were located in places of 1,000 to 2,500 population. Middlesex County had more year-round housing units than any other county in the state, with 23% of all housing units in Massachusetts in 1980. Suffolk County, with 12.9% of the state total, was second, and Essex County, with 11.2%, was third. The median number of persons living in an owner-occupied home in Massachusetts in 1980 was 2.8. Of total owner-occupied units in 1980, 13.3% were inhabited by one person, 30.4% by two persons, 18.6% by three persons, 19.2% by four persons, 10.9% by five persons, and 7.6% by six or more persons. Among owner-occupied homes in 1980, 59.3% had no air conditioning, 36.3% had one or more individual air conditioning units, and 4.4% had central air conditioning systems. Fuel oil and kerosene were used by 59.8% of all owner-occupied homes for heating. Utility gas was used by 30.4% of owner-occupied homes, while 5.4% used electricity, 1% used bottled tank or LP gas, and 3.4% used another form of energy for home heating. The median number of persons living in a renter-occupied housing unit in 1980 was 1.9. Of total renter-occupied housing units in 1980, 39.5% were inhabited by one person, 30.2% by two persons, 14.2% by three persons, 9% by four persons, 4.3% by five persons, and 3% by six or more persons. Among renter-occupied housing units, 66% had no air conditioning, 27.9% had one or more individual air conditioning units, and 6.1% had central air conditioning systems. Fuel oil and kerosene were used by 46.1% of renter-occupied homes for heating. Utility gas was used by 36% of renter-occupied homes, while 15.2% used electricity and 1% used some other form of energy for home heating. In 1980, of all year-round housing units, 93.6% had a source of water supplied by a public system or private company, and 73.9% were serviced by a public sewer. Of total owner-occupied housing units, 0.6% were mobile homes, and of these, 78.2% were owner-occupied, and 17.2% were renter-occupied. The top 10 cities for new housing units from 1980 to 1984 in Massachusetts were: Boston (3,634), Barnstable (3,607), Worcester (2,447), Falmouth (1,938), Mashpee (1,875), Yarmouth



FLYING THE COLORS: MASSACHUSETTS FACTS ©JOHN CLEMENTS 1987

(1,372), Brewster (1,347), Plymouth (1,337), Quincy (1,246) and Sandwich (1,208). To assist moderate income citizens in becoming eligible to purchase homes, the state initiated the Massachusetts Housing Partnership Homeownership Opportunity Program. This program included infusing $20 million of the state's Home Partnership Fund into the production of single family homes and condominiums for homeownership. This new program was to provide mortgage rates as low as six to nine percent for homes with below-average selling prices, with mortgages provided through local banks by the Massachusetts Housing Finance Agency. The mortgages would be available for projects submitted by cities and towns and approved by the Massachusetts Housing Partnership. Construction of these homes was scheduled to begin in the spring of 1986, as cities and towns began to submit applications.

**FOREIGN INVESTMENT** Increases in foreign investment during the early 1980s have contributed to the resurgence of Massachusetts' economy. One of the functions of the Massachusetts Office of International Trade and Investment, established in 1984, is to promote the continuation of foreign investment into the state. The office provides potential foreign investors with various reports containing information on tax liability, industry wages, labor availability, and community profiles. Efforts are made to attract foreign companies which are compatible with Massachusetts' regional development opportunities and emphasis on new technologies. During 1985-86, the office was involved in finding joint venture partners from Great Britain, Germany, Sweden, and Japan for interested machine tool companies in Massachusetts. The office's 1985-86 list of foreign firms showed 25 foreign countries owning 326 companies in Massachusetts. Great Britain led all countries with 103 companies, followed by Japan with 56, and West Germany with 35. The federal figures on foreign investment in Massachusetts for 1984 indicate the gross book value of foreign investors' property, plants, and equipment at $2.8 billion. Foreign investors employed 67,997 individuals in Massachusetts, which was 2.5% of the foreign investors' national employment total. Manufacturing accounted for $1 billion, or 41%, of the book value of foreign investments, and 31,827, or 47%, of the jobs provided by foreign investors in Massachusetts. Foreign investors owned 20,000 acres of farm and non-farm land, with 12,000 acres in agriculture, fishing, and forestry. Foreign investors also owned 1,000 acres of mineral rights in Massachusetts. More current figures for agricultural landholding show that foreign investors owned eight parcels totaling 1,707 acres with a total value of $1,341,000 in 1985. More than 92% of this land was in forests, while 71 acres were non-agricultural lands, and 62 acres were in crop and pasture land. Great Britain and the Netherlands together held 26% of the foreign owned agricultural land in Massachusetts in 1985. There were six foreign banks located in Boston in 1986, including Sanwa Bank of Japan, and Barclays and Lloyds of London, both of Great Britain.

**IMPORTS AND EXPORTS** In 1983, the Port of Boston, which includes the Main Waterfront, Chelsea River, Mystic River, and Weymouth Fore River Ports, accounted for 90% of the import/export tonnage which passed through Massachusetts ports. The Salem, New Bedford and Fairhaven, and Fall River Harbors handled the remaining 10%. Primary export goods included iron and steel scrap, lumber, and machinery and equipment. The primary import goods were gasoline and residual fuel oil. The Massachusetts Port Authority (Massport) in 1979 began a five-year plan to gain a larger share of the region's trade. By 1984, Massport had spent more than $50 million on the development and improvement of its public terminals, and had implemented programs offering New England shippers better services at more competitive rates. Results of this five-year plan included a 9.5% increase in tons of cargo handled by Massport's terminals from 1983 to 1984, a new container service to Northern Europe, and an increased carrier service between Boston and Far East ports. The total value of exports and imports which passed through Massachusetts ports in 1984 was $10.9 billion. Import goods totaled $8.1 billion, with export goods equaling $2.8 billion. In 1983, the Commonwealth signed an exchange agreement with the Guangdong Province in the People's Republic of China. To help aid in the state's expansion in overseas markets, the governor created in 1984 the Massachusetts Office of International Trade and Investment. The office's major responsibility is to oversee the state's international trade activities, and to promote plans, such as the Trade Development Program. This program, funded in part by grants from the U.S. Department of Commerce, brings small- and medium-sized companies in contact with new overseas markets. Information technology, health care and bio-medical supplies and equipment, and data processing services are among the major industry areas served by this program, while the Far East, Latin America, and West Africa are the primary targeted market areas. Massachusetts also promoted its two foreign trade zones. These zones are portions of U.S. territory designated by the federal government as "outside" the United States for purposes of customs and tariffs. American firms are allowed to process, assemble, display, test and store imported goods in these zones without paying import duties or observing quotas. There are foreign trade zone licenses for facilities around the Port of Boston, and at the New Bedford Port. Exports account for an estimated 13% of yearly gross state production, totaling approximately $9 billion in revenues. In 1986, 15% of all manufacturing jobs in Massachusetts were export related.

**FINANCIAL INSTITUTIONS** The dominant force in New England banking, Massachusetts had $42.7 billion in assets in its commercial banks in 1983. This represented a 17.9% increase in assets over the previous year, and accounted for some 52% of total assets in commercial banks in the six New England states, including Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, Rhode Island, and Connecticut. In December 1983, the state's domestic deposit market shares totaled $63.1 billion in deposits. Of this total, 49% was held by FDIC-insured commercial banks, 6.4% by FSLIC-insured savings and loans, 20.4% by mutual savings banks, and 5.2% by credit unions. Deposits in commercial banks for the year totaled $30.9 billion, a 21% increase from the previous 12-month period. Of these deposits, 72.8% were held by multi-bank holding companies. Loans by insured commercial banks in 1983 totaled $21.7 billion, excluding those from foreign branches of United States banks. These included $9.6 billion in loans

for commercial and industrial projects and $5.7 billion for real estate. Equity capital in insured commercial banks in the Bay State in 1983 totaled $2.6 billion. Mutual savings banks had $15.9 billion in total assets for the year and $9.5 billion in gross loans. Savings and loan associations had $8.7 billion in assets for the year, a 5.5% increase from 1982. Mortgage loans outstanding for these institutions totaled $5.9 billion. Savings capital totaled $7.6 billion, a 7% increase from the previous year. The state's savings and loan associations showed a net worth of $517 million in 1983. The state had 323 federally-insured credit unions in 1986. These had a total of $3.7 billion in assets. The Massachusetts Government Land Bank emerged in 1975 as a major source of financing for various development and redevelopment projects. Originally, the Land Bank was established to assist communities in acquiring portions of federal military basses selected for commercial, industrial, and residential development. The process involved engaging private enterprise and public agencies in the conversion and redevelopment of lands used by the federal government and developing them for non-military uses. The Land Bank was first authorized to issue general obligation bonds. Presently, the Land Bank can work with any type of deteriorating land, or surplus federal or state properties. These loans are made generally at 80% of the prime rate. In its tenth anniversary report in 1985, the Land Bank showed a total of 27 projects in its portfolio, including six commercial, four industrial, 14 residential and three mixed use. Total Land Bank funds for these projects amounted to $25.7 million, with $197.2 million in other funds leveraged. Regional interstate banking laws in the eastern part of the United States permitted reciprocal privileges between states. Massachusetts, Connecticut, and Rhode Island allow reciprocity with other New England states, following action by Massachusetts to allow procedures that would strengthen state banks and keep out so-called big money center banks. By the mid-1980s, supporters of reciprocity were concerned that Congress would mandate full interstate banking.

**NATURAL RESOURCES** Massachusetts' wealth in natural resources stems primarily from its busy seaports and magnificent forests. Commercial fishing has a major impact on both the economy and international identity of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts. Although its territorial water boundaries are considerably smaller than those of many other states, Massachusetts ranks among the nation's leaders in dollar volume and pounds of commercial fish landings. In 1985, Massachusetts ranked second in the nation with $231.5 million in volume for commercial fish landings, and sixth nationwide in landings, with 233.5 million pounds. Commercial fish landings in 1980 reached 438 million pounds, valued at a total of $179 million. In 1984, the state recorded 375.5 million pounds, valued at $233.5 million. Commercial fishery landings at Massachusetts' ports in 1985 showed New Bedford to have the highest dollar volume for landings among major reporting ports in the United States. At $103.2 million, New Bedford's dollar volume far outdistanced its nearest competitors. In sixth place nationwide for commercial fishery landings volume was Gloucester, which had landings valued at $37.1 million. New Bedford's productivity in 1985 allowed that port to retain its top dollar-volume ranking for the third consecutive year, although total dollar-volume had declined overall by 6% from the $109.2 million reached in 1983. The net increase over the four-year period was 24%. At New Bedford, landings reached 94.9 million pounds in 1982, then took an 18% leap to 111.8 million pounds in 1983, before beginning a two-year cycle of decline. In 1984, 99.5 million pounds were recorded, for a one-year drop of 11%. The decline continued in 1985, as landings fell 9% to 90.6 million pounds. The net decline at this port over the four-year period was 5%. In commercial fish landings quantity, Gloucester ranked first among Massachusetts ports in 1985, with 116.5 million pounds. This landings quantity recorded for the year placed the port seventh in the United States. Fishing lands dollar volume at Gloucester declined by 13% from 1982 to 1983, then dropped by 2.1% in 1984, reaching the $37.1 million level, which it retained the following year. The net decline over the four-year period was 15%. Landings at Gloucester showed a net decline from 1982 to 1985 of 22%. At Boston, landings showed a net 28% decline over the four-year period, with 19.8 million pounds in 1985, compared to 27.6 million pounds in 1982. In 1983, landings dropped by 12.3% to 24.2 million pounds, then dropped by 17% in 1984, to 20.2 million. The port of Boston ranked 39th nationally in 1985 in dollar volume, with landings valued at $12.1 million, an 8% increase from the 1984 total of $11.2 million. Massachusetts' record catch was achieved in 1948, when Bay State commercial fishermen landed 650 million pounds. In 1982, the state had 203 fishing plants, including processors and fish wholesalers, who employed a combined average of 5,143 workers, reaching a seasonal high of 6,332 during peak periods. Known particularly as a center for lobster fishing, the Commonwealth of Massachusetts issued 13,982 lobster licenses of all types in 1985. Of these, 2605 (19%) were commercial and 11,377 (81%) were non-commercial. Among commercial lobster licensees, 1,744 (67%) were coastal commercial, 188 (7%) were seasonal commercial, and 673 (26%) were offshore commercial. Among commercial licensees, 1,643 (63%) reported lobster fishing in 1985. Lobsters reported landed in 1985 totaled 14.6 million pounds, including 357,024 pounds by recreational fishermen and 14.2 million pounds by commercial fishermen. Based on $2.47 per pound, the commercial catch for the year was valued at $35.1 million. Essex County ranked first in total pounds of lobsters landed during the year with 5.5 million pounds. Plymouth County ranked second, with 2.8 million pounds and Suffolk County ranked third, with 1.8 million pounds. Among Massachusetts ports, Boston recorded the most lobsters landed, with 1.5 million pounds, Gloucester ranked second, with 1.2 million pounds, and Plymouth ranked third, with 1.1 million pounds. Lobster fishing in 1985 peaked in July, August, and September, and recorded lowest landings levels in February and March. The state's coastal waters yield a wide variety of saltwater fish species, including striped bass, giant tuna, school tuna, white marlin, swordfish, bluefish, snapper bluefish, bonito, pollock, squeteague, mackerel, blackfish, seabass, scup, winter founder, summer flounder, kingfish, cod, haddock, shad, and smelt. Trout, largemouth bass, smallmouth bass, chain pickeral, white perch, yellow perch, northern pike, tiger muskie, and brown bullshead are among the state's major freshwater fish species. With timberland accounting for approximately 60% of the Commonwealth's total land area, Massachusetts' economic profile is significantly affected by

the state's forest industries. The state's timberland resources include its logging, forestry services and sawmill industries, lumber, paper and allied products manufacturers, wholesale and retail lumber, furniture and brokerage houses, and domestic and export marketing firms. Featuring a steep, forested landscape, the Northeastern Forage and Forest Land Resource Region extends throughout most of New England, and includes virtually all of Massachusetts' interior areas. Lumber and pulpwood are important products, as well as Christmas trees, maple syrup, and small fruits where the climate is favorable. Wildlife habitats and recreation common to the environs of the woodlands also flourish in this region. Major land resource areas which encompass portions of Worcester, Franklin, Hampshire, Hampden, and Berkshire Counties include areas which are 40% to 60% forested in hardwood and pine, though in some areas, the land is 90% forested, especially within the Northeast Mountains land resource area in the western third of the state. The three leading counties in timberland acreage are: Worcester County (650,537 acres), Berkshire County (454,890 acres) and Franklin County (355,624 acres). At the hub of the state's productive timberland region, Worcester County lies within a resource area that supports a mixture of northern and central hardwoods, with major species including sugar maple, birch, beech, oaks, and hickory. The dominant conifers are hemlock and white pine, while red pine and pitch pine grow on sandy outwash soils, and red maple grows on wetter sites. Northern white cedar is also significant. Fruit-bearing trees make this a popular area for apples and small fruits. The woodlands are used for growing wood used in products and for hunting and other recreational activities, although the use of woodland for residential development is becoming increasingly popular. Farther to the west, in Berkshire County, northern hardwood and spruce-fir forest vegetation emerges. On the better drained soils of the hills and ridges, sugar maple, yellow birch, American beech, red spruce, and eastern hemlock are also common. Total growing-stock for all species of timber in Massachusetts in 1985 was 4.7 billion net cubic feet (ncf), produced on some three million acres of timberland. The growing-stock total included 3.3 billion ncf of sawtimber, 1.3 billion ncf of poletimber, and 6.8 million ncf of sapling-seedling. This total included three billion ncf in hardwoods and 1.7 billion ncf in softwoods. Leading hardwoods in Massachusetts in 1985 were: soft maples (900.2 million ncf), northern red oak (573.8 million ncf), sugar maple (190.3 million ncf), and white ash (150.1 million ncf). Among softwoods the most abundant in growing-stock were: white pine (1.1 billion ncf), hemlock (372 million ncf), pitch pine (78.2 million ncf), spruce/fir (75.2 million ncf), and red pine (17.6 million ncf). Hardwoods included 1.9 billion ncf in sawtimber, 1.1 billion ncf in poletimber, and 42.2 million ncf in sapling-seedling. Softwoods produced 1.4 billion ncf in sawtimber, 242.2 million ncf in poletimber, and 21.5 million ncf in sapling-seedling. Statewide, timberland growing-stock included 1.7 million acres of sawtimber, 1.1 million acres of poletimber, and 210,540 acres of sapling-seedling. Of all classes, oak/hickory accounted for 921,711 acres of timberland to lead the state. Other predominant classes were white/red pine (790,607 acres), northern hardwoods (677,547 acres), oak/pine (258,548 acres) and elm/ash/red maple (131,169 acres). In the state's leading timberland counties, Worcester recorded 1.2 billion ncf of growing-stock of all kinds, including 808 million ncf of sawtimber, 340.1 million ncf of poletimber, and 13 million ncf of sapling-seedling. Berkshire County had 785.3 million ncf of total growing-stock, including 584.2 million ncf of sawtimber and 197.6 million ncf of poletimber. Franklin County recorded 624.4 million ncf of growing-stock, including 524 million ncf of sawtimber. Hampshire was among the leading counties in poletimber growing-stock in 1985, with 106.2 million ncf. Sapling-seedling growing-stock leaders included Middlesex County, with 18.6 million ncf, and Plymouth County, with 16 million ncf. The Commonwealth's "island" counties, Dukes and Nantucket, and portions of Barnstable and Plymouth Counties lie within a resource region characterized by land that is 25% forested. Urban development, recreational shorelines, and farms that produce potatoes, cauliflower, and cabbage are predominant. Approximately 5% of all manufacturing employees in Massachusetts in 1984 worked for firms manufacturing lumber and wood products, and paper and allied products. There were 5,719 employees working for 383 lumber and wood products manufacturers in 1984, earning $96.7 million in total annual payroll. These included 32 logging camps and logging contractors employing 95 workers earning a total of $1.1 million in annual payroll; and 84 sawmills and planing mills employing 813 workers earning a total of $11.2 million in annual payroll. A breakdown of other lumber and wood products manufacturing establishments in 1984 reveals: millwork, plywood and structural members (123 establishments), wood containers (39), wood buildings and mobile homes (8), and miscellaneous wood products (90). Paper and allied products manufacturers totaled 304 establishments employing 27,128 workers earning a total of $590.1 million in annual payroll. These establishments included 37 paper mills, seven paperboard mills, 145 miscellaneous converted paper products manufacturers (envelopes, sanitary paper products, paper coating, and glazing, etc.), and 110 paperboard containers and boxes manufacturers. The value of nonfuel mineral production in Massachusetts in 1985 was $114.5 million, setting a record-high for the third consecutive year. The state's leading commodities were construction sand and gravel and crushed stone. Their combined output accounted for approximately 80% of the total value of nonfuel mineral commodities in 1985. From 1982 to 1985, nonfuel mineral production increased overall by 28.2%, from $89.3 million in 1982 to $95.7 million in 1983, and $107.3 million in 1984. The 1984 total marked the first time the value of nonfuel mineral output in the state exceeded $100 million. During the 1970s, the combined production of construction sand and gravel and crushed stone averaged 25 million tons per year. However the annual average declined to about 20 million tons during the first five years of the 1980s. Production of construction sand and gravel increased by 24.2% from 1982 to 1985, while the total production value for this commodity was up by 37.8% over the same period. Crushed stone production value showed a 26.6% increase from 1982 to 1985, while production increased 2.9% over the four-year period. Crushed stone production in 1982 was 6.9 million tons, and increased to 7.7 million tons in 1983 and 8.4 million tons in 1984. In 1985, production of this commodity declined by 15.4%, to 7.1 million tons. Production value continued to increase each year during the period, however, from $33.5

million in 1982 to $36 million in 1983, $39 million in 1984, and $42.1 million in 1985. Sand and gravel construction reached 14.9 million tons in 1985, after reaching levels of 12 million tons in 1982, 10.4 million tons in 1983, and 14.2 million tons in 1984. The total value of construction sand and gravel produced increased steadily from $34.4 million in 1982 to $36.2 million in 1983, $42.1 million in 1984 and $47.4 million in 1985. Clay production in 1985 reached 264,000 tons, valued at $1.3 million. The 1985 production total was 26% above the level reached in 1982, with total value up 18.1%. Lime production increased by 26.7% from 1982 to 1984, then experienced a slowdown in production, dropping from 171,000 tons in 1984 to 108,000 tons in 1985. Similarly, the value of total lime produced increased from $9.4 million in 1982 to $10.7 million in 1983 and $12.4 million in 1984, before dropping to $7.8 million in 1985. Estimates for dimension stone production show 1985's output of 65,000 tons to be 27.5% above the 1982 total of 51,000 tons. Total value of dimension stone produced in Massachusetts in 1985 reached $14.6 million, which is 39% above the $10.5 million value reached in 1982. Massachusetts had no operating coal mines, oil wells, or natural gas wells in 1983.

**TOURISM** Visitors and vacationers, responding to the historical and recreational charms of Massachusetts, provide the state with its second largest industry. According to a University of Massachusetts report, the Bay State hosts over 20 million travelers every year (early to mid-1980s). The Massachusetts Division of Tourism is part of the Department of Commerce and Development, which is under the state's Executive Office of Economic Affairs. The division launched its "Spirit of Massachusetts" campaign in fiscal year 1984 to promote tourism in the state through media ads, tourism guides, a variety of other printed materials, mini-vacation packages, nine tourist information booths, and financial aid to the state's local tourist councils. The division's budget totaled over $7.7 million in fiscal year 1984, placing it third in the nation among state appropriations for tourism. The budget remained third in 1985, increasing 22.8% to just over $9.5 million, but dropped to seventh in 1986, decreasing 2.7% to $9.29 million. Of the 1986 total, $1.8 million was appropriated for use by local tourist councils. The governor's 1987 budget recommends an appropriation of $2 million. For fiscal year 1986/87, the state lists 13 regional tourist councils. The "Spirit" campaign is thus conducted at statewide, regional, and local levels, promoting springs and summer travel, downhill and cross-country skiing, seasonal lodging packages, international fly/drive packages, holiday shopping and events, cooperative programs with private industry, group travel, and special events and activities such as fall-foliage tours and whale-watching trips. As a result, from the bays to the Berkshires, tourism represented just over $5.65 billion in travel expenditures, almost $1.195 billion in travel-generated payroll, and 91,223 travel-generated jobs in 1985. State and local tax receipts generated by tourism in 1985 totaled $252.5 million. Of total tax revenue from tourism, room occupancy taxes represented $29.6 million in 1984, rose to $31.9 million in 1985, and promised to reach an estimated $40.2 million in 1986 and $51 million in 1987, according to the 1986/87 governor's budget. The 1982 U.S. Census of Service Industries reported 904 hotels, motels, and other lodging places (subject to federal income tax) in Massachusetts, showing receipts of almost $696 million and a total annual payroll of nearly $184 million. An additional 100 such establishments existed but were exempt from federal income tax. Of the 904 taxable establishments, 212 were listed as hotels, 47 as trailer parks or campsites for transients, and 112 as rooming and boarding houses. Since 1985 and the beginning of the "Spirit" campaign, the Division of Tourism has published a guide listing some 130 bed-and-breakfast establishments, guest houses, and small inns throughout the state. For skiers, another state guide lists 59 downhill and cross-country ski areas. Whale watchers may request a listing of 21 whale-watch operators. Transportation in Massachusetts is readily available by land, sea, and air. The state is served by 11 foreign air carriers, 19 national air carriers, and 12 regional air carriers. Some seven ferry lines operate as the seasons permit to provide convenient travel between the mainland, the Cape, and the various islands. In addition to the expected car rental agencies, bus lines, and commuter trains, the state offers three special excursion trains and Boston's subway system. According to the Greater Boston Convention and Visitors Bureau, Boston is one of the nation's top five visitor destinations. It is also a worldwide center for conventions and tradeshows that relate to the sophisticated arenas of medicine, higher education, and high technology. The city added 5,000 new hotel rooms from 1981 to 1985, bringing Greater Boston's total to more than 19,000. The city, home to some 1,900 restaurants, opened its World Trade Center in January 1986 and plans to open its new Hynes Convention Center in January 1988. The facility, a complete renovation and expansion of the older Hynes Auditorium, is designed to accommodate 22,000 visitors.

**GAMBLING** The state of Massachusetts is involved in gambling through two agencies: the State Racing Commission and the Massachusetts State Lottery Commission. Regulation of all horse, dog, and harness racing in the state, including the regulation of calculation on odds for payment of winnings, is the responsibility of the State Racing Commission. It also licenses the track, the jockeys, the trainers, and the horses. The Lottery Commission is under the chairmanship of the State Treasurer, and administers the state's lottery games, including the Weekly Game, the Numbers Game, and the Instant Game. Within the Lottery Commission is the Charitable Gaming Division which supervises the conduct and operation of Beano (bingo) games across the state. Funding for the Arts Lottery is raised through revenues from the Megabucks Game and is handled by the Lottery Commission. In 1985, the State Racing Commission directly supervised thousands of individuals and collected over $39 million in revenue while expending $2 million. Racing exists at five commercial tracks in Massachusetts. Harness racing can be found at the Foxboro Raceway (Commonwealth Sports Properties, Inc.) in Foxboro, running horse racing (thoroughbred) at Suffolk Downs in East Boston, and dog racing at Wonderland Greyhound Park in Revere, Massasoit Greyhound Park in Raynham, and Taunton Greyhound Park in Taunton. Racing fairs were held at two locations in the 1985 summer months. The Hampshire, Franklin, and Hampden Agricultural Society sponsored racing in Northhampton in the western part of the state, and the Marshfield Agricultural and Horticultural Society provided racing in Marshfield.

Statewide racing attendance fell slightly from 1984 to 1985, from 4,466,002 to 4,363,834. Suffolk Downs had the highest attendance in 1985 with 1,279,553. Wonderland Greyhound Park had the second highest attendance in 1985 with 1,057,285. Greyhound racing as a whole, drew more than half the state's racing fans in 1985, the three tracks having a combined attendance of 2,441,772. Suffolk Downs had a considerably higher pari-mutuel handle in 1985 than any other racing facility in the state, with a total of $204.6 million. Wonderland Greyhound Park had the second highest pari-mutuel handle with $137.7 million. Though overall attendance had dropped slightly, the 1985 pari-mutuel handle was higher than the 1984 handle, $565.2 million to $540.7 million. The $39.9 million Racing Commission revenue total in 1985 showed a clear gain from the $37.5 million earned in 1984. A large part of the Racing Commission's responsibilities are in the area of maintaining standards and regulations, which in turn ensure public trust. In the period of 1983 to 1985, a marked increase in regulatory activity took place. Board of Judges/Stewards hearings rose from 626 to 852, and Racing Commission hearings rose from 36 to 90 in this time span. Sanctions rose as well. The number of fines issued went from 429 to 594 and suspensions from 197 to 250. The first Massachusetts State Lottery was drawn on April 6, 1972 and has since seen a prolific gain in popularity. The Lottery achieved a significant landmark in 1985, when for the first time total sales topped the $1 billion mark, attaining a final total $1,003,788,786. This was a 38% increase over 1984. These sales enabled the Lottery to return a record $341 million to the Commonwealth's cities and towns. In 1985, the Massachusetts Lottery was number one in the nation in per capita sales. Highlights were found in Instant Games sales, which increased more than 100% in 1985, the Megabucks Game, the most successful "lotto" games in the country in 1985 with average sales of nearly $9 million per week, and the Numbers Games, which had a sales increase of $1 million per week over 1984. Contributing factors for this success can be seen in the Lottery Commission's strategy to make the Lottery more accessible to the public and to create more attractive games. In 1985, the 4,000th on line computerized terminal was installed (1,119 installed in '85 alone), along with a new point-of-sale program. Development and implementation of a direct distribution and telemarketing system for the disbursement of Instant Games to the sales agents greatly facilitated rapid ticket delivery in 1985. In response to constant requests from avid players, a Megabucks Season Ticket subscription program was introduced in October, 1985. In 1985, more than 80 players collected jackpot prizes of $1 million or more. The Lottery has seen an increase in revenue every year since it began operation. The Lottery's Beano Control Division was renamed the Charitable Gaming Division in 1985. This Division is in charge of regulation and control of Beano, the collection of all taxes imposed on charitable wagering, sale of Charitable Game Tickets, and regulation and control of certain Las Vegas Nights. Gross receipts for 1985 totaled $264 million. The number of Beano games remained relatively the same from 1984. During any one week in 1985 over 175,000 players were attending games at one of the state's 875 licensed Beano organizations.

**ALCOHOL** Each town and city in Massachusetts has the option to allow or to prohibit the sale of alcoholic beverages. Most cities and towns which allow the sale of alcoholic beverages have established boards or commissions which act as local licensing authorities. The Massachusetts Alcoholic Beverage Control Commission has final approval for all retail license applications in the state. The Commission licenses and regulates all manufacturers, distillers, wholesalers, importers, and liquor transportation companies which operate in Massachusetts. The legal drinking age in Massachusetts was changed by law from 20 to 21 on June 1, 1985. The taxation of alcoholic beverages is regulated by the Massachusetts Department of Revenue. In 1985, malt was taxed at a rate of $3.30 per 31 gallon barrel; cider, 3% to 6% alcohol by volume, at the rate of .03 cents per wine gallon; still wine, 3% to 6% alcohol by volume, at the rate of 55 cents per wine gallon; sparkling wine, at the rate of 70 cents per wine gallon; alcoholic beverages, 15% or less alcohol by volume, at the rate of $1.10 per wine gallon; and alcoholic beverages more than 15% alcohol by volume, at the rate of $4.05 per wine or proof gallon. The net tax collected on alcoholic beverages during fiscal year 1985 totaled $83,195,000, which was a .4% decrease from 1984. A total of 1,202 tax returns were filed on alcoholic beverage excise in calendar year 1985.

**DEFENSE** The state's Military Division serves as the militia of the state and consists of the Army National Guard and the Air National Guard. The Military Division comes under the jurisdiction of the Commonwealth's Executive Office of Public Safety. Total authorized strength for the state's militia is 15,000, including 12,000 for the Army National Guard and 3,000 for the Air National Guard. The militia is organized for state defense, national defense, and other emergencies. War records may be obtained from the Military Division, which has an archives division that maintains records up to and including the American Revolution. The Massachusetts Army National Guard has 64 armory locations throughout the state. Divisional units and their respective headquarters: the 26th (Yankee) Infantry Division (Boston); 1st Squadron, 26th Cavalry (Reading); 101st Engineer Battalion (Reading); 126th Signal Battalion (Reading); 26th Infantry Division Support Command (Boston); 114th Medical Bata Battalion (Boston); 726th Maintenance (Natick); 26th Supply Transport Battalion (Framington); 1st Brigade, 26th Infantry Division (Westover Air Force Base); 1st Battalion, 101st Infantry (Dorchester); 1st Battalion, 104th Infantry (Chicopee); 1st Battalion, 181st Infantry (Worcester); 1st Battalion, 182nd Infantry (Melrose); 1st Battalion (Worcester); 2nd Battalion (Mech), 181st Infantry (Whitinsville); 26th Infantry Division, Artillery (Rehobeth); 1st Battalion, (105 mm Towed) 101st FA (Boston); 1st Battalion (105 mm Towed) 102nd FA, (Lynn); and 1st Battalion (155 mm 8 inch SP) 211th FA (New Bedford). Non-divisional units include: the STARC, Detachment 1 (Camp Edwards); 215th Army Bank (Fall River); 685th Military Police Battalion (Buzzards Bay); 181st Engineer Co, CSE (Whitman); 1059th Medical Detachment, Air Ambulance (Westover); 65th Medical Detachment, Field Ambulance, (Camp Edwards); 1058th Transportation Company (Hingham); 704th Transportation Detachment (Boston); 426th ATC Platoon (Camp Edwards); the 180th Engineers Detachment (Camp Edwards); and the Massachusetts Military Academy (Reading). The Massachusetts Air National Guard population includes a total of 308 officers and 2,492 enlisted personnel.

Additionally, the various bases, stations and support centers have a combined full-time work force of 948 personnel. The state's Air National Guard is headquartered at the Otis Air National Guard Base, located on Cape Cod, and the Wessesley Air National Guard Station. Headquarters for the 102nd Fighter Wing is located at Otis ANGB, with two runways and ramp space capable of serving all USAF aircraft. Headquarters for the 104th Tactical Fighter Group is located at Barnes Municipal Airport, with two runways at Westfield. Headquarters for the 253rd Combat Information Systems Group and the 267th Combat Information Systems Squadron is located at the Wessesley Air National Guard Station. The 101st Tactical Control Squadron and the 212th Engineering Installation Squadron are both located at the Worcester ANGS in Worcester. Other Air National Guard units stationed at Otis ANGB include the 567th Air Force Band, with one officer and 35 enlisted personnel; the 102nd Weather Flight, with three officers and 10 enlisted personnel; and the 202nd Weather Flight, with three officers and 16 enlisted personnel.

**FEDERAL DEFENSE** The U.S. Army has four active military installations in Massachusetts. Also, Camp Edwards, classified as an "inactive" federal military base, is currently utilized by the state's Army and Air National Guards, as well as by the U.S. Coast Guard. Including Camp Edwards, these five military installations have a total of 20,205 acres of land, with 17,835 total military and civilian personnel in fiscal year 1985. Fort Devens, in Ayer, is a 9,380-acre intelligence training facility. Its authorized manpower includes 5,632 military and 1,761 civilian personnel. The South Boston Support Activity installation in Boston is a 14-acre reserve training and defense logistics agency supply facility, with an authorized manpower of 195 military and 1,690 civilian personnel. The Army has two research and development activities installations in Massachusetts. The Natick Research and Development Center is an 81-acre facility with an authorized manpower of 175 military and 1,237 civilian personnel. In Watertown, the Materials Technology Laboratory is located on 48 acres, with an authorized manpower of 16 military and 664 civilian personnel. The U.S. Naval Air Station at South Weymouth is a 2,248-acre reserve air training installation, with an authorized manpower of 895 military and 194 civilian personnel. Two contractor-operated naval installations also operate in Massachusetts. The Naval Weapons Industrial Reserve Plant at Bedford is a 79-acre research and development facility for missiles and aircraft. The Naval Industrial Reserve Ordnance Plant at Pittsfield is a 31-acre production facility for missile components. Sixteen installations operating in Massachusetts on a total of 10,017 acres have connections to various U.S. Air Force operations. Hanscom AFB in Bedford is a 790-acre electronics systems division of the Air Force Systems Command. Its authorized manpower includes 2,120 military and 2,924 civilian personnel. Westover AFB in Chicopee is a 3,188-acre Air Force Reserve Tactical Airlift Wing facility. Its authorized manpower includes 31 military and 662 civilian personnel. The Otis Air National Guard Base in Granby is a 5,151-acre reserve training base installation. Air National Guard activities are the main function at Wellesley Air National Guard Station in Wellesley, the Barnes Municipal Airport in Westfield, and the Worcester Air National Guard Station in Worcester. These three facilities encompass a total of 149 acres of land. Four Air Force installations are engaged in research and development activities: the 10-acre Sagamore Hill Research Annex in Hamilton, the 60-acre Maynard Research Site in Maynard, the 10-acre Sudbury Research Site in Sudbury, and the six-acre Prospect Hill Research Site in Waltham. Two installations function primarily as communications centers: the 100-acre Westover Communications Annex in Granbury and the 97-acre North Truro Communication Annex in North Truro. The North Truro Air Force Station in North Truro is a 134-acre radar electronics site. Its authorized manpower includes eight military and six civilian personnel. Three contractor-operated Air Force production installations operate in Massachusetts: the 49-acre Air Force Plant 28 in Everett, producing jet engines; the 18-acre Air Force Plant 29 in Lynn, producing jet engines; and the 232-acre Air Force Plant 63 in North Grafton, producing aircraft forgings.

**VETERANS** According to the federal government, the number of veterans living in Massachusetts in 1983 totaled 714,000. Of these, 9,000 were veterans of World War I, 312,000 were veterans of World War II, 132,000 were veterans of the Korean conflict, and 172,000 served in the Vietnam era. Peacetime veterans totaled 122,000. Twelve percent of the state's population have served in the armed forces. Registered veterans were paid a total of $803 million in benefits in 1983, including $450 million in compensation and pensions. Education and training for veterans totaled $30 million and $267 million was spent on their medical services. Insurance and indemnities for veterans totaled $42 million in 1983. On the state level, Veterans Services is a division of the Executive Office of Human Services. It is a financial assistance program which provides medical, financial, and service benefits based on need. Most of the medical and financial assistance is administered locally by veterans agents stationed in each city and town in the state. As of 1987, the cities and towns are reimbursed by the Commonwealth for 75% of their expenditures. In fiscal year (FY) 1986, approximately 5,800 veterans received these benefits. A second benefit program provides a $500 annual annuity to veterans who are blind, paraplegic, or double amputees. Veterans Services offices also provide referrals, counseling, and assistance in obtaining Federal compensation and home loans. In FY 1985, Massachusetts veterans were assisted by Veteran Services staff in obtaining $65 million in federal funds. Between July, 1983 and December 1986, Veterans Outreach Centers were opened in seven locations around the state. Each center is designed to provide a wide range of services, including group therapy, drug and alcohol counseling, crisis assistance, and treatments for post-traumatic stress disorders. Each center serves about 3,000 veterans per year. An Agent Orange Program was funded in 1984, and administered by Veterans Services. An estimated 70,000 Massachusetts Vietnam Veterans were exposed to the herbicide. The program was expanded in each of the two following years. The program has two main components. The first is funding for medical and statistical research. According to the governor's Budget Report, this funding in 1985 helped establish for the first time a statistical relationship between death due to certain types of cancer and Vietnam Veterans. The second component is direct services to Vietnam veterans who were exposed to Agent Orange. Additional support is

being given to veterans through job training programs. A federal grant is matched by state funds in an effort to help some 30,000 unemployed or underemployed veterans in Massachusetts. Pre-vocational and vocational assessment, vocational counseling and aptitude testing are part of the program. More than $13 million was appropriated to Veteran Services in FY 1987, including close to $100,000 to develop a new program that will serve the estimated 50,000 Bay State veterans who may be suffering from Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder as a result of combat.

**FEDERAL EXPENDITURES** In 1985, the federal government had direct expenditures or obligations in the state of Massachusetts of $22.5 billion, $3,695 per capita. This included $8.6 billion by the Department of Defense. The federal government provided $3.3 billion in grant awards and paid $1.95 billion in salaries and wages. Direct payment to individuals totaled $8.9 billion, including $6.4 billion in retirement and disability payments. Massachusetts' businesses were awarded $8.3 billion in federal procurement contracts. The federal government also provided $85.7 million in direct loans, $1.2 billion in guaranteed loans and insurance, and $65.5 million in other expenditures or obligations.

**TAXES** From the early days when "No taxation without representation," erupted from Bay State citizens, Massachusetts has been deeply involved in tax issues. In the first half of the 1980s, this involvement took the form of two major pieces of tax legislation: Proposition 2 1/2, and the Tax Reform Act of 1985. Since peaking in 1977, when $138.19 of every $1,000 of Massachusetts personal income was siphoned into state and local coffers, the individual tax burden has dropped in each successive year. By 1984, $104.81 out of every $1,000 of personal income went toward state and local taxes. The turning point in these reductions came in 1980, when, by state referendum, Proposition 2 1/2 was passed. Though the bill touched several areas of taxation, it most strongly affected property tax and motor vehicle excise tax. Under Proposition 2 1/2, cities and towns cannot impose property taxes that exceed 2.5% of full property values. By 1986, all cities and towns had achieved this level. Auto excise tax was reduced from $66 per $1,000 of valuation to $25 per $1,000. These two taxes had combined for 50% of the total state and local tax revenue in 1970, but amounted to only 34% in 1984.From 1981 to 1982, the first year the Proposition took effect, revenue from property and auto excise taxes dropped a significant 6%. It is estimated that between fiscal 1982 and 1984 (the last year of property tax reductions for cities and towns), Massachusetts taxpayers had their property taxes lowered by $488 million. Under the terms of Proposition 2 1/2, the tax can now be increased by 2.5% of the prior year's levy plus 2.5% of the value of new properties. In the first year of institution, Bay State taxpayers saved $145 million in auto excise tax. One unique feature of Proposition 2 1/2, included to gain renters' support when the bill was put on the state ballot, is the renter's deduction on state income taxes. Tax filers may deduct half of the rent they pay on their primary residence, up to a maximum of $2,500. Between 1981 and 1982, the overall state and local tax burden on individuals dropped a sharp 7.7%. This reform has dramatically shifted Massachusetts' tax standing in comparison to other states. Bay Staters were paying 5.6% above the national average in 1970, and by 1979 were paying a whopping 24% over the norm. Between 1981 and 1984, the tax burden dropped from being the nation's seventh highest to the 22nd highest. By 1984, the tax burden was one percent below the national average. The Commonwealth collected a grand total of $8.6 billion in revenues in budgetary funds in fiscal year 1985, 75% of which were collected through taxes. The income tax alone amounted to over 33% of total revenues. Sales tax and income tax together made up 53% of the total. Massachusetts state individual income tax collections are higher than other states. In 1984, income tax amounted to $384.23 per person, compared to the national average of $199.54. It was the fifth highest in the nation. While Massachusetts income tax provided 50 cents for every tax dollar in 1984, the national average was 30 cents. The Tax Reform Act of 1985 was legislated to provide a significant cut of lower and middle income taxpayers, and also to simplify the tax system. The reform was made possible, in part, by the economic boom enjoyed by the state in the 1980s, creating a situation of higher income, thus more revenues. The major reform in the Act ended the 7.5% state surtax on wages, salaries, and other "earned income", reducing tax rates to a flat 5%. The schedule of tax cuts was such that the surtax was cut in half in fiscal 1986 (making the rate a flat 5.185%), and then completely eliminated in 1987 and thereafter. This component alone is estimated to save taxpayers $285 million when fully effective. The tax reform package was also aimed at lessening the income tax burden on those with limited ability to pay. This was done by replacing uniform personal exemptions with a system of declining exemptions. The declining personal exemption schedule, which took effect in fiscal 1987, was meant to ensure that the benefits of tax relief would be distributed more in proportion to need than the surtax repeal would have allowed. For instance, instead of having a standard across-the-board amount for personal exemptions, regardless of income, the new law allows larger personal exemptions for those with lower incomes than for those with higher incomes, who, theoretically, are not as affected by such items. Under the old law, all single filers were entitled to a $2,200 personal exemption when making out their tax forms, regardless of whether the individual made $10,000 or $50,000 per year. Under the new law, single filers who make up to $6,000 per year can claim an exemption of $3,800. The exemption amount gradually decreases as income levels increase, to where a filer who makes $40,000 or more reaches the minimum level of a $600 personal exemption. For the very poor, the state also doubled the minimum "no tax" thresholds. This will exempt an additional (over the 1983 figure) 250,000 low income filers from paying state income tax in 1987. The Tax Reform Act of 1985 also simplified the tax form for some groups. Married-filing-jointly taxpayers were given a much simpler formula with which to figure their deduction for second incomes, determination for the no tax status became much simpler, and the package spared a significant number of individuals who owed no taxes the trouble of filing at all. When the tax reform package was put into full force, the tax group ticketed to save the most by percentage was the single filer making between $10,000 and $20,000; that filer would save 33.4%. Second to income tax in generating state revenues is the sales and use tax. The Commonwealth imposes a 5% tax on retail sales and

a 5% use tax on storage, and use or other consumption of certain tangible properties brought into the Commonwealth. Exempt from sales and use taxation are water, electricity, gas, steam, telegraph and telephone, most clothing, food, prescribed medicine, produce and materials used in food production, machinery, tools, materials and fuel used in certain industries, and property subject to other excises. Sales and use tax made up 23.3% of the Commonwealth's revenues in fiscal 1985. Sales tax income increased nationwide from 1970 to 1984 by 117%, while in the Bay State it more than tripled. However, sales tax makes up far less of Massachusetts' tax revenue (22% in 1984) compared to the nation's average per state (34%). Collections of regular sales tax were forecasted to increase by 14.6% in fiscal year 1986 and another 11.2% in fiscal 1987, both signs of a robust economy. The third highest percentage of tax dollars is brought in through corporate income tax. Business corporations, other than banks, trust companies, insurance companies, public utilities, railroads, and safe deposit companies, are subject to an excise that has an income and a property measure. The real estate measure was (in 1986) $2.60 per $1,000 of value, and the income level was 9.5% on gross income for federal taxes. There is a minimum tax of $228, and a surtax of 14%, that includes both the income and property rates. Tax on business corporations brought the state $667.4 million in 1985, and was expected to increase over 20% in 1986, to $804 million. Fiscal 1987 was expected to top the $900 million mark. The three growth taxes—income, sales, and corporate—accounted for 82% of all tax revenue in fiscal 1985. The $758 million increase in tax collections in 1985 represented the largest increase in Commonwealth history. Since this growth occurred without a tax increase, it is seen as the result of a strong economy and stepped up efforts on the part of the Department of Revenue (DOR) to promote tax compliance. The DOR estimates that $331 million of 1985 tax collections stemmed from enforcement of the Revenue Enforcement and Protection Program (REAP). Tax enforcement and a one time Amnesty program (which resulted in $67 million in FY 85) are responsible for an estimated 27% of the cumulative tax revenue increases in fiscal years 1984 and 1985, which total $564 million. The DOR's efforts to improve the rate of voluntary compliance is based on a three-part strategy: raising the stake for tax evaders, improving customer service for compliant taxpayers, and changing the taxpayer's attitude about evasion. Proof of these stepped up efforts are found in the 150 seizures of property in fiscal 1985, a 69% increase over 1984. Over 300 other delinquent accounts were paid after being turned over to the Seizure Unit and given 10-day warning notices. The longest jail sentence ever given in Massachusetts for state tax evasion was imposed in 1985, as was the highest fine (in a separate case) ever for a state tax crime.

## COMMUNICATION

With the establishment of the first printing press in the New World by Stephen Daye in Cambridge in 1640, the Bay State began its distinguished history as a pacesetter in American communications. From its earliest hymn books, to the incendiary broadsides of the American Revolution, and the Transcendentalist writings of the 19th Century, to the sophisticated, high-tech media productions of the 1980s, the state has remained a leader. The Bay State's first commercial television station, NBC affiliate WBZ Channel 4, commenced operations in 1948, only seven years after the inception of commercial television. Boston's WMEX had had experimental television as early as the mid-1930s. Today, the state has 12 commercial television broadcasters and three noncommercial/educational broadcasters. Among these are two Public Broadcasting Stations (PBS), WGBY in Springfield, and its parent station, WGBH in Boston. Though the state is home to many prestigious and respected media institutions, the standard bearer in Massachusetts today might well be public television. In 1982, WGBH (whose call letters are an acronym for the Great Blue Hill where the station's first transmitter was located), won ten Emmy Awards for excellence in television broadcasting. In 1964, WGBH won an Oscar for its film production of the life of poet Robert Frost, "A Lover's Quarrel With The World". In 1983, after six years of work, WGBH finished the highly acclaimed "Vietnam: A Television History", which became the most watched public affairs series in the history of public television. WGBH is responsible for the production of many of PBS' best known, nationally run programs: "Master-piece Theatre", "Nova", "Evening at Pops", "Frontline", "Mystery!", "The Victory Garden" (formerly "Crockett's Victory Garden"), and "The Living Planet: A Portrait of the Earth". Four of 1985's ten-most-watched PBS programs nationwide were produced by WGBH. Public television's highest recognition of merit, the Ralph Lowell Award, is named in honor of the founder of WGBH. As of April 1, 1984, Massachusetts had 74 cable television systems serving 174 communities and 659,000 basic subscribers, up substantially from September 1, 1975 when the state had 42 systems serving 76 communities and 160,000 basic subscribers. Radio, too, has a long history in the state, with Medford being the home of the state's first station, WGT, in 1920. Boston's first radio station was founded on September 19, 1921, and, as with television, it began at WBZ (AM). In 1922, WEZE (AM) was founded. Both are still in operation. As of 1985, there were 68 commercial AM and 45 commercial FM stations in the state, along with 55 educational FM stations. Newspapers have long been a major concern in Massachusetts. The staidness went out of Massachusetts journalism in the early 18th century when James Franklin, the brother of Benjamin Franklin, founded the *New England Courant*, in which James contributed the satiric "Silence Dogwood" papers. Much of the *Courant's* energies were spent jeering the dullness of its contemporaries. William Randolph Hearst learned much of his early newspaper sense in the offices of the late-19th-century *Boston Globe*, where he worked while a student at Harvard University in Cambridge. Hearst returned to Boston in 1904 and launched the *American*. He later bought the then-100-year-old *Advertiser*. Today, three major papers are generated from Boston: the *Globe*, the *Boston Herald*, and the *Christian Science Monitor*. The *Globe* has the largest circulation of any paper in New England, with a daily subscription of approximately 450,000 and a Sunday audience of more than 750,000. Founded in 1872 by Martin Ballou, the *Globe* was purchased in 1877 by Charles H. Taylor whose family still owns it today. The *Herald* became New England's first Sunday paper in 1826. Its circulation runs over 325,000 Monday through Friday, with a Sunday printing of over 275,000. The *Christian Science Monitor* was established in 1908 by 87-year-old Mary Baker Eddy. With a daily international

circulation of over 148,000, the *Monitor* has earned a worldwide reputation for highly regarded reporting. The paper has had a national edition since 1911 and an international edition since 1913. In accordance with the principles of Christian Science, the *Monitor* carries no drug, liquor, or tobacco advertising. As of February 1984, Massachusetts had 45 daily newspapers, down from 48 in 1980. Total paid circulation was over two million, 36% of the state's population. Ten papers ran Sunday editions with a combined circulation of more than 1.6 million. According to the New England Press Association, in 1986 there were 257 twice weekly, weekly, or bi-weeekly newspapers in Massachusetts. One of Massachusetts' greatest contributions to modern journalism may be Harvard's Nieman Fellowships. Agnes Wahl Nieman, widow of Lucius W. Nieman who founded the *Milwaukee Journal*, left her share of the paper to Harvard University. In a remarkably creative use of funds, Harvard established the Nieman Fellowships. The recipients of these fellowships are working newsmen who gain a year-long leave from their jobs to attend Harvard and pursue the study of their choice. Though they receive no credit, their regular salaries are paid by the Nieman Foundation. Having had America's first printing press, Massachusetts gained an early place in the New World's publishing industry. By 1982, the Bay State had 1,473 printing and publishing establishments, employing over 490,000 with an annual payroll of $8.86 million. *The Atlantic* magazine (founded as *The Atlantic Monthly* in 1857) is a Massachusetts publication respected in all quarters for its literary quality. Major publishers in the state include the Harvard University Press (one of the largest American university presses), Little and Brown, G.&C. Merriam (publishers of Merriam-Webster dictionaries), and the Houghton Mifflin Company. From William Bradford (''Of Plymouth Plantation'') to Jack Kerouac (''On The Road''), the state's literary cup has flowed over with such notables as Ralph Waldo Emerson (''The American Scholar'', ''Self Reliance''), Henry David Thoreau (''Walden'', ''Civil Disobediance''), Nathaniel Hawthorne (''The Scarlet Letter'', ''Twice Told Tales'', ''The House Of The Seven Gables''), Horatio Alger (''Ragged Dick'' and 118 other novels), Harriet Beecher Stowe (''Uncle Tom's Cabin''), the poet Emily Dickinson, who put no titles on her work), Herman Melville (''Moby Dick''), John Dos Passos (''The U.S.A. Trilogy''), and John Cheever (''The Wapshot Chronicle'', ''Falconer''). The Telecommunications Division of the Department of Public Utilities is responsbile for the regulation of all common carriers that provide transmission of intelligence by electricity within the Commonwealth. Regulated carriers include all intrastate telephone companies, telegraph companies, radio common carriers and other specialized common carriers. As of 1985 there were 13 regulated telephone companies offering service within the state. Of these, American Telephone and Telegraph was the largest, offering service to every city and town. Persons employed in the communications industry in Massachusetts totaled 365,000 in 1982, representing 537 establishments and an annual payroll of $934.5 million.

## TRANSPORTATION

Massachusetts has maintained its traditional role as a major transportation hub for international and national commerce and passenger travel. Beginning with the first ferry route, in 1630, between Boston and Charlestown, the Commonwealth has developed a well-integrated infrastructure of road, rails, and ports to serve the needs of its people and industries. Massachusetts' early history began with fishing ventures and trade from its many harbors and ports. In 1631, the first Massachusetts-built ship, ''The Blessing of the Bay'', was launched by Governor John Winthrop from the new shipyard at Medford on the Mystic River. Today, there are five major ports through which imports and exports are handled, and over 60,000 passengers travel. The state has a full complement of 14 Regional Transit Authorities (RTA). Formed in 1973 to establish transit organizations for cities and towns outside of the Massachusetts Bay Transit Authority (MBTA), RTAs have the power to contract with private operators to provide services within the region. MBTA serves the metropolitan Boston area, including cities and towns in adjoining counties. Along the coast, several year-round ferry services are offered to Martha's Vineyard, Nantucket, and Cuttyhunk Island. Summer ferries serve Boston Harbor Islands, Nantasket, and Gloucester. Due to the state's relatively small geographical size, travel by commuter rail is a popular and efficient mode of transportation within the state. In 1984, Logan International Airport was ranked the 11th busiest airport in the world in passenger volume. In accordance with its commitment to infrastructure, the state has sponsored ground transportation and terminal improvements at a cost of over $2 billion. Today, as during the colonial period, Massachusetts transportation system serves the needs of its citizens, the nation, and the international community.

**WATERBORNE COMMERCE** Five major ports in Massachusetts moved 36.3 million short tons of freight and 61,060 seabourne passengers in 1983. These ports include the Port of Boston, the Cape Cod Canal, Fall River Harbor, New Bedford and Fairhaven Harbor, and Salem Harbor. The state's busiest waterborne commercial port is the Port of Boston, which handled just over 17 million short tons during the year. Boston's imports totaled 5,397,293 short tons, with exports recorded at 623,046 short tons. Domestic tonnage at Boston had the following breakdown: local freight, 356,932; internal receipts, 12,562; coastwise receipts 9.7 million; and coastwise shipments, 921,883. The port's Main Waterfront handled 49,420 passengers, accounting for all movement in this category in Boston in 1983. Leading products handled through Massachusetts' ports during the year were gasoline, distillate fuel oil, residual fuel oil, coal and lignite, and other coal and petroleum products.

**ROADS AND STREETS** Massachusetts had 33,796 miles of highways in 1983, including 20,600 urban and 13,200 miles of rural highways. Jurisdiction for these roadways was 89% local, 10.7% state, and 0.3% federal. The state's percentage of highways under local control is considerably higher than the national average, which is 69.6%. Massachusetts, Rhode Island, Connecticut, and New Jersey are the only states in the United States that have more urban than rural highway mileage. The state had 562 miles of interstate highways, and 5,810 miles of federal-aid highway system roads in urban areas. The state received $890 million in highway receipts from all government sources in 1982, a 2.1% increase from the previous year. Of this total, 49.6% was from road-user taxes. Highway

disbursements totaled $747 million in 1982, with the following breakdown, by percentages: capital outlay, 33.1%; maintenance, 26.6%; and highway police and safety, 11.9%. As of December 31, 1985, Massachusetts had an estimated 4,551 bridges, of at least 20 feet in length. Of these, 31.5% had structural deficiencies, and 2% were functionally obsolete. In August, 1985, the state's gasoline tax rate was $.11 per gallon, compared to the nation's $.124 average. Massachusetts' outstanding highway debt in 1983 was $930 million. On June 14, 1986, the state had a total of 4,328,878 motor vehicles of all classes registered. Among these were 3,334,873 registered passenger vehicles, 388,484 trucks, 226,077 trailers, 9,146 buses, 92,524 motorcycles, and 277,774 other motor vehicles (fire apparatus vehicles, hearses, taxis, ambulances, police vehicles, etc.). New car registrations in 1984 totaled 296,000, a 12% increase from the previous year. Licensed drivers in Massachusetts totaled 3,679,000 in 1983, a level of 638.2 per 1,000 resident population. State officials estimated some 40 billion miles traveled by motor vehicle drivers in Massachusetts in 1984, with 2.5 billion gallons of fuel consumed. Traffic deaths increased 12% from 1984 to 1985. In 1984, the traffic death count included 637 adults and 26 children. Among these, 121 were pedestrians. In 1985, the state recorded 687 fatal accidents and 742 deaths. Police-reported motor vehicle accidents totaled 111,622 in 1984, including 607 fatal injury accidents and 663 deaths, 36,491 non-fatal injury accidents, and 74,131 property damage accidents. Among the Commonwealth's 2,623,000 workers age 16 and over, 80.2% traveled to work in a car, truck, or van. Among these, 61% drive alone. Of all workers in Massachusetts, 19.1% participate in a car pool to travel to work, and 9.3% use public transportation. The state's percentage of workers using public transportation to journey to their place of employment is above the national average, which is 6.4%. The Massachusetts Turnpike extends 135 miles from the New York border, west of West Stockbridge, and eastward through the state's southern areas to downtown Boston. The Turnpike has 24 interchanges within the state's boundaries.

**RAIL** The use of rail as a mode of transport in Massachusetts is affected by the state's relatively small geographical size, its proximity to other major industrial centers in New England and the Northeastern United States, and the heavy use of rail for commuter passenger service. Approximately 35% of the rail route mileage operating within the state has commuter or inter-city passenger trains operating on a daily basis, as well as freight operations. The responsibility assumed by passenger operation authorities for capital investment and maintenance costs of rail lines is helpful in keeping many freight services in operation without major rate increases or external financial assistance. During the late 1800s, about 98% of the railroad route mileage in the Commonwealth was used by passenger trains on a regular basis. Commuter service within the MBTA in the Boston area, was transferred from the Boston and Maine Corporation to Amtrak on January 1, 1987 in a three-year contract. Amtrak's intercity service in Massachusetts includes the Boston to New York/Washington and the Springfield to New Haven routes operated by the Penn Central Transportation Company at the time Amtrak was established. Other lines within the "Northeast Corridor" service were discontinued in 1971. Amtrak initiated the Bay State train service, reinstituting passenger service between Ne Haven, Connecticut and Springfield, Massachusetts, wi some trains extending to New York and Washington, D.( Most of the state's railroad freight is interstate, as the poin to-point distances within the Commonwealth are relative short—no towns being farther than 250 miles apart—makir truck service advantageous to many shippers. Ten operatin freight railroad companies were serving Massachusetts i 1986. Two of these were classified as Class I Railroads (annu gross revenues exceeding $50 million). Also, two Class I Railroads (between $10 million and $50 million per year) an six Class III Railroads (under $10 million annually) operat within the state. Five of these 10 railroads operate within state outside the Commonwealth. The Boston and Main Corporation operation is the busiest Class I carrier, operatin 530 route miles. The other Class I Railroad, the Consolidate Rail Corporation (Conrail), operates 428 route miles. Clas II carrier operations include Providence and Worcester (7 route miles) and Central Vermont (55 route miles). Class II Railroad carriers operate a total of 192 route miles, bringing the state's total freight railroad miles to 1,282.

**PUBLIC TRANSIT** The state had 14 Regional Transit Authorities (RTAs) in October, 1985, with a membership of 170 cities and towns in both urban and rural areas. These RTAs were formed following legislation passed in 1973 to establish locally based organizations of cities and towns outside the Massachusetts Bay Transit Authority (MBTA), for the purpose of joining together to contract with private operators to provide transit services within their districts. These included the Berkshire RTA, the Cape Ann RTA, the Cape Cod RTA, the Franklin RTA, the Greater Attleboro-Taunton RTA, the Greenfield-Montague Transportation Area, the Merrimack Valley RTA, the Montachusett RTA, the Pioneer Valley Transit Authority, the Southeastern RTA, the Martha's Vineyard Transit Authority, and the Worcester RTA. Each community within an RTA pays the full local share for service provided by the Authority within the community. The state's Intercity Bus Capital Assistance Program (IBCAP) is a program implemented by the Massachusetts Executive Office of Transportation and Construction (EOTC). The IBCAP legislation provides authorization for the EOTC to buy intercity coaches and establish seven-year lease agreements with private bus carriers based in the Commonwealth to operate regular route transit service. The MBTA services 78 cities and towns, with an overall population of 2,608,638, based on the 1980 U.S. Census. In 1984, MBTA had an active fleet of 1,002 buses, 229 streetcars, 354 rapid transit cars, 50 trackless trolleys, and 225 commuter rail vehicles. Routes included 153 bus, five streetcar, three rapid transit, four trackless trolley, and eight commuter rail routes. Weekly passengers using MBTA totaled 589,500, with an estimated 548,200 using the basic MBTA system and 41,300 using the Commuter Rail System. Annual passengers totaled 171,200,000, including an estimated 160,000,000 using the basic MBTA system and 11,200,000 using commuter rail. The system has 16.7 subway track miles (one-way) and 48.2 track miles (one-way) of bridges (surface and elevated). The MBTA complies with planning and programming requirements established by state and federal law. The system operates in the metropolitan Boston area, including cities and towns in adjoining counties. The general

area served by the MBTA ranks fourth among metropolitan areas in the United States for public transportation use, with 12.6% of its population opting for mass transit modes of travel to work. Boston is referred to as the "birthplace of American mass transportation" by some historians, who note that such a system was first developed in the city in 1631. The Authority operates approximately 170 local bus and express bus routes, four trackless trolley routes, and contracts with the Boston & Maine Railroad to provide commuter rail service to outlying communities. MBTA's basic rapid transit fare in 1984 was $.60, with additional zone fares applying to some long-distance routes. Bus system fare was $.50, with some suburban and express routes up to $1.50 for longer distances. Senior citizens, students, school-age children, and handicapped persons have some fare reduction rates available, and children under five accompanied by an adult ride free. The system operates 20 hours each day, from approximately 5 a.m. to 1 a.m., with some routes operating for limited hours. The state's CARAVAN commuter vanpooling program offers a statewide fleet of more than 150 vans servicing thousands of Bay State commuters. This project was created in 1978 under the authority of the Massachusetts Executive Office of Transportation and Construction. A major feature of the state's mass transit network is the variety of water transportation services available that allow commuting between the island counties and mainland employment centers. A number of private ferry companies offer roundtrip commuter boat service throughout the Boston Harbor area. Also, there are several year-round ferries offering service to Martha's Vineyard, Nantucket, and Cuttyhunk Island, as well as summer ferries to Boston Harbor Islands, Nantasket, Provincetown, and Gloucester.

**AVIATION** Massachusetts had 130 United States civil and joint-use airport facilities in operation in 1983, including 76 private airports. Boston's Logan International Airport, ranked the 11th busiest in passenger volume in the world, served 18.4 million passengers in 1984. Hanscom Field, located 18 miles northwest of Boston, serves nearly 400 corporations and is considered the state's premier general aviation airport serving the high technology industry. Takeoffs and landings at these airports totaled 1.6 million for the year, a 1% decline from operations in 1980. Passenger enplanements on all air carriers totaled 8 million in 1983, compared to 7.1 million in 1982 and 7 million in 1980. Freight and mail shipments reached 135.3 million tons in 1983, compared to 125.7 million in 1982 and 123.8 million in 1980. Active based aircraft in 1985 totaled 3,219 statewide. In 1983, there were 12,010 active pilots in the Commonwealth. Among these, 45% were licensed as private, 26.8% as student, and 17.6% as commercial pilots.

## COMMUNITY SERVICES

**EDUCATION** The Department of Education is governed by a 12-member board, and is the agency in charge of administering laws relative to elementary and secondary education, the distribution of federal and state funds, and the improvement of education for all public school students in the Commonwealth. Local and regional school committees are primarily responsible for the actual operation of individual school districts. The department fulfills its responsibilities by collecting data on the condition of education, by administering regulations, and by setting standards. In fiscal year 1986, the state appropriated $1.38 billion to the Department of Education, up from $1.32 billion in 1985. The state also received $226 million in federal funds for education. The 1987 Governor's Budget requested $1.53 billion. The state also received $249 million in federal funds in 1987. In July of 1985, the Massachusetts legislature enacted a sweeping education reform program, the Public School Improvement Act (Chapter 188 of the Acts of 1985). The emphasis of the act is divided into several components, covering equal opportunity and voluntary segregation, student achievement (including, for the first time, the administering of a standard equivalency test), involvement of parents and the community, adult education, and the upgrading of certification requirements for teachers and administrators. Until the mid-1980s, the Commonwealth had escaped the worst effects of the growing national shortage of teachers. By 1986, though, shortages in some subject areas were arising, and it was projected that by 1989 shortages would be evident in most areas. The Public School Improvement Act authorizes a number of programs designed to attract and retain higher caliber teachers. In 1986, the state funded $4 million to fulfill its commitment of an $18,000 minimum salary for every teacher in the Commonwealth. Any district that accepts this provision of the Act will receive state assistance in 1987 to bring all their teachers to this minimum level. The eligible districts totaled 291, of which 120 (40%) applied in the program's first year. Teachers earned the $18,000 minimum in 196 school districts in 1986. To recognize career teachers, the legislature budgeted $31.4 million for Professional Development Grants. Districts participating are to award funds through collective bargaining to supplement teacher compensation. The Horace Mann Teachers Program, which was initiated in fiscal 1987, offers teachers the opportunity to take on additional responsibilities, such as curriculum development and the training of other teachers, for additional pay. As of 1984-85, the average public teacher salary in the Commonwealth was $24,618. This is up from $17,253 in 1979-80 and from $23,000 in 1983-84, when that state ranked 15th nationwide in teacher salaries. From 1973-74 to 1983-84, teacher salaries rose 106.7% in the Bay State, the 28th highest state growth in that time. From 1982-83 to 1983-84 salaries rose from $19,900 to $23,000, but the state ranking dropped from 12th to 15th, reflecting the nationwide push to make teaching salaries more attractive. Total full-time professional instructional personnel totaled 65,617 in 1983-84, down 2.4% from 1981-82. Out of every 100 school district employees in 1981-82, 60.3 were classroom teachers, the seventh highest ratio nationwide. Public school enrollment in 1983 represented 89.29% of the school age population. Between 1982-83 and 1983-84, enrollment dropped in every grade except kindergarten and first. Nonpublic school enrollment dropped as well between 1970 and 1986, falling from 198,700 to 144,620, though the 1985 figure showed an increase from 138,300 in 1980. While the number of elementary and secondary students were declining, the cost of educating them was rising. From fiscal 1972, when the per pupil cost in public schools was $964, through fiscal 1985, when the costs reached $3,143 per pupil, the amount went up yearly, totaling 226%. The largest single year jump occurred in 1975, when costs rose 19.8%. Between 1984 and 1985 the costs went up 9.7%. The 1985 average

amount of $3,143 represents a wide range between some cities and towns. In 1985 29 cities or towns spent under $2,500. On the other end of the spectrum, five cities or towns spent between $5,001 and $10,080 per pupil. In order to create a more even balance, the Equal Educational Opportunity (EEO) Grant Program (part of the Public School Improvement Act) was developed. For fiscal 1987, the governor's budget request was for $30 million in EEO grants. The idea is to fund grants for the 143 school districts in Massachusetts that were spending less than 85% of the per pupil average on direct educational services. While these 143 districts enroll 50% of the state's public school students, they also include 82% of the state's low income pupils. Eligibility is determined by comparing spending between similar types of school districts. Districts that include only elementary schools are compared with all other elementary districts. Any district that is spending less than 85% of the per pupil average for its type of district is eligible. The 85% figure is based on a state law that requires all districts to be within this percentage by 1989. Although EEO is designed to be a continuing program, it is expected that over time the new costs will diminish as communities at the low end of the spending scale are brought closer to the average and disparities between districts decrease. In 1985, 62% of Massachusetts graduates attended some sort of post-secondary institution. The highest percentage, 21.7%, attended four-year private colleges. Graduates attending four year public colleges amounted to 10.5%. Over a five-year period, from 1981-1985, the percentage of graduates attending post-secondary schools rose gradually, while the percentage of those who went into the work force gradually declined. Of the three types of high schools on which the study was based—academic school for general studies and college preparatory courses, vocational schools, and comprehensive high schools that offer academic courses and at least five occupational programs—the highest percentage of graduates attending college approximately 65%, came from academic schools. The highest percentage of graduates entering the work force, more than 70%, came from vocational schools. Massachusetts high school students taking the Scholastic Aptitude Test (SAT) in 1986 had a mean score of 909, slightly above the national mean of 906. Since 1976, Massachusetts students have scored very close to the national mean, scoring a 901 in 1976 (national mean of 903), an 888 in 1981 (national mean of 890), and equaling the national mean of 906 in 1985. Though the percentage of Commonwealth residents 25 years of age or older with at least four years of high school increased from 58.5% in 1970 to 72.2% in 1980, the Governor's budget reported that in 1986 there were as many adults lacking high school diplomas in Massachusetts as there are students in school. In 1984-85, 77 programs (65 instructional and 12 special projects) served 28,000 adults who lacked a high school diploma or its equivalent. Of that number, 22,400 (80%) lacked an eighth grade education. An average of 10,000 adults pass the high school equivalency examination each year.

**HIGHER EDUCATION** Higher education in Massachusetts is of statewide, national, and international significance. With several prestigious independent institutions on both the university and college level and the state-run University of Massachusetts system, the Bay State is highly rated where post-secondary education is concerned. In 1985, the number of Massachusetts degree-granting institutions of higher learning totaled 125. This broke down as follows: 15 state supported two-year colleges, nine four-year state colleges, five state universities (counting the University of Massachusetts at Amhurst, the University of Massachusetts/Boston and the University of Massachusetts Medical Center at Worcester), 20 independent two-year institutions, 64 four-year independent colleges, and nine independent universities. The state's 29 institutions are under the governance of the Board of Regents, a 12 member panel. The Board of Regents develops and maintains systemwide policies and standards, administers the system's budget, and approves or discontinues academic programs. Tuition levels, the setting of admissions standards, administering the state's scholarship programs, and enforcing systemwide policies on affirmative action are responsibilities of the Board of Regents. Enrollment in the fall of 1985 for 118 of the 123 public and independent institutions (five independent institutions chose not to respond to the state in both 1984 and 1985) totaled 419,631, less than a 1% increase from the fall 1984 total of 417,339. Of that number, 185,915 (44.3%) were enrolled in public institutions and 233,716 (55.7%) were in independent institutions. Graduate students made up 15.7% of the 1985 enrollment, totaling 65,930. Of this amount, 73.8% were attending independent institutions. Of the state's students seeking their first professional degree, 97% were enrolled in independent institutions. Of the overall student population in both public and independent colleges, the largest number of students are undergraduates at independent universities, where 87,102 were enrolled. Fall 1985 enrollment figures show that 14% more females were enrolled in higher education than males, 223,888 to 195,743. Between July 1, 1984 and June 30, 1985, Massachusetts institutions granted 75,714 degrees, 24,542 from the public institutions and 51,172 from the independent institutions. This compares to a total 74,388 the previous year. These totals show a significant increase over a 15 year period. The 1970-71 fiscal year produced 55,812 graduates from Massachusetts colleges and universities. The 1985 breakdown of degrees is as follows: 14,867 associate' degrees; 39,780 bachelor's degrees; 14,470 master's degrees; 1,782 doctorates; 2,298 first professional degrees; 2,067 post-secondary certificates or diplomas (less than an associate's degree). The highest number of bachelor's degrees, 8,225, were awarded in business and management. More master's degrees were awarded in business, 4,209, than any other discipline, and the second highest number in education, 2,606. Independent institutions granted 12,445 master's, while 2,025 were awarded at public institutions. Education departments awarded the most Ph.D's, 284, while the physical sciences and engineering awarded 250 and 248 respectively. Among the first professional degrees awarded, 1,366 were law degrees and 1,232 were in the health sciences. All but 103 were granted by independent institutions. From 1984 through 1986, Massachusetts increased its financial support for higher education more than any other major industrial state. While state support for higher education nationwide increased by an average of 31% over this period, the Commonwealth increased its commitment by 51%. This benefited many areas of the Board's domain, including tuition at the state colleges and universities. Though tuition rose 12.5% from 1984 through 1986, Massachusetts personal income grew by over twice that amount. More than 50,000

Massachusetts students yearly receive state assistance to meet all or part of their educational expenses at both independent and public colleges and universities. Between 1983 and 1986, scholarship appropriations tripled, going from $19 million to $57.5 million, resulting in a yearly increase in both the number and size of awards. By 1986, 49% of the applicants for General Scholarship grant awards received some financial aid, as opposed to 29% in 1983. Individual recipients attending a Massachusetts state university received an average of $610 in 1986, compared to $300 in 1983. Grants to students attending independent institutions increased 63% in the same period. Though the General Scholarship Program is the primary source of aid to undergraduate students, other programs exist in an attempt to target specific groups of students. The Adult Learner Program and the Commonwealth Scholars Program are designed to assist welfare recipients and meritorious high school seniors respectively. A graduate level grant program, a state-assisted loan program for low income students, and state-funded work-study program have recently been implemented by the state. Another issue in recent years has been faculty salaries at state schools. Collective bargaining agreements from 1984 to 1986 helped raise salaries at state schools to a more competititve level. In the early 1980s, salary levels at four-year institutions were well below national averages for similar colleges, but by 1986, these had risen to the top 20%. Also below average at the beginning of the decade were salaries at community colleges. These institutions saw a systemwide average increase of 27% from 1984 to 1986. The main campus of the state university system is the University of Massachusetts at Amhurst. The University also has campuses in Boston and Worcester, the site of the University of Massachusetts Medical Center. The medical school was established in 1962 and accepted its first class in 1970. The other two state universities are the University of Lowell and Southeastern Massachusetts University. The origin of independent colleges and universities in the Commonwealth is also the origin of higher learning in America. Harvard University in Cambridge, founded in 1636, is our country's oldest post secondary institution. Three existing colleges or universities in Massachusetts were founded before 1800.

**LIBRARIES** The Massachusetts Board of Library Commissioners is the agency responsible for providing technical assistance and distributing state and federal aid to the public libraries in the state. The Board also establishes and improves library services for residents of state correctional, mental health, and public health institutions. As of January 1, 1987, there were more than 422 public library facilities serving 347 of the 351 cities and towns in Massachusetts. The four towns without public library facilities receive bookmobile services from the state's Regional Public Library System. Academic libraries are operated by 31 state-supported universities and colleges, and 86 privately supported institutions. Special libraries, which are defined as those libraries maintained by individual corporations, associations, government agencies, or other groups for the purpose of collecting, organizing, and disseminating information devoted primarily to special subjects, numbered 357 in 1983, according to the Boston Chapter of the Special Libraries Association. State agencies, as of January 1987, maintained 24 resident and 20 staff libraries at state institutions; 10 client libraries operated by the Department of Corrections, 10 client and 12 staff libraries operated by the Department of Mental Health, and four client and eight staff libraries operated by the Department of Public Health. Three of the state's 16 county jails also provide library services. There are 18 Trial Court law libraries, funded by the state through the Office of the Trial Court's Chief Administrative Justice, located in 12 counties in Massachusetts. The State Library, organized in 1826, is an independent state agency governed by a board of trustees. It provides informational and research requirements of the state's executive and legislative branches, and serves as a depository for state and federal government printed documents, and principal resource materials on the state and local history of Massachusetts. There are four state document depository libraries in Massachusetts; Boston Public Library, Worcester Public Library, Springfield City Library, and the University of Massachusetts/Amhurst. The Massachusetts State Archives, located on land adjoining the University of Massachusetts/Boston, houses executive and legislative records dating back to 1629.

**CHILD CARE** As of January 1, 1987, the Office of Children (OFC) reported a total of 113,000 licensed day care placements in the state, with 9,523 family day care homes providing care for more than 44,000 children and 1,855 day care centers for more than 69,000. This represents a rise in capacity of 2,000 places since July 1986. OFC has also developed and funded several programs offering day care for children from low-income families. In March of 1987, OFC completed its network entitled Child Care Resource and Referral Program (CCR&R) to help parents find day care. Through this system parents in any part of the state can call one of the regional sites for information on day care in their area. CCR&R also provides information on how parents can evaluate and recognize quality day care programs. This program has served Greater Worcester, Springfield, New Bedford, and the North Shore since 1985. Greater Lowell and Boston began service in 1986. The final six programs, initiated in March of 1987, will serve the South Shore, Hampshire and Franklin Counties, the Berkshires, Greater Fall River, Taunton, northern Worcester County, and Brockton/Attleboro/southern Norfolk County. Day care programs have been identified as an important component of the Employment and Training (ET) program instituted in 1985. The average annual cost of day care in 1987 is estimated to be $2,800. For a child with special needs or an infant/toddler the cost could rise to $5,000 annually. In order to make day care affordable and accessible, the Department of Social Services provided $18 million for day care programs for 5,258 children. The Voucher Day Care program provides funding to persons involved in ET and ET graduates for one year. Clients participating in the program must pay a small fee determined on a sliding fee scale. This fee varies with a client's ability to pay, the type of care needed, family size, and number of children receiving care. The average Aid to Families with Dependent Children client participating in ET paid $3.85 per week, and the average client placed into a job through ET paid $12.55 per week in 1986. As of April 1985 over 80% of the children receiving voucher day care were infants, toddlers, and pre-school age.

# MASSACHUSETTS TODAY

**CHURCHES** Religion and churches have played an important role in the development of Massachusett's culture and society. Seeking religious freedom, a small band of immigrants, known as "Separatists", left England aboard the Mayflower in the fall of 1620. Establishing a settlement in Plymouth, the pilgrims formed their governmental structure and way of life around their religious beliefs. From this beginning, a rich diversity of religious followings have become prevalent in Massachusetts today. Baptists, Catholics, Methodists, Quakers, and Episcopalians are but a few of the religions represented. In Worcester there are 140 places of worship with 34 denominations. In Salem alone, services can be heard in French, Italian, Russian, Polish, and Spanish. Churches have historical significance, also. The Old North Church-Christ Church in Boston, built in 1723, is the oldest standing church still in use in the United States. It was from this church that Sexton Robert Newman hung two lanterns on April 18, 1775 to signal patriots across the river that the British were coming. King's Chapel in Boston, built in 1754, was the first Anglican Church in America. After the Revolution, it became America's first Unitarian Church. In 1980, Massachusetts had 2,945 churches with an estimated membership of 516,218 communicants, confirmed full members. There were a total of 3,709,251 religious adherents. The largest denominations are Catholic, Episcopalian, and United Church of Christ.

**HEALTH CARE** The Commonwealth expanded its Division of Family Health Services programs to place a greater priority on assisting mothers and children in 1985. The Department of Health's Maternal and Infant Care (MIC) Prenatal Projects provided medical care, social services, nutrition counseling, health care, family planning, and other preventive services to 4,000 high-risk pregnant women of low-income status in 19 high-risk areas of the state. During 1985, the number of women, infants, and children under five years of age who received supplemental nutritious food, nutrition counseling, and health care referrals under the Federal Special Supplemental Food Program for Women, Infants and Children (WIC) increased from 48,000 to 63,000. Under its Children and Youth Projects, the state screened more than 200,000 school children for postural defects, and certified more than 900 for psychotropic drug use. The High-Risk Infant Identification Program became fully operational in 1985, and more than 4,000 infants born with low birthweight, congenital anomalies, or other high-risk conditions were identified. Approximately 12,000 high-risk infants and members of their families were the recipients of community-based support, education, counseling, and referral services. A Sudden Infant Death Syndrome (SIDS) Program provided a 24-hour, on-call, medical and nursing counseling services network to some 100 families who had lost an infant from this syndrome. The program paid for the infant's autopsy, and developed training and educational programs for health professionals studying this mysterious health problem. All of the state's Neonatal Intensive Care units were allocated funds from the Division of Family Health to provide discharge planning and follow-up with community hospitals and service providers, for more than 1,500 infants and their families. A 19-member Task Force on the Prevention of Low Birthweight and Infant Mortality made a number of recommendations for the state to implement to reduce infant deaths. A Statewide Childhood Prevention Program (SCIPP) was allocated $750,0 three-year grant from the federal governments' Mater Child Health Special Projects of Regional and N Significance, to reduce injuries among childre adolescents. The Services to Handicapped Children's section served 10,000 children, from infancy to age 21, t three of the division's units: the Community Service the Clinical Services Unit, and the Early Childhood opment Services Unit. Combined with its programs to c communicable diseases, health maintenance and prev programs, dental health services, and drug and a treatment programs, state health officials sought to the Department of Health's legislative mandate, "to ma protect and improve the health and well-being of the pe Massachusetts had 20,000 registered licensed physici fiscal year 1985-86, of whom 17,500 were active. Regi dentists numbered 6,200, while registered dental hygi totaled 4,200. The Commonwealth had 154,251 total n licensees registered for the year. In 1985-86, the state lic 4,634 R.N.s and 993 L.P.N.s. The state registered 7,154 lic allied health professionals, including: 4,115 physical thera 683 physical therapist assistants, 1,645 occupational thera 451 occupational therapy assistants, 260 athletic trainer 97 licensed chiropractors. In other health-related field state's Division of Registration reported the follc licensing totals for the fiscal year: 1,116 dispensing optic 203 certified health officers, 1,979 nursing home admin tors, 1,466 optometrists, 8,000 pharmacists, 618 podiat 4,044 psychologists, and 2,051 veterinarians. The Massa setts Department of Public Health allocated a total of $ million for its various programs and operations in fiscal 1984-85. This total included $167.3 million in state funds $47 million in federal funds. Of this total, $4.4 millior in state funds, went for combined allocations to the C missioners Office, Management Services and Ger Counsel. The state's Center for Health Promotion Environmental Disease Prevention received $1.7 mill including $997,916 in state funds. The Office of Local Regional Health was allocated $790,218, of which $715 were state funds. The Commonwealth's community he services received $97.9 million, including $55 million in s funds. Of the $97.9 million, $55.5 million went for de health, $1.1 million for community health centers, $ million for treatment of alcoholism, and $10.5 for d rehabilitation. Environmental Health Services were alloca $3.5 million, including $1.6 million for lead poisor prevention, $303,596 for radiation control, $1.3 million food and drugs, and $244,721 for community sanitati Health care systems were allocated $8.1 million, including million for health statistics and research, $489,514 determination of need, $1.5 million for emergency med services, and $4.6 million for health care quality. The Ce for Laboratories and Communicable Disease Control allocated $14 million, including $5.7 million for the sta Laboratory Institute, $5.8 million for communicable venereal diseases, and $2.8 million for tuberculosis cont The state operates seven hospitals equipped with a broad ra of clinical services intended especially to meet the needs long-term disabilities. These had a total of 5,709 admissi in 1985, with patient days totaling 663,334. Cushing Hospi

a chronic disease hospital for the elderly, was allocated $12.7 million, while Lemuel Shattuck Hospital, which treats patients with chronic health problems having acute episodes, received $21.2 million. The Massachusetts Hospital School, which offers comprehensive health and educational services to the physically handicapped, was allocated $7.6 million. The state disbursed $8.3 million to Lakeville Hospital, a facility for second offender driving under the influence patients, and $7.4 million to Rutland Heights Hospital, also a DUI second offender treatment facility, which enlarged its facilities for an inpatient treatment plan for adolescent drug and alcohol patients. The Tewksbury Hospital opened a treatment center in 1985 for second offense DUI offenders and received $20.6 million. The Western Massachusetts Hospital operates inpatient and outpatient programs for adults and children, seriously and terminally ill, a palliative care unit for AIDS patients, and also, a Kamp for Kids for able and multi-handicapped children. This hospital received $6 million during the fiscal year. The department's network of mental health and mental retardation facilities and services includes: inpatient facilities, community residential and outpatient services, 24-hour emergency services, case management, family support services, and transitional housing for the homeless mentally ill. The department's budget for mental health services in fiscal year 1986 totaled $260.2 million, while $452.8 was allocated for its mental retardation programs. The state operated seven mental health hospitals with a capacity to treat about 2,000 patients. These are located at Northampton, Worcester, Danvers, Medfield, Westborough, Taunton, and Metropolitan State at Waltham. The total budget for inpatient services in fiscal year 1986 was $70.5 million. Other adult inpatient services are offered at the state's 10 community mental health centers, which had a combined inpatient census of approximately 400, and a fiscal year 1986 operating cost total of $62.8 million. The department opened seven new inpatient units in fiscal year 1986 to treat severely emotionally disturbed adolescents. A variety of other mental health services for adults and children are purchased through contracts with private providers, which include counseling programs, group homes, and day and vocational services. For the fiscal year, the department had 827 contracts for services worth $88.6 million. The department arranges services through affiliations with community agencies to operate partnership clinics, and assigns agency personnel to approximately 40 clinics and their satellite offices to create counseling, and emergency and case management services throughout the state. The department also operates the Gaebler Children's Center in Waltham, which provides inpatient services to 70 children under age 16, and the Bridgewater Treatment Center for Sexually Dangerous Persons. The first state mental hospital in the country was established in Worcester in 1833. By 1986, the state's hospital census of mentally ill patients was 2,000, with 9,000 persons treated in community day and residential programs. The department offers respite care to assist the mentally retarded in periods of crisis, and allows for relief coverage for the primary provider. Respite care is primarily directed at facilitating the placement of mentally retarded persons in the least restrictive, and most "normal," living situation consistent with their individual needs.

**SOCIAL SERVICES** Due to a resurging economy and a new employment training and placement program, the number of Massachusetts families on welfare declined to its lowest level in 12 years in 1985. In the Executive Office of Human Services are the Department of Public Welfare and the Department of Social Services (DSS). The mission of the Department of Public Welfare is to alleviate poverty through cash-assistance programs, shelters for the homeless, and job training for any recipient deemed able to work. The department also administers Medicaid and health services for the poor, the elderly, and the disabled, serving through all of its services over half a million citizens of the Commonwealth every month. Cash assistance was rendered to an average of 237,664 recipients a month, representing a monthly average of 85,356 low-income families during fiscal year 1986 through the Aid to Families with Dependent Children (AFDC) program. In fiscal year 1983, average monthly recipients totaled 262,312, from an average monthly caseload of 91,355 families, showing a significant decrease over the four-year period. Another slight decrease is predicted for 1987. Expenditures, however, have increased from $419.3 million in fiscal year 1983 to $477.3 million in fiscal year 1986 with a prediction of $529.9 million needed for 1987. For 1984 through 1986, benefit levels were increased by 16%, while a 10% cost-of-living increase has been requested for 1987. This increase is said to be more than offset by savings due to the employment training program, which is also credited for producing the largest caseload decline of any industrial state during the period, 1983 to 1986. In addition, the department has lowered the AFDC error rate (measure of administrative accuracy) from one of the nation's highest in 1983 at 11.6% to only 3% in 1985. While AFDC is a 50% federally funded state program that aids low-income families with an absent, deceased, disabled, or unemployed parent, General Relief is 100% state funded and available only to those who are ineligible for other cash-assistance programs. These people are often unable to work due to a physical or mental disability. The permanent residency requirement was removed in 1983, opening the program for the first time to the homeless. The caseload increased 28% between FY 1981 and FY 1984, then decreased from 27,931 in FY 1984 to 24,869 in FY 1986, but an increase to 25,627 is predicted for 1987. The average monthly grant in May 1986 was $249.79, an increase of $16.49 over the same month in 1985. Total expenditures of $83.2 million are predicted for FY 1987. The department's second largest cash-assistance program is Supplemental Security Income (SSI), a federally funded program to which the state has elected to add its own grants (the fourth highest state total in the nation) to the aged and disabled. The average monthly caseload has increased from 103,526 in FY 1984 to 107,512 in 1986. Expenditures of $107 million in FY 1984 were expected to increase to $114 million in 1986 and $115 million in 1987, as benefits are maintained at or above the poverty level. The federally funded Food Stamp Program administered by the department issued benefits of $183 million in FY 1984 to an average monthly caseload of 151,789. Predictions for 1987 set benefits at only $155 million for a reduced caseload of 136,425, though state expenditures have remained fairly steady for the last four years at just over $11 million. The Food Stamp error rate has been reduced from 16.6% in 1982 to 6.3% in 1985. In 1982, the Department of Public Welfare funded two

shelters for the homeless, both in the Boston area. By 1986, the department funded 51 shelters across the state, with plans to add 10 more in 1987. Previously drawing from General Relief funds, the program gained its own account in 1985, raising expenditures from over $3.5 million in FY 1984 to a predicted $12.3 million in FY 1987. The Massachusetts Office of Refugee Resettlement, part of the Welfare Department, provided cash and medical assistance totaling close to $17 million to an average monthly caseload of 2,519 in FY 1984. Predictions set 1987 expenditures at about $23.6 million to an average caseload of 2,225. The largest single item in the state's budget is Medical Assistance (Medicaid) administered by the Welfare Department. In FY 1984, Medicaid recipients totalled 442,600 from a monthly caseload of 259,900, and accounted for expenditures of over $1.077 billion. Predictions for 1987 totaled 435,800 recipients from a caseload of 261,400 and expenditures over $1.237 billion. The error rate for Medicaid has been reduced to only 1.2%. The pride of the Welfare Department is its Employment and Training Choices program which, since its inception in October, 1983, has placed more than 23,000 AFDC clients into unsubsidized, private-sector, full-time or part-time jobs provided by more than 8,000 state employers, and has saved the state taxpayers some $69 million. Total state expenditures for the entire department in FY 1985 were $1.9 billion, with predictions in the governor's budget of $2.2 billion for 1987. Concerned with providing protective care and services for children and families, the Department of Social Services reported total state expenditures of $189.1 million for FY 1985, and predicted needs of $219.7 million for 1987. Aside from providing day care for some 23,000 children from low-income or abusive families in FY 1986, the department provided about 3,500 families with respite care to ease the burden of caring for a developmentally disabled child at home. The department cooperates with the Welfare Department to serve the homeless, and funds 28 programs for battered women. Reports of child abuse or neglect to the DSS increased by 61% from FY 1981 to FY 1985, requiring the department to expand its staff. The department also handles foster care, adoption, sexual-abuse cases, and treatment of seriously troubled adolescents.

**FIRE PROTECTION** Arson and, in particular, automobile fires caused by arson, is a major concern to fire officials in Massachusetts. Twenty percent of all structure fires and 40% of all motor vehicle fires were attributed to arson in 1984. Arson by type of situation showed that 65% were motor vehicle fires. Arson caused 79 civilian and 459 firefighter injuries and 24 fatalities in 1984. Overall there were 6,857 incidents of arson (arson defined as the combination of incendiary and suspicious fires), 24% of the total number of fires reported to the 359 Massachusetts fire chiefs participating in the Massachusetts Fire Incident Reporting System (MFIRS) in 1984, down from 27% in 1983. Forty-four percent of Massachusetts' arson fires occurred in Suffolk County. Total structure fires numbered 10,586 in 1984, while total motor vehicle fires numbered 11,002, of which 8,905 were automobile fires. From 1982 through 1984, the number of motor vehicle fires has been higher than that of structure fires. Thirty-nine percent of all automobile fires were arson related. The 10,586 structure fires, 37% of total fire incidents, caused $82.1 million in property damage, 688 civilian injuries, 1,468 firefighter injuries, and 107 civilian deaths. November through March showed the heaviest volume in 1983-84. Seventy percent of all structure fires occurred in residential properties. Since 1975, the number of reported fires in Massachusetts has almost doubled while arson rose 154%. However, during the same period, fire related fatalities have remained fairly constant. There were 28,613 fires and 113 fatalities (including one firefighter ) in 1984, while the 14,811 fires in 1975 caused 99 deaths. Fire officials in the State Fire Marshal's Office attribute the lower rate of deaths per fire to better and more prevalent detecting devices and better public awareness on ways to quickly evacuate a fire area, particularly a residence. The highest incidence of fatalities falls into the age groups that are over 60 years and under 10 years of age. These groups comprised 35% of the total fire fatalities in 1984. Estimated loss due to fires in 1984 totaled $116 million. Of the 100 deaths that occurred in fixed property fires, 100 occurred in residences. The leading cause of these fires was the careless use and disposal of smoking materials, with electrical malfunctions being the second leading cause. The highest incidences of fires occur between Thursday and Saturday from 10 p.m. and 2 a.m. This is consistent with national trends. Forest and brush fires are an ongoing concern in Massachusetts. Due to low precipitation levels, the Fall of 1984, in which there were 40 consecutive days with no rain, and the Spring of 1985 were busy for the Bureau of Fire Control within the Division of Forest and Parks. All areas of the state experienced more fires, some of which were more difficult to extinguish due to their deep burning character caused by the low water table that left the forest floor devoid of moisture. The two largest fires, at Monson and at Mt. October, consuming 300 to 500 acres respectively, took several days to extinguish. In October 1984, 1,007 wild fires burned 2,351 acres. March and April of 1985 combined for 5,434 fires consuming a total of 8,781 acres. For fiscal year 1985, over 9,000 fires burned 14,666 acres costing $1,208,671. In an effort to help control rural wild fires, the Federal Rural Fire Protection Act provides additional funding to fire departments protecting communities of 10,000 and under. Prior to 1980-81, this funding was being spent toward the maintenance and/or purchase of equipment. Since 1981, the emphasis has been on training personnel through an agreement with the Massachusetts Fire Academy. The Academy provides fire training for the 198 communities in the Commonwealth with a population of under 10,000. In 1985, 79 programs in 105 communities were conducted with 1,575 students successfully completing the course. The Bureau maintains 43 active fire towers, from which observers detected 3,662 fires in fiscal 1985. Fire prevention efforts are increasing. In fiscal 1985, 617 Smokey Prevention Programs were administered, reaching every Bureau district in the state. A growing concern of the State Fire Marshal's office is the number of smoke detectors and sprinkler systems in use, as well as the maintenance of existing systems. In 98% of structure fires there was no sprinkler system, including 100% in residential fires. The Fire Marshal's office reports the chances of surviving a fire are more than double if a smoke detector is present and in working order. Fourteen deaths occurred in fires where the smoke detector was present but not operational. MFIRS data indicates there is a growing problem with people not maintaining their smoke detectors. As of August 1, 1986 there were 365 Public Fire Services in

Massachusetts. Of those departments, 61 were comprised of all career personnel, while 45 were departments consisting of 50% or more career personnel. The remaining 259 departments were either all volunteer or had less than 50% career personnel. The city of Boston has one all career fire department. Franklin County in western Massachusetts has 30 fire career personnel staffed. Worcester County has the most departments with 60. Every city and town has a forest warden, charged with the responsibility of putting out forest fires. In most cases the forest warden is also the chief of the fire department. The highest office of fire protection is the State Fire Marshal's Office in the Division of Fire Protection, within the Department of Public Safety.

**LAW ENFORCEMENT** The Commonwealth of Massachusetts, with a tradition of having one of the nations's top law enforcement networks, counts on some 16,000 dedicated men and women to protect and serve the public safety. In 1985, the state had 290 law enforcement agencies responding to the Massachusetts Department of Public Safety's Uniform Crime Report. These agencies were served by 14,442 sworn officers, including 13,852 men and 590 women. In addition to sworn officers, 1,840 civilians serve the state's various police agencies. The Massachusetts State Police was established on May 16, 1865, making it the first statewide law enforcement agency in the country. First known as the "State Constabulary," it was renamed the "State Detective Force" on February 13, 1875, then named the "District Police" in 1879. The District Police was eventually renamed the State Police, and became a major component of the state's Department of Public Safety, which was created in 1919. Today, this department is one of four divisions of the Executive Office of Public Safety, joining the Military Division, the Registry of Vehicles, and Civil Defense. The Commissioner of Public Safety, holding the rank of superintendent, has responsibility for the executive leadership of the Division of State Police. The Massachusetts State Police enforces motor vehicle laws, fish and game ordinances, and specializes in alcohol enforcements, arson investigations, accident reconstruction, and hazardous materials and motor carrier safety. During 1983, 1984 and 1985, eight law enforcement officers were killed in the line of duty in Massachusetts. Police departments from Saugus, Brockton, Barnstable, and Mansfield each recorded one officer killed, while two Springfield Police Department officers were killed. Other agencies with officers killed in the line of duty during this period were the Metropolitan Police and the Massachusetts State Police. During 1983, 1984, and 1985, assaults of officers totaled 6,529. With 2,261 assaults of officers in 1985, the state experienced a 7.7% increase from the previous year's total. City and town police department employees include 11,820 sworn officers, with 11,387 men and 433 women, and 1,565 civilians. Capitol police has 79 sworn officers, with 73 men and six women. The Massachusetts Bay Transit Authority has 127 sworn officers, with 113 men and 14 women, and five civilians. The Metropolitan Police includes 566 sworn officers, with 554 men and 12 women, and five civilians. The Massachusetts Registry of Motor Vehicles includes 279 sworn officers, with 262 men and 17 women. The Massachusetts State Police includes 1,042 sworn officers, with 986 men and 56 women, and 179 civilians. These account for a total of 2,093 sworn officers among state agencies, with 1,988 men and 105 women, and 189 civilians. The state has 21 campus police agencies, with 529 sworn officers, including 477 men and 52 women, and 86 civilians. The state's largest campus police force is at Harvard University, which has 70 sworn officers. The Metropolitan Police are responsible for more than 300 miles of parkways and highways. In addition, they patrol and enforce more than 300 recreational and historical sites. Metro Police operations include a bomb squad, a drug unit, a specially trained K-9 unit, as well as a detective unit, a motorcycle patrol, harbor patrol and horse-mounted patrol. Charged with a wide range of responsibilities within the realm of law enforcement, criminal justice and public safety, the Executive Office of Public Safety includes these major agencies: the Office of the Chief Medical Examiner, the Criminal History Systems Board, the Criminal Justice Training Council, the Department of Public Safety, and the Registry of Motor Vehicles. This office also has administrative duties for the Massachusetts Civil Defense Agency, the Military Division, the Massachusetts Committee on Criminal Justice, the Governor's Highway Safety Bureau, and the Capitol Police. Funding for these agencies was transferred from the Executive to the Public Safety in fiscal year 1986. The governor's proposed budget for fiscal year 1987 for the Executive Office of Public Safety and its various agencies was $110.9 million. This comprised 5.2% of the state's $10.2 billion fiscal year budget. The recommended fiscal year budget for 1987 included several proposals for boosting the state's agenda for law enforcement and public safety. The governor's recommended budget contained a proposed $8.3 million to relieve prison overcrowding. Another budget proposal recommended $3.7 million to increase and reorganize the Registry of Motor Vehicles' staff. Also, the governor's budget plan called for 102 additional Registry officers to improve motor vehicle law enforcement at $2.79 million, with a 24 new Registry police and 77 Registry law enforcement staff reassigned from administrative duties to accomplish the task. An increase in the State Police force with 100 new troopers was also recommended at a cost of $2.3 million, while $100,000 was earmarked for roadblocks to assist police in curtailing drunk driving. To help local law enforcement agencies, $160,000 was recommended to continue a federal match funding program, the Federal Justice Assistance Act. This program was set to provide $1.2 million in federal funds for innovative local law enforcement programs. Additionally, the governor proposed $430,000 for a new fingerprint computer, as well as $50,000 for specialized training for the Capitol Police.

**CRIME** Massachusetts had a total crime index of 254,903 offenses reported to the Massachusetts Department of Public Safety's Uniform Crime Report in 1985, which represented a 2.6% increase from the previous year and reversed a declining crime trend that had continued for three consecutive years. The state's crime index included the following offenses: 29,699 violent crimes, including 190 murders, 1,646 rapes, 10,646 robberies, and 17,217 aggravated assaults; and 225,204 property crimes, including 59,576 burglaries, 118,647 larceny-thefts, and 46,981 motor vehicle thefts. The state's crime index in 1985 showed increases for the year in total violent crime (2.6%), and total property crime (2.2%), rape (6.5%), robbery (8.1%), burglary (0.5%), larceny (4%), and motor vehicle theft (2%). Decreases were recorded in murder (-3.1%), and

aggravated assault (-1.4%). The state had 44.3 serious crimes per 1,000 residents in 1985, showing a crime rate increase of 3.5%. During five years from 1981 to 1985, Massachusetts' rate of index crimes per 100,000 was 11.3% below the national average. Over the five-year period, violent crime declined 3.4% and property crime showed a 12.2% decrease. The state recorded a 17.6% clearance rate of all index crimes in 1985, compared to the 21% national rate. Approximately one-half of all crime in Massachusetts in 1985 occurred in 10 of its largest cities. The city of Boston, with 68,073 crime index offenses, accounted for 26.7% of the total crime reported in the Commonwealth in 1985. These cities recorded the following percentages of the state's total crime index offenses during the year: Springfield (4.4%), Worcester (4.1%), Cambridge (2.7%), Brockton (2.4%), Lynn (2.4%), New Bedford (2.2%), Fall River (2.2%), Lowell (2%) and Quincy (1.6%). With an estimated population of 604,000 in 1985, Boston's crime rate was 112.7 per 100,000 persons, with the following breakdown: 11,887 violent crimes, including 87 murders, 532 forcible rapes, 6,232 robberies and 5,036 aggravated assaults; and 56,186 property crimes, including 11,470 burglaries, 26,938 larceny-thefts, and 17,778 motor vehicle thefts. The state's largest cities had the following crime index clearance rates in 1985: Boston (14.5%), Springfield (33.2%), Worcester (15.5%), Brockton (12.9%), New Bedford (18.3%), Lowell (32.6%), Quincy (24%), Newton (9%), Fall River (15.3%), and Cambridge (11.6%). The state's "Crime Clock," which is an aggregate representation of Uniform Crime Report data reflecting the annual ratio of crime to fixed time intervals, shows one crime index offense every two minutes in Massachusetts. The "Crime Clock" also indicated the following for 1985: one violent crime every 18 minutes, including one murder every 46.1 hours, one forcible rape every 5.3 hours, one robbery every 49.4 minutes, one aggravated assault every 30.5 minutes; and one property crime every two minutes, including one burglary every 8.8 minutes, one larceny-theft every 4.4 minutes, and one motor vehicle theft every 11.2 minutes. A percent distribution of index offenses in 1985 shows that larceny-theft accounted for 46.5% of the total. The remainder of index crimes as a percent of the total in 1985 were as follows: burglary (23.4%) or motor vehicle theft (18.4%), aggravated assault (6.8%), robbery (4.2%), forcible rape (0.7%), and murder (0.1%). On average, each day in Massachusetts in 1985 there were 698 crime index offenses, including 81 violent crimes and 617 property crimes. Daily averages for particular crimes were: motor vehicle thefts, 129; larceny-thefts, 325; burglaries, 163; aggravated assaults, 47; robberies, 29; forcible rapes, five; and murder, 0.5. Murder represented 0.6% of all violent crimes reported in Massachusetts in 1985. Of the state's 190 murders in 1985, 29 occurred in June, and 20 occurred in July, making these the two months in which the most murders were committed. Firearms were used in 38.4% of the murders, with handguns used in 31.6%. Knives or other cutting instruments were the weapon in 28.9%, while arson was the instrument in 4.7%. The state's clearance rate for murder was 71.1%, the highest for any crime. Comparing 1985 with 1975, the state showed a 21.5% decrease in murder. The murder rate in Massachusetts in 1985 was 3.3 per 100,000, which is far below the nation's 7.9 rate. Of all murder victims in Massachusetts in 1985, 64.7% were between the ages of 15 and 39. Among offenders, 87.9% were male and 12.1% were female; 58.9% were white and 41.1% were non-white. Among victims, 29.1% were female and 70.1% were male, while 65.4% were white and 34.6% were non-white. Of 75 murders in which males were the victim, 64 offenders were male and 11 were female. Of 32 murders in which females were the victim, 30 offenders were male and two were female. In approximately 90% of murder cases, murder victims and offenders were of the same race. The risk of being a victim of one of the seven index crimes in Massachusetts is lower than the U.S. average. One in 30,267 inhabitants was a victim of forcible rape. One in 540 inhabitants was a victim of robbery, and one in 334 was a victim of an aggravated assault. Among non-violent crimes, one in 97 inhabitants was a victim of burglary, one in 48 was a victim of larceny-theft, and one in 122 inhabitants (one for every 86 motor vehicles registered) was a victim of motor vehicle theft. The state's Uniform Crime Reporting Unit had 2,504 arson crimes reported during 1985, representing a 4.6% increase over the previous year. Total property loss reported from arson fires was $18.1 million, of which $12.4 million was structural, $5.5 million was mobile (motor vehicles, trailers, boats), and $107,039 was categorized of another type (crops, timber, fences, signs, etc.). Of all arsons reported, 12.7% were cleared by Massachusetts law enforcement agencies.Arson cases included 1,413 (56.4%) involving mobile property, 785 (31.3%) involving structures, and 306 (12.2%) involving other types of property and materials.

**ARRESTS** Adult arrests in Massachusetts in 1984 totaled 128,568 for all offenses. Of these, 28,158 were classified as Part I violent crime (murder, rape robbery, aggravated assault) and Part I property crimes (burglary, larceny, auto theft, arson). The remainder were among offenses classified as Part II crimes (drug abuse violations, forgery and counterfeiting, fraud, embezzlement, buying and receiving stolen property, vandalism, carrying and possessing weapons, prostitution and commercialized vice, sex offenses other than forcible rape, gambling, offenses against family and children, driving under the influence, liquor laws, drunkenness, disorderly conduct, vagrancy, curfew and loitering law violations, suspicion, runaways). Among violent crime arrests, 134 were for murder, 828 were for rape, 1,794 were for robbery, and 6,473 were for aggravated assault. Property crime arrests included 4,612 for burglary, 12,085 for larceny-theft, 2,055 for auto theft, and 177 for arson. The state had 13,408 adult arrests in 1984 for drug abuse violations, with 12,266 arrests for the illegal sale, manufacture, and/or possession of drugs. These included 11,202 arrests for possession and 2,164 for sale and/or manufacture of drugs. Possession arrests had the following breakdown: for opium or cocaine and their derivatives, such as heroin and codeine (3,606); marijuana (6,254); addictive, synthetic drugs, such as demerol and methodones (247); and other dangerous, non-narcotic drugs, such as barbiturates and benzedrine (995). The state had 33,426 adult arrests for driving under the influence, 1,796 for prostitution and commercialized vice, 3,176 for other assaults, 1,111 for forgery and counterfeiting, 460 for fraud, three for embezzlement, 2,234 for buying, receiving or possessing stolen property, 2,263 for vandalism, 1,144 for weapons violations, and 996 for sexual offenses, other than forcible rape and prostitution. In the state's largest city, Boston police recorded 27,629 adult arrests.

These included 2,538 for Part I violent crimes and 3,848 for Part I property crimes. Part I violent crime arrests in Boston included 59 for murder, 239 for rape, 791 for robbery, and 1,449 for aggravated assault. Part I property crime arrests included 622 for burglary, 2,379 for larceny-theft, 810 for auto theft, and 37 for arson. A grand total of 3,197 adult drug abuse violation arrests were made by Boston police during the year. These included 3,194 for possession and three for sale and/or manufacture of illegal drugs. Possession arrests included 849 for opium or cocaine and their derivatives; 1,502 for marijuana; 76 for addictive, synthetic narcotics; and 767 for other dangerous, non-narcotic drugs, such as barbituates and benzedrine. Sale and/or manufacturing arrests included three for opium or cocaine and their derivatives. Boston police recorded 1,095 adult arrests for driving under the influence, 1,024 for prostitution and commercialized vice, 657 for other assaults, 62 for forgery and counterfeiting, 21 for fraud, 474 for buying, receiving or possession of stolen property, 363 for vandalism, 226 for weapons violations, and 125 for sexual offenses other than forcible rape and prostitution. Juvenile arrests in Massachusetts in 1984 totaled 21,928 for all offenses. Of these, 1,646 were for Part I violent offenses and 7,736 were for Part I property offenses. Among Part I Juvenile violent crime arrests, 16 were for murder, 12 were for rape, 600 were for robbery, and 905 were for aggravated assault. Part I juvenile property crime arrests included 2,720 for burglary, 3,674 for larceny-theft, 1,225 for auto theft and 117 for arson. The state had 1,720 juvenile arrests in 1984 for drug abuse violations, with 1,709 arrests for the illegal sale, manufacture, and/or possession of drugs. These included 1,429 arrests for possession and 280 for the sale and/or manufacture of drugs. Possession arrests had the following breakdown: 56 for opium or cocaine and their derivatives; 203 for marijuana; 14 for addictive, synthetic narcotics; and 10 for other dangerous, non-narcotic drugs. Sale and/or manufacture juvenile arrests had the following breakdown, statewide: 163 for opium or cocaine and their derivatives; 1,181 for marijuana; 18 for addictive, synthetic narcotics; and 67 for other dangerous, non-narcotic drugs. Boston police recorded 337 juvenile drug abuse violations, all for possession. These included 240 for marijuana; 56 for opium or cocaine and their derivatives; two for addictive, synthetic narcotics; and 39 for other dangerous, non-narcotic drugs.

**COURTS** The Commonwealth of Massachusetts boasts the nation's oldest court, and currently operates with a court system revamped and unified in 1978. In 1977, the state's courts were decentralized in authority, and operated with 417 separate budget systems among nine departments. Responding to recommendations made by the Cox Commission in 1976, the courts were unified with a single budget and a consolidation of their administrative processes. The courts are now guided and directed by the Trial Court and divided among seven departments: the District Court, the Boston Municipal Court, the Housing Court, the Juvenile Court, the Land Court, the Probate and Family Court, and the Superior Court. The revised courts network calls for 279 Trial Court Justices, plus retired judges working on a recall basis. The Trial Court also has a Chief Administrative Justice and an Administrative Justice for each of its departments. The Commonwealth's courts are now financed through the statewide income tax. Established in 1692, the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court (SJC) is the oldest court in the United States, consisting of one Chief Justice and six Associate Justices. The SJC may "hold sittings" in other places, but it is located at the Suffolk County Court House in Boston. The Court has final authority of the interpretation of the State Constitution and laws enacted by the Legislature. The Appeals Court is an intermediate court created to relieve some of the SJC's caseload of final appellate decisions. This court consists of a Chief Justice and nine Associate Justices, and has the same jurisdiction as the SJC. It presently serves as the court of final resort in Massachusetts, except in cases involving constitutional questions, and other deemed to be of "major significance." The Supreme Judicial Court and the Appeals Court disposed a combined total of 1,163 appeals during the 1984-85 court year. The Justices of the Supreme Court wrote 311 opinions, including 33 rescript opinions and 278 full opinions. The Appeals Court disposed of 481 appeals and published 340 full or rescript opinions. The state's Trial Court has seven departments and 92 divisions, plus a Probate Commissioner. The District Court department is the largest, with 153 Justices and some 2,400 Clerk-Magistrates, Chief Probation Officers and support staff working in its 69 divisions. This court is known generally as the "People's Court," and handles criminal, civil and small claims matters, operating in all parts of the Commonwealth, except for the central part of the city of Boston. The District Court Department disposed of 503,130 criminal complaints in fiscal year 1985, of 689,748 total complaints entered. The department's caseload for the fiscal year had the following breakdown: total motor vehicle complaints, 442,050 (64%), including operating under the influence, 43,035 (6%), serious motor vehicle, 26,245 (4%), and other motor vehicle complaints, 372,770 (54%); non-support, 13,993 (2%); larceny and fraud, 60,221 (9%); narcotics, 29,503 (4%); negligent homicide, 352 (less than 1%); disturbing the peace, 19,546 (3%); and other complaints, 78,996 (12%). Total criminal complaints entered for the District Court increased by 38,373, or 5.9% from the previous year. The department had 235,942 new cases entered for all types of non-criminal case categories for fiscal year 1985, with the following breakdown: civil claims cases, 51,302 (22%); transfers received, 1,348 (less than 1%); small claims, 123,101 (52%); violent crime victims, 463 (less than 1%); mental commitments, 4,062 (2%); summary process cases, 1,349 (8%); civil supplementary process cases, 15,686 (7%); Uniform Reciprocal Enforcement Support Act (federal law to collect child support from violators crossing state lines), 4,902 (2%); and spousal abuse, 16,160 (7%). District Court Department dispositions of non-criminal cases totaled 183,365 for the fiscal year. Law enforcement agencies issued 790,609 citations for decriminalized motor vehicle violations, and there were 104,086 clerk-magistrate hearings to dispose of contested decriminalized motor vehicle complaints during the year. Juvenile related business before district courts in Massachusetts include three categories: juvenile delinquency, children in need of services, and care and protection cases. During the fiscal year, juvenile delinquency complaints filed totaled 30,834, with motor vehicle related delinquency complaints comprising some 24% of the total. Disposition of delinquency cases declined 9.9% from the previous year, with dispositions in this category continuing at near the 2,000

per year mark for the fourth consecutive year. Care and protection petitions totaled 993, with 575 of these disposed of by the division's courts. The District Court Division has three regional Appellate Division locations, each composed of five justices. The Boston Municipal Court Department has the same function as the Commonwealth's district courts. Its criminal caseload consists of motor vehicle, domestic relations, and other criminal complaints, while its non-criminal caseload is comprised of civil cases, small claims, and small claims supplementary process cases. During fiscal year 1985, 9,093 criminal complaints at trial were disposed of by this court. At the beginning of the fiscal year, 542 active jury requests were awaiting trial, and at the end of the fiscal year, the pending caseload was up to 679 defendants. The department received 2,799 additional requests for jury trial, compared to 2,588 the previous fiscal year. Dispositions for the fiscal year totaled 2,454 defendants, with 63% of initial jury requests disposed of at a nonjury, or bench trial. Non-criminal matters initiated during the fiscal year totaled 43,268, of which 22,815 were disposed. The Probate and Family Court Department had 118,460 original entries filed in fiscal year 1985, including all partitions, accounts, and complaints, an increase of 5,168 filings, 4.6% above the previous year. Probate-related matters accounted for 58,024 filings, 49% of the total, with increases in filings occurring in five of eight categories handled by probate and family courts. Wills accounted for 27% of the total, with 15,896 filed. Other matters filed included: administrations, 10,585; trusteeships, 877; guardianships for minors, 1,785; guardianships for the mentally ill, 2,154; guardianships for the mentally retarded, 738; conservatorships, 1,641; accounts and distributions, 20,967; partitions, 193; and real estate sales, 3,188. Equitable relief cases included 1,305 complaints filed, 196 preliminary injunctions issued, 348 temporary restraining orders issued, 21 default judgements, and 503 final judgments after hearings. Separate support and maintenance cases included 1,128 complaints filed, desertions and "living apart" cases totaled 83, and there were 204 petitions filed for custody of minors. Original entries for divorce totaled 23,720, with 20,355 divorce decrees granted. Adoption cases in fiscal year 1985 totaled 2,428, and 17 petitions were filed for elder abuse protection. For fiscal year 1985, the Commonwealth's Land Court Department had a total caseload available for action of 32,464 cases. This total included 23,263 cases awaiting action at the beginning of the fiscal year, and an additional 9,101 cases entered during the 12-month period. The department disposed of 8,716 cases and had the following breakdown among cases entered: land registration and confirmation, 217 (2%); subsequent land registration, 2,789 (31%); tax liens, 3,070 (34%); and equity and miscellaneous cases, 3,025 (33%). The Housing Court Department received 17,891 new entries during the fiscal year, in four case categories: summary process cases, 7,163 (40%), criminal cases, 6,600 (36%), civil cases, 2,094 (12%), and small claims cases, 2,034 (12%). The Juvenile Court Department, composed of four divisions, collects and reports data in five case types. In fiscal year 1985, there were 6,954 juvenile delinquency complaints, 2,110 Children in Need of Service (CHINS) filings, 538 care and protection petitions, 130 cases for contributing to the delinquency of a minor. The department disposed of 208 requests during the year. There were 97 cases actively pending at the end of the fiscal year, an increase of 56 cases from the beginning of the fiscal year. Among the 97 active requests pending, 43.3% had been pending for less than 60 days. The Superior Court Department conducts sessions for civil and criminal cases and cases in equity, on a circuit basis in 21 locations throughout the state. The department began fiscal year 1985 with 4,248 cases pending, and ended the year with 4,037. The Superior Court disposed of 5,490 cases during the year. The department's Appellate Division, which reviews state prison sentences from the several criminal sessions of the Superior Court, began the fiscal year with 429 sentences pending review. During the fiscal year, there were 1,100 sentence reviews entered and 965 sentence reviews heard. At the fiscal year's end, 579 sentence reviews were pending. There were 78,413 civil actions pending before the department at the beginning of the fiscal year. At the end of the fiscal year, the pending civil caseload was 75,905, a decrease of 2,508 cases. The Office of the Commissioner of Probation maintains the state's central file of criminal records and performs supervisory tasks for the Trial Court's probation departments. The office's data base had 31,733 full and complete active criminal records on-line at the end of 1985, with partial information on 203,785 active offender records, and another 353,284 inactive offender records cross-referenced.

**JAILS AND PRISONS** The Department of Corrections (DOC) within the Executive Office of Human Services operates 21 state facilities that provide custodial care, health and mental-health services, educational services, vocational training and counseling to individuals committed by the courts to the DOC. Where possible, the system is structured to process the individual through a succession of security levels, rehabilitating and reintegrating the individual into society. The 21 Massachusetts Correctional Institutions (MCI) consist of one maximum facility, five medium facilities, four minimum facilities, two minimum pre-release facilities, two prison camps, four pre-release centers, and three specialized facilities, one of which is a maximum-security hospital. In addition, the Contract Pre-Release Program utilizes the services of four private agencies representing a total of eight centers. As of January 1, 1986, the entire system housed 5,390 individuals with 715 under maximum security, 3,063 under medium security and 1,612 under minimum security or in a pre-release center. One month prior, on December 1, 1985, the DOC housed 5,404 inmates in facilities with a rated capacity of 3,257, representing a 166% occupancy rate. The occupancy rate was 90% in 1975. The number of commitments during the year rose 9% from 2,202 in 1984 to 2,409 in 1985, the largest number of inmates ever committed in one year to DOC. Since 1981, total commitments have increased 26%, while commitments to MCI Concord (the medium-security entry facility for males) decreased 10% and commitments to MCI Cedar Junction (the maximum-security facility for males) increased 48%. Female commitments to MCI Framingham (the medium-security entry facility for females) increased 49%. These statistics indicate an increase in overall crime as well as an increase in violent crime. The most common offense during 1985 was armed robbery but the largest increases were in drug offenses and sex offenses. The median age of individuals committed during 1985 was 26.8 years, with 48% of the commitment population from

the Boston SMSA. The median educational level was eleventh grade. Of the population incarcerated on January 1, 1986, a total of 43% had completed a high school education, 63% were single, 63% were white, 31% black, and 10% Hispanic, with the total being 94% male and 6% female. Of all commitments made during 1985, 56% were facing their first adult incarceration with the median age of those making a first court appearance only 17. From the first day of 1985 to the first day of 1986, the number of inmates serving life sentences increased by 40. At the beginning of 1985, the DOC employed a staff of about 3,000 and served an inmate population a little over 4,900. The DOC report published in July, 1986 indicated the inmate population had grown to over 6,700 with a rated capacity of 4,238. Appropriations for fiscal year 1985 totaled $112,288,000 and rose to $132,078,000 in 1986. The budget recommendation for 1987 totaled $146.8 million with $6.9 million earmarked for facility expansion and $2.1 million for staff expansion. Of the 14 counties in the state, all but Nantucket have at least one county facility administered by a county sheriff. Usually the jail is used for pre-trial detainees while the house of correction is for sentenced inmates though both may be in one facility. On December 1, 1985, the total county inmate population was 3,856 in facilities rated at a capacity of about 2,500 beds, representing an occupancy rate of 154%. The average population during 1985 totaled 3,770 with an average of 2,578 inmates in houses of correction, 1,001 inmates in jails, 10 inmates awaiting booking into a DOC facility, 88 DOC inmates (the DOC rents beds from the counties as one remedy for the overcrowding problem), and 93 Federal inmates. The Middlesex County facilities had the highest average daily population at 640 (though Suffolk County's two separate facilities totaled 721) while Dukes County had the lowest at 12. Operating expenditures for county facilities totaled $45,084,117. During 1985, commitments to all county facilities reached 9,511, a 1% increase over 1984 and a 1% decrease from the 9,617 inmates committed in 1983. Of the 1985 commitments, 87% were for non-violent offenses. County sentences range from fines, with 11% of those committed in 1985 serving in lieu of payment, up to sentences of two and one half years. In 1985, the median sentence length was two months. In 1985, there were 16 standard county facilities and three alternative centers. The state's juvenile correction agency is the Department of Youth Services within the Executive Office of Human Services. Unlike the situation in most states, this agency is responsible both for holding youth in pre-trial detention and for committing youth sentenced by the courts. The average daily population of committed youths totaled over 1,800 in 1986 with over 350 awaiting court action. The department provides secure detention, secure treatment, shelter care, group care, foster care, diagnostic testing, family counseling, vocational training and casework supervision. The number of juvenile commitments in 1985 rose an unprecedented 16% from 756 to 879, though partly due to fluctuating commitment practices. Between 1982 and 1985, white offenders declined 7% while black juvenile offenders increased 21.5% and Hispanics 27%. The youths committed for offenses against the person increased 32%. Burglary continues to be the most common offense though commitments for armed, unarmed and sexual assault are on the increase. The Federal Bureau of Prisons has no facilities in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

**ATTORNEYS** The Supreme Judicial Court is the state entity authorized to determine who may practice law in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts. Each year, the Supreme Court Justices appoint one of a five-member Board of Bar Examiners for a five-year term. It is the responsibility of this board to administer oral and written law examinations at least twice a year. Applicants must show proof of passing the Multistate professional Responsibility Examination within two years of passing the law examination and must provide information regarding their moral character, acquirements and qualifications. Those who qualify for admission are then recommended by the board to the Court. As of February 1987, the Massachusetts Bar Association estimated its membership at 17,500 out of approximately 32,000 practicing lawyers in the Commonwealth. Suffolk and Middlesex Counties have the highest numbers of bar association members in the state, with 6,095 and 3,211 respectively. There are some 60 bar associations in the state. Matters of conduct and discipline are handled by the Board of Bar Overseers which is also appointed by the Justices of the Supreme Judicial Court. The board then appoints a chief Bar Counsel and assistants and administers discipline according to the Canons of Ethics, the Disciplinary Rules Regulating the Practice of Law and the Disciplinary Rules Applicable to Practice as a Prosecutor or as a Defense Lawyer, all of which are included in the Supreme Judicial Court Rules. There are six disciplinary district. The Rules also provide for the periodic registration of all attorneys able to practice law in the Commonwealth. For the fiscal year ending June 30, 1984, the Department of the Attorney General reported appropriations of $12,962,291, expenditures of $11,042,915 and total income of $2,683,581. The Office of the Attorney General is charged with representing the Commonwealth in all legal proceedings in state or federal courts. The Attorney General is directly elected for a four-year term. Within the Attorney General's office is the Civil Bureau, the Criminal Bureau, the Medicaid Fraud Control Unit, the Executive Bureau, the Public Protection Bureau, the Western Massachusetts Division and the Government Bureau. Money recovered for the Commonwealth treasury totaled $4,538,336 in fiscal year 1984 while money recovered and saved for Commonwealth citizens came to $208,399,790. Also elected for four-year terms are the state's eleven District Attorneys, one for each of the eleven regional districts. A Massachusetts District Attorney prosecutes on behalf of the Commonwealth at all levels in all criminal and civil matters. The number of legal service establishments with payroll in Massachusetts in 1984 totaled 3,460 as opposed to 3,232 in 1982. The number of employees reported by these establishments totaled 18,516 in 1984 and 14,795 in 1982. The annual payroll of $294,332,000 in 1982 increased to $438,571,000 in 1984. Receipts reported in 1982 equalled $885,443,000, an increase of 88.1% over 1977.

**INSURANCE** The Division of Insurance is under the Department of Banking and Insurance within the Executive Office of Consumer Affairs and Business Regulations, and is the body that regulates all aspects of the insurance industry in the Commonwealth. This includes the licensing of agents and brokers and the monitoring of both foreign and domestic insurance companies. Complaints concerning all aspects of insurance are the responsibility of this office. The Division is made up of Administration, the Consumer Service Section,

the Financial Surveillance Section, the Legal Section, the Licensing and Field Audit Section, the State Rating Bureau, and the Policy Forms Section. As of December 31, 1982, there were 879 insurance companies and 16 health maintenance organizations authorized to do business in the Commonwealth. The number broke down into various categories as follows: Domestic Life, 17; Domestic Property and Casualty, 47; Domestic Title, 2; Foreign Life, 325; Foreign Property and Casualty, 376; Foreign Title, 12; "b" Reinsurers, 60; and Surplus Lines, 40. The Financial Surveillance Section estimated that on September 1, 1986 there were between 1,000 and 1,100 authorized insurance companies in the state. During 1982 the Legal Section, which includes the Special Investigation staff, acted as prosecutor in 35 administrative actions against companies, agents, brokers, and motor vehicle damage appraisers. These actions sought the suspension of licenses and the levying of fines. The Legal Section referred eight criminal and civil cases to county, state, and federal law enforcement agencies and helped in their preparation. In 1982, a lengthy investigation into alleged deception and misrepresentation in the sale of certain policies by a large foreign insurer (one that is not based in the state) resulted in the largest settlement agreement ever negotiated between the Division and an insurer. Along with the $50,000 the insurer paid the Division for the cost of the investigation, refunds to policy holders filing complaints approached $1 million. The Consumer Service Section is designed to educate the citizens of the Commonwealth as to their rights, help them understand policy language, and provide a forum for dissatisfied customers, even to the point of making restitution when warranted. This section has two offices, one in Springfield and one in Boston, and in 1982 had contacts with members of the public on 74,562 occasions. As a result, Bay State policy holders received restitution totaling $1,679,363: $11,144 in premium refunds; $905,218 in additional recovery; and $763,000 in expedited claim payments. Over 50% of the complaints involved disputes over claim amounts, denials made by the company, or delays. A total of 23,642 new applications for agents and brokers licenses were processed and issued in 1982. In that same year, 85,539 agents' licenses were renewed, 16,125 agent's licenses were cancelled, and a total of 216 new Fraternal Agents licenses were issued. Of the total of 9,676 tests taken by 7,023 potential agents and brokers in 1982, passing marks were shown on 62.3%, with the highest passing percentage in the life insurance area, 74%. The lowest, 60.5%, was in casualty insurance. As of December 31, 1982, there were 40 fraternal benefit societies, operating under the Lodge System, licensed to do business in Massachusetts. Of these, three were Domestic Fraternals and 37 were Foreign Fraternals. By September, 1986 the number of Foreign Fraternals had dropped to 35. Premiums received for major lines of life insurance in 1982 totaled $1,487,039,000 throughout the state. This reflects payments on 20,605,261 new policies and 109,337,635 policies in force. Within the major groups, ordinary life insurance collected the most, bringing in $790,405,000 on 13,034,428 new policies and 51,597,536 policies in force. The second highest amount came in group life policies in which $229,103,000 were collected on 6,667,006 new policies and 54,546,092 policies in force. The highest property and casualty totals occurred in the area of private passenger auto liability, where $667,952,000 were paid in premiums and $388,479,000 in losses were paid by the companies. The highest non-auto property and casualty totals were in workers compensation where $510,160,000 were paid in premiums while insurance companies paid losses of $338,565,000. Overall, more than $3 billion were paid in property and casualty premiums in 1982.

**UTILITIES** Massachusetts ranked 23rd in 1983 in total energy consumption among the fifty states and the District of Columbia. However, individual Bay Staters proved to be quite frugal in their application of this energy, as their per capita use was 47th with 208 million Btus (British thermal units) per person per year. Residential and transportational uses were the highest, taking 346 trillion (the country's 15th highest total, yet 39th on a per capita basis) and 367 trillion (the country's 18th highest total, 44th on a per capita basis) Btus respectively. The third highest usage was for commercial purposes, totaling 261 trillion BTUs and ranking 12th nationally, 25th on a per capita basis. Massachusetts' total of 224 trillion Btus for industrial use ranked it 32nd overall and 51st on a per capita basis. For residential use, heating is much more of a consideration to Bay Staters than cooling, particularly in the central and western uplands. Degree-days are standardized, relative measurements of outdoor air temperature showing the amount of deviation above (cooling) and below (heating) 65 degrees Fahrenheit. One degree-day is counted for each degree the mean temperature varies from the 65°F base temperature. In a 29-year period from 1951 to 1980, Massachusetts had 6,322 normal heating degree-days per year, ranking it 16th in the nation in need of heat in the winter. The upland regions may have as many as 7,451 heating degree-days in a year. The highest ranking state has 9,481 heating degree-days and the lowest has 720. Massachusetts has a moderate 451 normal cooling degree-days, ranking it 38th in the nation in need of cooling in the summer. The Chatham weather station, located on the outer southeastern edge of Cape Cod reported the state's lowest count at 254. The island of Nantucket had a comfortable 286 cooling degree-days. Obviously air conditioning is not a major priority in the Bay State, shown by the fact that of the 2.1 million year around occupied housing units within the state in 1980, 1.35 million had no air conditioning whatsoever. All but 2,388 had some sort of heating unit. The highest ranking state in cooling degree-days had 3,348 while the lowest had 175. The U.S. average is 4,694 heating and 1,173 cooling degree-days. In a breakdown of consumption by energy source in comparison to the rest of the nation, Massachusetts ranks highest in its use of petroleum, being the tenth heaviest user. In terms of hydro-electric power, the Bay State's 3 trillion BTU usage in 1983 was 42nd in the country, though this may increase in the future since many of the state's utility companies have recently contracted with Hydro-Quebec of Montreal, Canada to purchase up to 10% of New England's electric energy need beginning in 1990. This power source is being generated from the immense hydro-electric project in James Bay, Quebec. Massachusetts ranked 19th nationwide in resourcing nuclear power for its energy needs. Depending upon developments at the near completed Seabrook Nuclear Power Plant in southern New Hampshire, the state's usage of nuclear power may change significantly. Massachusetts was the 36th highest user of coal. With no operating coal mines or oil or natural

gas wells, the state must import the great majority of its power resources. In 1983 the state had 65 operable electrical generating plants, the 14th highest total in the country, generating the 25th highest amount of electricity. Because these plants are generated by out of state resources, utility companies are working hard to diversify their output so as not to be left vulnerable in the event of a major shortage of a given supply. The move is basically away from petroleum, a source which in 1973 constituted 81% of the state's electricity supply. As recently as 1978 it was 83% of the total. In 1983 this percentage had dropped to 48, indicating significant success in their diversification efforts. Many of the state's oil generated electric plants have been converted to coal fired plants. While in 1978 less than .5% of the state's electricity came from coal, by 1983, 25% was coming from coal generated plants. From 1978 to 1983 the use of natural gas to generate electricity had grown from less than .5% to 7%, while nuclear power grew from 16% to 19%. Hydropower was still one percent in 1983, indicating the impact the Canadian power will have on these ratios. The cost of energy is relatively high in Massachusetts compared to the rest of the country. Natural gas rates in 1983 were the fifth highest nationwide, while electricity was also in the top ten at number eight. The state body in charge of regulating electric, gas, telephone, and water utilities is the Department of Public Utilities. Included among its responsibilities are an analysis of company rate requests, which result in decisions concerning allowed revenue, cost allocation, and rate structures; ongoing analysis and review of fuel adjustment charges; review and approval of longterm gas and electric power supply contracts; review and approval of securities issuances (i.e. stock offerings and bond placements) of the regulated companies; and regulation of billing and termination procedures for electric, gas, telephone, and water companies. All but 55 cities and towns are served by six retail electric utility companies in the state. Forty-nine of these 55 communities are served by their own municipal electric departments. In 1984, 34 of these communities were members of the Massachusetts Wholesale Electric Company, a public sector planning and supply agency. In addition to forecasting demand and helping its member communities in planning, this company generates its own power as well as purchases joint ownership shares in power plants built by other utility companies. The electric company serving the largest area of the state is the Massachusetts Electric Company (MEC), providing electricity to 829,000 customers in 146 cities and towns in 1985. MEC is a subsidiary of the New England Electric System. Western Massachusetts Electric Company (WMEC) serves much of the western uplands and the Connecticut Valley, and is a subsidiary of Northeast Utilities. It provides power to approximately 176,000 customers in 63 cities and towns. Boston Edison, which was organized in 1886, has over 600,000 customers in over 40 cities and towns encompassing the city of Boston. The other two companies which provide a substantial area of the state with electricity are Commonwealth Electric Company and Eastern Edison Company, both of which operate in the southeast part of Massachusetts. The state is served by six wholesale electric companies who sell much of the power used by the retail companies. Massachusetts currently has two nuclear power plants within its borders. Boston Edison owns the Pilgrim Nuclear Power Station in Plymouth, which in 1985 operated at a very high 84% of its capacity. This had a strong affect on the company. 1984 saw the plant on outage status for virtually the entire year for refueling and maintenance. The state's other nuclear plant is located in Rowe. It is the Yankee Atomic Electric Plant, owned by the Yankee Atomic Electric Company, and is the oldest operating nuclear plant in the country, first going on line in 1960. Not located within the state though strongly influencing Massachusetts utility companies is the Seabrook 1 Nuclear Power Plant in Seabrook, New Hampshire, within ten miles of the Massachusetts-New Hampshire border. The Seabrook plant was originally scheduled to go on line in October of 1986, and was reportedly 95% complete on December 31, 1985. However, in the wake of the May, 1986, Soviet nuclear disaster at Chernobyl, near Kiev, many questions concerning emergency response, and more specifically, evacuation of nearby communities, had yet to be satisfactorily addressed for Massachusetts citizens and most notably Governor Michael Dukakis. A major concern is the north shore communities of the Bay State where many of the roads are not suitable for heavy traffic. The latest estimates (as of September, 1986) are that it will optimistically be at least the fall of 1987 before the plant becomes operable. Three Massachusetts investor-owned companies are among the 16 participating investors in Seabrook 1 (all plans for the proposed Seabrook 2 have been halted). If the plant fails to go on line, the affects due to loss of investment capital and the absence of an expected power source could be long-term for Bay State electric consumers. Of the state's 351 cities and towns, just over 115 do not have access to natural gas utility service. The rest of the state is serviced by 14 gas companies, the largest of which is the Boston Gas Company serving close to 70 cities and towns and over 450,000 customers. The second largest company, Commonwealth Gas Company, serves 191,873, of which Worcester is the largest community, just 2,000 more than the third largest, the Bay State Gas Company, which has Springfield as the largest city in its area. In 1983 there were a total of 1,019,000 residential gas customers in the state and 75,000 commercial gas customers. The residential price of $8.01 per million Btus of natural gas was the fifth highest in the country. Of 1.9 million occupied housing units in 1980, 797,422 used utility gas to heat their water, while 678,976 used kerosine or fuel oil, and 375,333 used electricity. Over 980,000 use electricity to cook and over 827,000 used utility gas. Following national trends, Massachusetts is using significantly less energy today than in the early 1970s. The total Btu consumption for the state in 1973 was 1,611 trillion. This had decreased to 1,220 trillion in 1982, and as of 1983 stood at 1,138 trillion Btus. The drop registered in the ten year period of 1973 through 1982 was 24.52%, the second highest in the country. Per capita usage dropped from 279 million Btus per year to 211 Btus in the same period. Bay Staters use a variety of methods to heat their homes. Of the 2.141 million housing units surveyed in 1980, 1,169,570 used steam or hot water, 529,912 used central warm air furnaces, 30,635 used an electric heat pump, 160,411 used other built in electric units, 127,075 used room heaters with flue, and 63,766 heated their homes with fireplaces, stoves, or portable room heaters. The public water supply system in Massachusetts consists of 217 municipal water departments, 78 fire and water districts, and 68 private water companies. These systems are located in 290

of the Commonwealth's 351 cities and towns. The citizens in the remaining towns rely almost totally on individual private wells for their water supply. Bay Staters consumed 90 million gallons of fresh water per day in 1980.

## RECREATION

Variety and abundance are the keys to describing outdoor recreation in Massachusetts. The extensive coastline and island communities provide easy access for sailing and fishing enthusiasts, along with an abundance of beaches for swimmers and surfers. Winter activities are popular throughout the state, especially as one moves west and begins to ascend the Berkshire Hills. Though it is not entirely surprising that the Bay State offers this seasonal variety, given that it does have seashore and mountains within its borders, the quantity will raise eyebrows among the uninitiated. While Massachusetts ranks 42nd among the 50 states in land area, it has the sixth largest state park system with 144 forests and parks encompassing more than 264,000 acres. Over 5.7 million visitors took advantage of Massachusetts' state parks in fiscal year 1985, with 635,821 using the camping facilities offered therein. The busiest park in 1985 was Wompatuck State Park in Hingham, whose 2,877 acres were visited by 367,573 people. Walden Pond State Reservation was used by 351,010 in 1985, the second highest number at a state facility. The largest state park is October Mountain State Forest in western Massachusetts, covering 15,710 acres. Though the largest park, October Mountain was visited by a relatively few 38,477 in 1985. Myles Standish State Forest in southeastern Massachusetts is the second largest facility (14,635 acres), and also the second most camped at park in the state, with 100,854 campers in 1985. Twenty-six state facilities, offering interpretive programs which provide guided hikes, slide shows, occasional folk music performances and edible plant demonstrations, drew 50,935 participants to 2,264 programs. Winter activities are plentiful at state facilities: 31 parks offer cross-country skiing and two parks offer downhill facilities. Swimming is available at 46 forests and parks and canoeing at 28. Fall sportsmen can hunt in 83 state forests and parks. With 4,320 miles of rivers and more than 1,300 lakes and ponds, outdoor activities are never far away. Of course, not all citizens are necessarily sports or outdoor enthusiasts, and not all have access to the hinterlands of Massachusetts. In 1979, the Heritage Park Program was initiated to expand recreational opportunities to urban residents, and to provide higher levels of assistance to cities and towns in managing their urban natural, historical and recreational park resources. The parks include natural resource and architectural improvements, as well as visitor centers to house multi-media exhibits which reflect each park's interpretive theme. The parks are also intended to help spark economic revitalization in the areas in which they are located. The first park to be completed was the Lowell Heritage State Park, a celebration of water power which helped provide the stimulus for the early textile industry that was centered there. More than five miles of canals can be toured on foot or by barge, taking visitors through historic settings. Each park has its own theme, benefitting the local atmosphere. As early as 1987, eight Heritage State Parks were in place, with three more under development. The finished parks are in Lynn, Lawrence, Lowell, Gardner, North Adams, Holyoke, Springfield and Fall River, a dispersion that has them spread throughout the state.

The Metropolitan District Commission (MDC) is an organization unique to Massachusetts. It is a state commission that serves mostly local functions. It was founded in 1889, with a Parks Division founded in 1892. Today, MetroParks preserves, maintains and interprets more than 14,700 acres in ten reservations around Greater Boston, as well as additional sites which include parkways, rivers, streams, beaches and playgrounds. These sites offer a place of escape from the city, while actually being within the city. This is evident in MetroParks' maintenance of 400 miles of foot trails and bridle paths in their major reservations. MetroParks operates 17 ocean beaches from Nahant to Nantasket, three fresh water lakes, three sailing programs, 19 swimming pools, 24 skating rinks, two ski areas, two historic forts, two museums, three zoos and two overnight campsites. The National Park Service, a Division of the U.S. Department of Interior, operates ten historic parks or historic sites in the Commonwealth. Many of these, such as the Minute Man National Historic Park, which was the scene of the fighting that opened the American Revolution, are connected with figures or events that are strongly imprinted in American history. The Cape Cod National Seashore, located on the outer arm of Barnstable County, is by far the largest area in the Bay State maintained by the National Park Service, having a federal acreage of 27,319, and a total acreage of 43,526. The Seashore offers a unique blend of ocean beaches, dunes, woodlands, freshwater ponds and marshes. The Appalachian National Scenic Trail winds its way through the entire north-south length of the state. It enters the state at the northwest corner and serpentines its way south, never leaving Berkshire County until it enters Connecticut. The Trail is one of two original units of the National Trail System. The National Forest Service owns no land in Massachusetts.

**SPORTS** Massachusetts, and the Boston area in particular, is a major center for professional and amateur athletics, fielding professional teams in all major league sports, hosting events of worldwide notoriety, and participating at the upper levels of college competition. Just as significant as its current standing is the role the Bay State has played in the development, and even the invention, of "games" which have developed into billion dollar industries commanding international attention among sports enthusiasts. As well, Massachusetts teams and individuals have gained national prominence, and in effect, helped "set the standards" by which the games are now played. From having a team compete in the first World Series, to holding the oldest marathon event in the nation, to having developed one of the great dynasties in professional sports, the Bay State has invariably found itself, aptly, in the hub. **BASEBALL** Massachusetts and the city of Boston are inextricably connected with the past and present of professional baseball, "America's Pastime." Though interpretations vary, it is generally believed that the first legitimate professional baseball league was formed on March 17, 1871, in New York City. It was called the National Association of Baseball Players. Among its charter members was the Boston Red Stockings. The league disbanded, and on February 2, 1876, the current National League was formed, its rosters dotted with players from the Red Stockings. Again, a Boston team, the Braves, was a charter member of the league. The Boston Braves would play in Bean Town for 76 years

before moving the franchise to Milwaukee. Worcester also fielded a National League team from 1880 to 1882. The National League enjoyed a virtual monopoly until the formation of the American League in 1901. Boston's only current major league team, the Red Sox, were a charter member of the American League, though until 1907 the team was known as the Pilgrims. In 1903, more out of public pressure than any real desire to do so, the National League agreed to have its champion play the American League champion in what was the first World Series. With 28-game winner Cy Young, the pitcher who in his career won more games than any other in history (512), the Red Sox not only won the American League Pennant that year, but surprised the sporting world by knocking off the powerful Pittsburgh Pirates in the first World Series, five games to three. Through 1986, the Red Sox had competed in nine World Series, winning five. The Boston Braves competed in two World Series, winning one. Some of the games great players have been closely associated with Boston. Baseball's most legendary hero, Babe Ruth, began his major league career as a pitcher with the Red Sox. He was sold to the New York Yankees in 1920 for $125,000. Ruth would return to Boston in 1935, the final year of his career, and play for the Braves. The Red Sox star of the 1940s and 1950s was Ted Williams, who was twice named the American League's Most Valuable Players. Williams was the last player in the Major League to bat over .400. Boston's most celebrated player since Williams was Carl Yastrzemski, who retired in 1983. Through 1986, Red Sox players had been named American League MVP nine times. Fourteen baseball greats who played all or a significant part of their careers with the Red Sox are enshrined in the Baseball Hall of Fame. Two long time Red Sox executives and ten managers, who at one time managed the Red Sox, are also enshrined there. The Red Sox have played their games in historic Fenway Park since its construction in 1912. Fenway Park was named for the Fenway section of Boston, in which it is located. It was rebuilt in the winter of 1933-34. In 1947, the left field wall was painted, covering several advertisements, and has since become known by the infamous title of the "green monster." Fenway Park seats 33,583. **FOOTBALL** The New England Patriots of the National Football League are currently the Bay State's only professional football franchise. Over the years, several teams have come and gone out of Boston, including the Boston Yanks, (1944-48) who moved to New York, then eventually became the Baltimore Colts and finally the Indianapolis Colts, as well as the Boston Redskins (1932-37) who moved from Boston to Washington where they remain today. The Patriots were founded as the Boston Patriots in November 1959 and were charter members of the American Football League (AFL). They played their first season in 1960. The team became part of the National Football League (NFL) when the AFL and NFL merged in May 1969. The Patriots officially moved their headquarters to Foxboro, Massachusetts in April 1970 and changed their name to the New England Patriots the following year. Through 1986, the Patriots have been in post-season play in six different seasons. The first was following the 1963 season when they were defeated in the AFL championship game. In 1986 (following the 1985 season) New England played in its first Super Bowl, losing 46-10 to the Chicago Bears. The Patriots play their home games at Sullivan Stadium in Foxboro, which seats 61,000. Sullivan Stadium is named for William H. Sullivan, the founder and longtim owner of the club. Sullivan family members occupy severa management positions with the team. College football i Massachusetts dates to the 1870s, when Harvard Universit was integral in developing the modern game. In the 1980s Boston College enjoyed considerable success on a nationa level. Behind quarterback Doug Flutie, who in 1984 won th Heismann Trophy as the best college player in the countr (the only Massachusetts college player ever to win the award) the Eagles went to three successive post-season bowl games **BASKETBALL** The game of basketball was invented by Dr James A. Naismith in December, 1891, in Springfield, Mass achusetts. Basketball is often referred to as the only majo sport originated and developed in the United States. Ironically the focal point of the game on a professional level has beer and still is centered in the Bay State. The Boston Celtics ar the most successful franchise in the National Basketbal Association's (NBA) 40 year history, winning the NBA titl 16 times, including the 1985-86 championship. From 1957 t 1969, the Celtics garnered 11 NBA crowns, including eigh in a row, and established one of sport's most dominating dynasties. The star of the team during this period was thei center, Bill Russell, who was the league's MVP five times, and is generally considered to be the game's all-time greates defensive player. Still, Russell was far from being a one mar team. In his years with the Celtics he played along side Bob Cousey, Sam Jones, Bill Sharmen, and John Havlicek, al members of the Naismith Memorial Basketball Hall of Fame In all, 13 former Celtic players or coaches have been inducted into the Hall of Fame. Among those is Red Auerbach, who coached the team from 1950 through 1966, and is currently the team president. He is the man most associated with the image and success of the Celtic organization. That the Celtics are once again on top in the NBA is due in large part to the presence of forward Larry Bird, who has been voted the league's MVP three consecutive years and has won many polls rating him as the game's best player today. The Celtics play their home games in historic Boston Garden, which seats 14,890 and features a distinctive parquet floor. Two other professional teams are based in Massachusetts, the Bay State Bombadiers out of Worcester, who play in the Continental Basketball Association, and the Springfield Fame of the United State Basketball League. In the 1985-86 season, the Fame gained national attention by signing Nancy Lieberman, the only woman professional player not in a women's league. College basketball is a major attraction in Massachusetts. The 1980s saw the development of the Boston College program as one of the country's best. One of basketball's all-time great players, Julius Erving (Dr. J), played his college basketball at the University of Massachusetts, where he still holds several records. The Naismith Memorial basketball Hall of Fame is located in Springfield, where, in 1985, a new facility was opened. Housed there are memorabilia and artifacts showing the development of the game and great moments in its history. As of 1985, there had been 141 coaches, players, referees, and contributors inducted into the Hall, along with four historic teams. **HOCKEY** Hockey is a game of wide popularity in Massachusetts at both the professional and amateur levels. The Boston College hockey program is one of the country's most successful, and the Boston Bruins of the professional National Hockey League (NHL) have a long tradition. The

Bay State is also partly responsible for the origin of the sport's nationwide popularity. The NHL was formed in 1917, growing out of the former National Hockey Association. At the time, all the franchises were located in Canada. The Boston Bruins became the first American franchise of the NHL in 1924, thus making it the oldest American franchise as well. The Bruins have won five Stanley Cups (NHL Championships) in their long history, the last being in the 1971-72 season. Many hockey greats have played for the Bruins, including Eddie Shore in the 1930s (4-time NHL MVP), Bobby Orr in the 1960s and 1970s (3-time NHL MVP), and Phil Esposito, also in the 1960s and 1970s (2-time NHL MVP). Boston players have been named the league's MVP on 12 occasions. Through 1985, 27 individuals who were Bruin players or administrators had been inducted into the Hockey Hall of Fame. The Bruins play their matches in the Boston Garden, which seats 14,451. Professional hockey is also played in Springfield, where the Indians are a member of the minor league American Hockey League. The team has been in existence for over 50 years, and is currently an affiliate of the Minnesota North Stars of the NHL. Collegiate hockey is played at both university and college levels in the Bay State. Massachusetts has four collegiate teams in the powerful Hockey East Conference: Boston College, Boston University, Northeastern, and Lowell. In February 1987, Boston College coach Len Ceglarski became the winningest hockey coach in NCAA history. The only coach to win 250 games at two different institutions, Ceglarski broke the record when he recorded his 556th career win. He has coached at Boston College since the 1972-73 season. Boston College won the Hockey East Championship in both 1984-85 and 1985-86. **BOSTON MARATHON** The Boston Marathon, probably the world's most recognized single running event, was first run in 1897 and was won by a New Yorker named J.J. McDermott in two hours, 55 minutes, and ten seconds. An indication of the change in status marathon running has achieved over the year, McDermott, at one point, became tangled up in a funeral procession, forcing him to walk a part of the race. Fortunately, he was comfortably ahead. That first year there were 15 runners taking part in what was only the second marathon ever run in the United States. By 1985 there were 5,595 official entrants. The Boston Marathon is the world's oldest annual marathon. Since its inception, the race has been sponsored by the Boston Athletic Association. The first woman to run in the Boston Marathon did so as an official entrant in 1967, though it wasn't until 1972 that the Boston Athletic Association received permission from the Amateur Athletic Union to accept women as competitors. The women's record of 2:22:42, set in 1983 by Olympic gold medalist Joan Benoit, would have won the men's division in 54 different years. The men's record through 1985 was 2:08:51, set in 1982 by Alberto Salazar of Wayland, Massachusetts. The first 89 Boston Marathons were strictly amateur events, but with the rise of large cash prizes in competing events, the Marathon, in 1986, offered prize money for the first time. The most inspirational runner through the years has been two-time winner Johnny Kelley, who first ran in 1928. Kelly won the Marathon in 1935 and 1945, but his significant achievement is that through 1987 he has missed only one, in 1968, since he first entered. The course for the Boston Marathon—with its infamous Heartbreak Hill in Newton—is know as one of the toughest marathon layouts in the world.

**HUNTING AND FISHING** Though relatively small in size, the diverse landscape and wildlife of Massachusetts offer outdoor sportsmen a variety of activities ranging from trout fishing to bear hunting. With most of the state's population living in the eastern quarter, the central and western uplands, as well as much of the Connecticut Valley, provide true wilderness and a natural habitat for the many types (up to 75) of birds, mammals, reptiles, and amphibians traditionally hunted. The Division of Fisheries and Wildlife manages all hunting, trapping, and fishing activities in the state. Seeking to insure quality game hunting, the division also manages several hatcheries and fisheries, as well as over 50 Wildlife Management Areas (WMAs). The WMAs were established to offset lands lost to hunting due to posting, development, and the construction of new highways. Deer, black bear, coyote, red and gray fox, and bobcat are among the larger game available, while small game, including various types of rabbit, squirrel, and raccoon, are in abundance. Both water fowl—wood duck, mallard, blue and green wing teal—and inland fowl—pheasant, quail, ruffed grouse—are actively sought by sportsmen. Trapping seasons for otter, muskrat, mink, fox, oppossum, skunk, weasel, fisher, and bobcat are open yearly. License and fees for trapping, hunting, and fishing for 1986 were as follows: fishing—$12.50 resident, $17.50 non-resident; hunting—$12.50 resident small game and big game, $19.50 non-resident small game, $48.50 non-resident big game; sporting—combined hunting and fishing $19.50, available only to residents; trapping—$20.50 resident, $300 non-residents. All resident licenses are half price for individuals age 65-69, and are free to individuals age 70 and over. Non-resident seven day fishing licenses are $11.50 and non-resident three day hunting licenses are $19.50. With the exception of non-resident trapping, which must be purchased at the Boston Fisheries and Wildlife office only, all licenses are issued by city and town clerks, the Boston office of the division, or at selected outlets. Special permits for bear, wild turkey, and antlerless deer ($5 each) must be purchased in order to hunt the species. Stamps for waterfowl ($1.25) and archery/primitive firearms ($5.10) must be purchased for these activities. Stamps and permits are available only after appropriate hunting licenses have been purchased. In fiscal year 1983 the state sold 288,465 hunting and fishing licenses, 20,773 archery/primitive firearms stamps, and 26,630 waterfowl stamps (of which 343 were to collectors) totaling 335,868 sold for the intention of hunting or fishing. Of these, the largest number was 121,239 for resident fishing licenses. Resident trapping licenses totaled 1,057. The gross revenue from the sale of licenses was $3,831,711. Firearms restrictions affect hunting in several communities in the state. There are three separate seasons for hunting deer in Massachusetts: archery, shotgun, and primitive firearms. All one needs to hunt deer with a shotgun is a valid Massachusetts hunting license. A license and an archery/primitive firearms stamp are required in those seasons. Hunting is restricted to bows with at least 40 pounds pull at 28 inch draw. Arrows must have a well-sharpened steel broadhead not less then 7/8" and not more than 1 1/2" in width. Shotgun hunters may hunt with a shotgun not larger than 10 gauge. Anyone hunting with bow and arrow or primitive firearm during shotgun season must adhere to all of the shotgun season regulations. Dates for the primitive firearms season begin on the third Monday

in December and end the following Wednesday. A primitive firearm is defined as a flintlock or caplock similar to those in use circa 1865. Limits for all types of deer hunting are two deer per calendar year, except in Cape Cod and the island counties where the limit is one. A second deer permit can be obtained only at the check station where the first deer is checked. Only one deer may be taken on any one calendar day and only one deer per year may be anterless. An antlerless deer is defined as a deer with no antlers or one with antlers less than three inches in length. Anyone killing a deer shall immediately fill out the deer tag portion of the license and attach it to the deer. The tag can be removed only by the authorized person at the check station. Anyone hunting deer or entering the woodlands for the purpose of hunting must wear 500 square inches of hunter orange on his chest, back, and head. The exception to this is for bow hunters who are not required to wear any hunter orange. During shotgun season it is prohibited to hunt with a rifle, revolver, or pistol, or with the aid of a dog, except when the dog is used for migratory fowl on coastal waters. Any deer being transported in a motor vehicle must be open to view. In 1982, the statewide deer harvest for all seasons combined was 4,002 deer, showing a decrease of 1,009 over the 1981 harvest. Seventy-six percent of the deer harvested were reported in the four western counties of Berkshire, Franklin, Hampshire, and Hampden. A total of 3,265 deer were taken during the shotgun only season, including 2,210 antlered males and 1,055 antlerless deer. Archers took 446 (264 bucks, 182 does), and primitive firearm hunters bagged 282 (116 bucks, 166 does). In 1986, the season for hunting black bear was in two parts, from September 29 to October 4, and from November 17 to November 22. The addition of the second week was started in 1982 when the prohibition of radio telemetry devices and the restricting of dog pack size (to six or less) were also instituted. In that year a total of 823 bear hunting permits were received, while a total of 13 bears were taken. That represented the greatest kill on record. Nine males and four females were taken from Berkshire (1), Hampden (1), Franklin (5), and Hampshire (6) counties. Bear can only be hunted with rifles .23 caliber or larger, muzzleloader .44 to .775 caliber, bows with 40 pounds pull or greater, or .357 Magnum revolver. Dogs and revolvers are allowed in the first week only. All bears must be checked within 24 hours of the kill. All hunting and trapping of bobcats must take place west of highway 31, located in Worcester County. In 1982-83 a total of 37 bobcats were taken, including 18 by hunting, 14 by trapping, and five by road kills. The Fisheries and Wildlife director closes the season when the total harvest reaches 50. The value of raccoon pelts increased in Massachusetts from $1,147 in 1964 to $558,840 in 1981, while the harvest had increased from 965 to 23,000. There is a bag limit of three raccoon from the sunset of one day to the sunset of the next by one person, and six by two or more persons hunting in the same group. In 1982-83, in a season that ran from November 23 to February 28, a total of 548 beaver were taken by 77 trappers in 83 towns. Kit beaver accounted for slightly more than one-third of the harvest. Average pelt prices were the lowest since 1970-71. Massachusetts law is very specific about protecting houses. It is illegal to trap within ten feet of the waterline of a beaver house or tear open or disturb a beaver house or dam. During 1982-83, 47 successful trappers took a total of 106 otter in 60 towns, for a mean take of 2.3 otter per successful trapper. The 1982 fisher take was 140. Inland game bird seasons are in the fall, with the longest for ruffed grouse. To hunt waterfowl, a Massachusetts Waterfowl Stamp is required along with the Federal Migratory Bird Hunting Stamp. Quail hunting is limited to Nantucket, Dukes, Barnstable, Plymouth, and Bristol Counties. Bag limit is five, possession limit is ten, and season limit is 25. Pheasant hunting is broken into two zones; the eastern zone (a north-south line east of Worcester) allows only cocks to be taken, while both cocks and hens can be taken west of the line. Bag limit is two, possession limit is four, and season limit is six. Limits on ruffed grouse are bag, three; possession, six; and season, 15. Turkey season runs for three weeks in May and is broken into two parts. Permits are required. Only bearded turkeys may be hunted. Hunting turkeys is allowed with shotguns no larger than 10 guage or bows with 40 pounds pull or greater. Hunting hours for bear, deer, grouse, quail, crow, and pheasant is one-half hour before sunset to one-half hour after sunset. With 190 miles of coastline and a plentiful supply of inland rivers, lakes, ponds, and streams, Massachusetts offers prospective anglers bountiful fishing in tremendous variety. The most popular inland fish are of the trout variety: lake, brown, rainbow, and brook. Also available are large and smallmouth bass, pickerel, American shad, landlocked salmon, and a variety of the large northern fighting gamefish, including walleye, northern pike, and tiger muskie. The state can boast the presence of no less than 132 lakes and ponds that support either northern pike or large and smallmouth bass, chain pickerel or white and yellow perch, over half of which have better than average fishing. Though found all across the state, the majority are located from Worcester County west. The exception is Middlesex County which has a large supply of fishing waters. Trout streams are in abundance, especially in the central and western upland regions. Over 250 cities and towns in 13 counties have trout-stocked water. The largest and most used inland fishing spot is the Quabbin Reservoir, which lies on the border of Worcester and Hampshire Counties. In 1983, an estimated 55,158 anglers tested the waters catching over 45,000 fish. Quabbin supports most of the state's variety of gamefish. In 1983, 17,300 landlocked salmon yearlings were released into Quabbin. The freshwater season is year around (except as posted) for lake trout, landlocked salmon, bass, pickerel, northern pike, tiger muskie, walleye, and American shad. Brook trout, rainbow trout, and brown trout seasons vary by type of body of water, as do daily limits. Saltwater fishing is extremely popular in the Bay State. The Cape Cod area alone offers 12 access points for surf casting. Gamefish that can be encountered less than an hour from shore are striped bass, fin tuna, bluefish, mackerel, pollock, and bonito. The Cape Cod shoreline is the most plentiful for bottom fish. Anglers who want to bring them up can find sea bass, tautog, scup, halibut, ocean perch, cod, flounder, and haddock. Many of these will bite on artificial lures, allowing light tackle enthusiasts to test their skill. Fish available by surf casting are striped bass, squeateague, tautog, summer flounder, whiting or kingfish, and cod. The Division of Fisheries and Wildlife is involved in the unique Urban Angler Program. In 1983, eight fishing clinics were conducted, exposing 240 novice anglers to the art of fishing. That same year certificates were awarded to 75 new fishing instructors within the program.

Ref.
PN6081
.C27
WH

# The Harper Book of AMERICAN QUOTATIONS

Gorton Carruth and Eugene Ehrlich

A Hudson Group Book



1817

Harper & Row, Publishers, New York
Cambridge, Philadelphia, San Francisco
London, Mexico City, São Paulo, Singapore, Sydney

70 It is now nearly three years since the tyranny of Britain received its first repulse by the arms of America. A period which has given birth to a new world and erected a monument to the folly of the old.

Ibid.

71 America has surmounted a greater variety and combination of difficulties than, I believe, ever fell to the share of any one people in the same space of time, and has replenished the world with more useful knowledge and sounder maxims of civil government than were ever produced in any age before. Had it not been for America there had been no such thing as freedom left throughout the whole universe. England hath lost hers in a long chain of right reasoning from wrong principles, and it is from this country now she must learn the resolution to redress herself, and the wisdom how.

Ibid.

72 Stand your ground. Don't fire unless fired upon, but if they mean to have a war let it begin here.

CAPT. JOHN PARKER, addressing his men at Lexington Green, April 19, 1775.

73 If I were an American, as I am an Englishman, while a foreign troop was landed in my country, I never would lay down my arms—never, never, never!

WILLIAM PITT, the Younger, in a speech in the House of Commons, November 18, 1777.

74 It is a most accursed, wicked, barbarous, cruel, unnatural, unjust, and diabolical war.

WILLIAM PITT, the Younger, 1781.

75 Don't one of you fire until you see the whites of their eyes.

Attributed to Col. William Prescott, and also to Gen. Israel Putnam, at the Battle of Bunker Hill, June 17, 1775.

76 Under God we are determined that wheresoever, whensoever, or howsoever we shall be called to make our exit, we will die free men.

JOSIAH QUINCY, "Observations on the Boston Port Bill," 1774.

77 A more impudent, false, and atrocious Proclamation was never fabricated by the hands of man.

AMBROSE SERLE, secretary to Lord Howe, writing about the Declaration of Independence in his journal, c.1776, quoted in George F. Scheer and Hugh Rankin, *Rebels and Redcoats,* 1957.

78 We beat them today or Molly Stark's a widow.

COL. JOHN STARK, addressing his troops before the battle of Bennington, August 16, 1777.

79 I can answer but for three things, a firm belief in the justice of our Cause, close attention in the prosecution of it, and the strictest integrity.

GEORGE WASHINGTON, following his appointment as commander-in-chief of the Continental Army, June 19, 1775.

80 Let us therefore animate and encourage each other, and show the whole world that a Freeman, contending for liberty on his own ground, is superior to any slavish mercenary on earth.

GEORGE WASHINGTON, general orders, Headquarters, New York, July 2, 1776.

81 The time is now near at hand which must probably determine whether Americans are to be freemen or slaves; whether they are to have any property they can call their own; whether their houses and farms are to be pillaged and destroyed, and themselves consigned to a state of wretchedness from which no human efforts will deliver them. The fate of unborn millions will now depend, under God, on the courage and conduct of this army. Our cruel and unrelenting enemy leaves us only the choice of brave resistance, or the most abject submission. We have, therefore, to resolve to conquer or die.

GEORGE WASHINGTON, address to the Continental Army before the battle of Long Island, August 27, 1776.

82 There is nothing that gives a man consequence, and renders him fit for command, like a support that renders him independent of everybody but the State he serves.

GEORGE WASHINGTON, in a letter to Congress, September 24, 1776.

50 Private property was the original source of freedom. It still is its main bulwark.

WALTER LIPPMANN, *The Good Society,* 1937.

51 No! true freedom is to share
All the chains our brothers wear.

JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL, "Stanzas on Freedom," 1843.

52 And I honor the man who is willing to sink
Half his present repute for the freedom to think,
And, when he has thought, be his cause strong or weak,
Will risk t' other half for the freedom to speak.

JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL, *A Fable for Critics,* 1848.

53 Freedom needs all her poets: it is they
Who give her aspirations wings,
And to the wiser law of music sway
Her wild imaginings.

JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL, "To the Memory of Hood," honoring the English poet Thomas Hood, 1848.

54 *What is freedom?* Freedom is the right to choose: the right to create for oneself the alternatives of choice. Without the possibility of choice and the exercise of choice a man is not a man but a member, an instrument, a thing.

ARCHIBALD MACLEISH, in "A Declaration of Freedom."

55 Freedom is the right to one's dignity as a man.

Ibid.

56 Since the general civilization of mankind, I believe there are more instances of the abridgment of the freedom of the people by gradual and silent encroachments of those in power than by violent and sudden usurpations.

JAMES MADISON, in a speech in the Virginia Convention, June 16, 1788.

57 We must not confuse dissent with disloyalty.

EDWARD R. MURROW, in a report on Sen. Joseph McCarthy, on the television program *See It Now,* March 7, 1954.

58 Our best hope, both of a tolerable political harmony and of an inner peace, rests upon our ability to observe the limits of human freedom even while we responsibly exploit its creative possibilities.

REINHOLD NIEBUHR, *The Structure of Nations and Empires,* 1959.

59 As long as men are free to ask what they must, free to say what they think, free to think what they will, freedom can never be lost, and science can never regress.

J. ROBERT OPPENHEIMER, in *Life* magazine, October 10, 1949.

60 There can be no prescription old enough to supersede the Law of Nature and the grant of God Almighty, who has given to all men a natural right to be free, and they have it ordinarily in their power to make themselves so, if they please.

JAMES OTIS, *The Rights of the British Colonies Asserted and Proved,* 1764.

61 Freedom hath been hunted round the globe. Asia and Africa have long expelled her. Europe regards her like a stranger, and England hath given her warning to depart. Oh, receive the fugitive, and prepare in time an asylum for mankind!

THOMAS PAINE, *Common Sense,* 1776.

62 Those who expect to reap the blessings of freedom must, like men, undergo the fatigue of supporting it.

THOMAS PAINE, *The American Crisis,* No. 4, September 12, 1777.

63 Blandishments will not fascinate us, nor will threats of a "halter" intimidate. For, under God, we are determined that wheresoever, whensoever, or howsoever we shall be called to make our exit, we will die free men.

JOSIAH QUINCY, *Observations on the Boston Port Bill,* 1774.

64 Cabal is the necessary effect of freedom. Where men are left free to act, we must calculate on their being governed by their interests and passions.

JOHN RANDOLPH, in a letter to Littleton Waller Tazewell, April 21, 1804.

## 101. GOVERNMENT

99 All hereditary government is in its nature tyranny. An heritable crown, or an heritable throne, or by what other fanciful name such things may be called, have no other significant explanation than that mankind are heritable property. To inherit a government, is to inherit the people, as if they were flocks and herds.

THOMAS PAINE, *The Rights of Man,* 1791–1792.

100 Every age and generation must be as free to act for itself, *in all cases,* as the ages and generations which preceded it. The vanity and presumption of governing beyond the grave, is the most ridiculous and insolent of all tyrannies.

Ibid.

101 Government in a well-constituted republic, requires no belief from man beyond what his reason can give. He sees the *rationale* of the whole system, its origin, and its operation; and as it is best supported when best understood, the human faculties act with boldness, and acquire, under this form of government, a gigantic manliness.

Ibid.

102 Great part of that order which reigns among mankind is not the effect of government. It has its origin in the principles of society and the natural constitution of man. It existed prior to government, and would exist if the formality of government was abolished.

Ibid.

103 In fine, society performs for itself almost everything which is ascribed to government.

Ibid.

104 All the monarchical governments are military. War is their trade, plunder and revenue their objects. While such governments continue, peace has not the absolute security of a day.

Ibid.

105 Let the people think they govern and they will be governed.

WILLIAM PENN, *Some Fruits of Solitude,* 1693.

106 No system of government was ever so ill devised that, under proper men, it wouldn't work well enough.

Ibid.

107 Republics exist only on the tenure of being constantly agitated.

WENDELL PHILLIPS, in a speech in Boston, January 28, 1852.

108 Everybody knows that government never began anything. It is the whole world that thinks and governs.

WENDELL PHILLIPS, in a lecture in Boston, October 4, 1859.

109 Governments exist to protect the rights of minorities. The loved and the rich need no protection,—they have many friends and few enemies.

WENDELL PHILLIPS, in a speech in Boston, December 21, 1860.

110 'Tis a political maxim that all government tends to despotism, and like the human frame brings at its birth the latent seed which finally shall destroy the constitution. This is a melancholy truth—but such is the lot of humanity.

JOSIAH QUINCY, in a letter to the *Boston Gazette,* 1767.

111 Government, to be safe and to be free, must consist of representatives having a common interest and a common feeling with the represented. . . . No government extending from the Atlantic to the Pacific can be fit to govern me or those whom I represent. There is death in the pot, compound it how you will.

JOHN RANDOLPH, speaking in Congress, January, 1822.

112 Bureaucracy does not take kindly to being assailed and isn't above using a few low blows and a knee to the groin when it fights back. Knowing this, I have become extremely cautious in dealing with government agencies.

RONALD REAGAN, *Where's the Rest of Me?* 1965.

113 Government exists to protect rights which are ours from birth; the right to life, to liberty, and the

every lane, every field looked like a cherry orchard, offering an inexhaustible profusion of fruit to all who would take the trouble to gather it.

FRANCES TROLLOPE, *Domestic Manners of the Americans,* 1832.

## 147. MASSACHUSETTS

1 Ense petit placidam sub libertate quietem. (By the sword she seeks peaceful quiet under liberty.)

State motto.

2 It shall be the duty of the legislatures and magistrates . . . to countenance and inculcate the principles of humanity and general benevolence, public and private charity, industry and frugality, honesty and punctuality in their dealings; sincerity, good humor, and all social affections and generous sentiments among the people.

Constitution of Massachusetts, 1780.

3 Have faith in Massachusetts!

CALVIN COOLIDGE, in a speech in the Massachusetts legislature, January 7, 1914.

4 [The Puritans] were a very wonderful people. . . . If they were narrow it was not a blighting and destructive narrowness, but a vital and productive narrowness.

CALVIN COOLIDGE, in a speech in Watertown, Massachusetts, 1930.

5 the Cambridge ladies who live in furnished souls
are unbeautiful and have comfortable minds.

E.E. CUMMINGS, "Realities," 1923.

6 Massachusetts is Italy upside down.

RALPH WALDO EMERSON, quoting William Ellery Channing in a journal entry dated November 19, 1848, *Journals,* 1909–1914.

7 Down to the Plymouth Rock, that had been
to their feet as a doorstep
Into a world unknown,— the corner-stone of a nation!

HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW, on Plymouth Rock, in *The Courtship of Miles Standish,* 1858.

8 Nantucket! Take out your map and look at it—a mere hillock, and elbow of sand; all beach, without a background. Some gamesome wights will tell you that they have to plant weeds there, they don't grow naturally; that pieces of wood in Nantucket are carried about like bits of the true cross in Rome; that one blade of grass makes an oasis, three blades in a day's walk a prairie.

HERMAN MELVILLE, *Moby-Dick,* 1851.

9 The rock underlies all America: it only crops out here.

WENDELL PHILLIPS, in a speech at Plymouth, Massachusetts, December 21, 1855.

10 The first public love of my heart is the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

JOSIAH QUINCY, in a speech in the House of Representatives, January 14, 1811.

11 I shall enter on no encomium upon Massachusetts; she needs none. There she is. Behold her, and judge for yourselves. There is her history; the world knows it by heart. The past, at least, is secure. There is Boston and Concord and Lexington and Bunker Hill; and there they will remain forever.

DANIEL WEBSTER, in his second reply in the Webster-Hayne debate, January 26, 1830.

12 No slave-hunt in our borders,— no pirate on our strand!
No fetters in the Bay State— no slave upon our land!

JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER, "Massachusetts to Virginia," 1843.

60 Nine times out of ten, in the arts as in life, there is actually no truth to be discovered; there is only error to be exposed.

H.L. MENCKEN, *Prejudices,* Third Series, 1922.

61 The smallest atom of truth represents some man's bitter toil and agony; for every ponderable chunk of it there is a brave truth-seeker's grave upon some lonely ash-dump and a soul roasting in hell.

Ibid.

62 Truth is not a diet
But a condiment.

CHRISTOPHER MORLEY, "Veritas vos Damnabit," in *Translations from the Chinese,* 1922.

63 Half-truths to which men are accustomed are so much easier to pass than the golden mintage they rarely encounter!

CHRISTOPHER MORLEY, *Religio Journalistici,* 1924.

64 The truth is America's most potent weapon. We cannot enlarge upon the truth. But we can and must intensify our efforts to make that truth more shining.

RICHARD M. NIXON, *The Challenges We Face,* 1960.

65 The People have a right to the Truth as they have a right to life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness. It is *not* right that they be exploited and deceived with false views of life, false characters, false sentiment, false morality, false history, false philosophy, false emotions, false heroism, false notions of self-sacrifice, false views of religion, of duty, of conduct and manners.

FRANK NORRIS, *The Responsibilities of the Novelist,* 1903.

66 The mind, in discovering truths, acts in the same manner as it acts through the eye in discovering objects; when once any object has been seen, it is impossible to put the mind back to the same condition it was in before it saw it.

THOMAS PAINE, *The Rights of Man,* 1791–1792.

67 Such is the irresistible nature of truth that all it asks, and all it wants, is the liberty of appearing.

Ibid.

68 Mystery is the antagonist of truth. It is a fog of human invention that obscures truth, and represents it in distortion.

THOMAS PAINE, *The Age of Reason,* 1794–1795.

69 Truth never yet fell dead in the streets; it has such affinity with the soul of man, the seed however broadcast will catch somewhere and produce its hundredfold.

THEODORE PARKER, *A Discourse of Matters Pertaining to Religion,* 1842.

70 Truth stood on one side and Ease on the other; it has often been so.

Ibid.

71 Inquiry is human; blind obedience brutal. Truth never loses by the one but often suffers by the other.

WILLIAM PENN, *Some Fruits of Solitude,* 1693.

72 Truth is one forever, absolute; but opinion is truth filtered through the moods, the blood, the disposition of the spectator.

WENDELL PHILLIPS, "Against Idolatry," an address given in Boston, October 4, 1859.

73 It is the nature of truth in general, as of some ores in particular, to be richest when most superficial.

EDGAR ALLAN POE, "The Rationale of Verse," published in *The Pioneer* magazine, March, 1843.

74 Man passes away; generations are but shadows; there is nothing stable but truth.

JOSIAH QUINCY, JR., in a speech in Boston, September 17, 1830.

75 Truth is given the eternal years of God because she needs them every one.

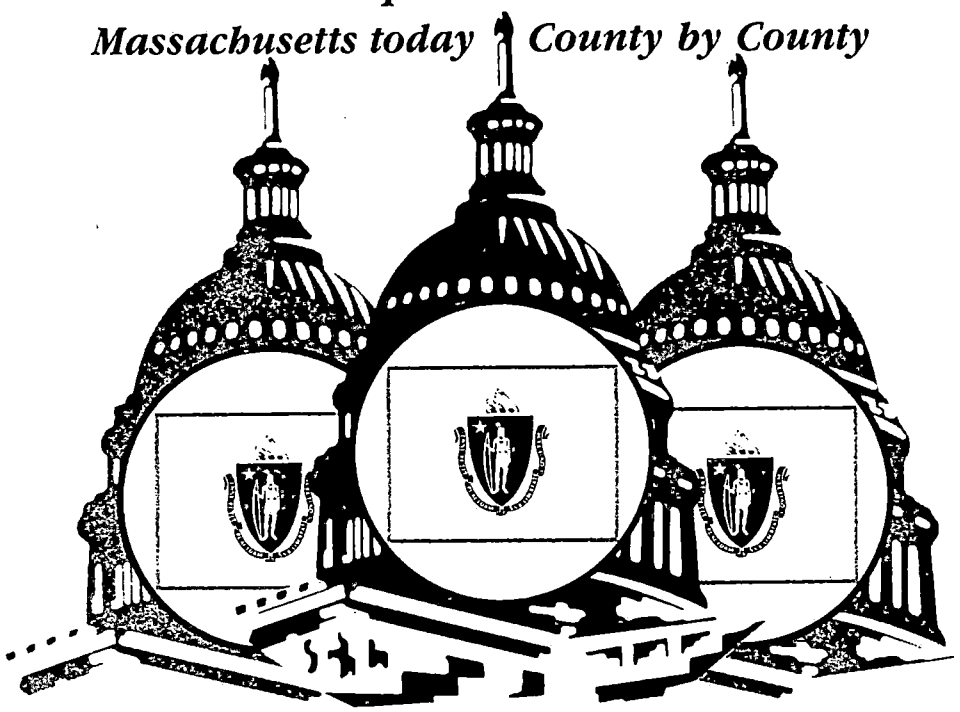
THOMAS BRACKETT REED, in a speech at Bowdoin College, Maine, July 25, 1902.

76 The best of us only pass from one inaccuracy to another, and so do the worst, but on the whole,

*More Than An Almanac*

# MASSACHUSETTS FACTS

*A Comprehensive look at Massachusetts today County by County*



*Flying the Colors*

by
JOHN CLEMENTS

PUBLISHED BY
CLEMENTS RESEARCH, INC.
DALLAS, TEXAS

**FEBRUARY 6, 1788** • When Massachusetts' ratifying convention met early in the year, it was obvious that the majority was Anti-Federalist and thus opposed to the new federal Constitution. State Federalists were led by Rufus King, Nathaniel Gorham, Caleb Strong, Fisher Ames, Theophilus Parsons and James Bowdoin. Sam Adams was Anti-Federalist and John Hancock waited to see which way the most favorable wind would blow. John Adams was still in England but would resign in disgust later in the year without his desired commercial treaty, and return home. Several leading Federalists convinced Hancock that his support of the new government might very well gain him the vice-presidency, and Federalist shipwrights who had been promised contracts by Federalist merchants convinced their old friend Sam Adams to change his mind. Though elected president of the convention, Hancock waited for three weeks to take his seat, offering as he did a proposal for immediate ratification with an accompanying recommendation for amendments that would secure the rights of the people. Sam Adams approved and the U.S. Constitution was ratified 187 to 168. Massachusetts entered the Union on this day as the sixth state. All but one of the states that eventually followed the Bay State in ratification also suggested the same basic amendments.

**JUNE 1788** • The legislature (still called the General Court) granted official pardons to the recent rebels, Daniel Shays and Eli Parsons.

**NOVEMBER 2, 1788** • A former French chaplain performed the first Catholic mass openly celebrated in Boston. This year, George Richard Minot would publish his *History of Shays's Rebellion* while Nicholas Pike at Newburyport contributed *A New and Complete System* which became the standard American arithmetic text.

**APRIL 30, 1789** • George Washington took the oath of office as president of the United States and John Adams, with 34 of the 69 second votes of the presidential electors, took office as the vice-president.

**SEPTEMbER 1789** • President Washington named Major General Henry Knox, the former Massachusetts bookseller who had tried to calm the crowd of the Boston Massacre and who had brought the artillery from Fort Ticonderoga to bombard Boston, as the nation's first secretary of war. Massachusetts citizen Samuel Osgood was chosen the first postmaster general. William Cushing of Scituate would be the first associate justice appointed to the new Supreme Court. During the year, the new president visited Boston as part of a general tour of the new nation. Governor Hancock refused to call on Washington, insisting that the governor (His Excellency) of Massachusetts was a more important personage than the president of the United States. In the realm of world trade, Boston's *Atlantic* sailed to Bombay and Calcutta and the *Franklin* became the first American ship to reach Japan. Nathan Reed had invented a steam-propelled paddle boat which began trips between Danvers and Beverly. In West Springfield, a horse was born to owner Justin Morgan who was a schoolteacher and singing master. Named "Figure" by his owner, the dark red bay stallion with black points grew to be a mere 14 hands tall but could outwork, outpull and outrun (in a quarter-mile race) all comers. Taken to Vermont at the age of two, the horse became known as "Justin Morgan," the foundation sire of the Morgan horse, a truly American breed. In Worcester, William Hill Brown published *The Power of Sympathy*, the first American novel.

**1790** • Almost 379,000 people lived in Massachusetts. In a period of 20 days, Salem's custom house recorded three ships from Canton, seven from the West Indies and seven from Lisbon and Cadiz. England could never enforce its ban on America's trade with the British West Indies so the channels began to open wider. In Newburyport, Jacob Perkins contrived a machine that would cut and produce two hundred thousand nails a day. He went on to revolutionize the cotton-printing industry with a process for transferring engraved patterns from a small, steel cylinder to copper.

**1791** • Harvard graduate, historian and Congregational minister Jeremy Belknap founded America's first historical association, the Massachusetts Historical Society, in Boston.

**DECEMBER 15, 1791** • As suggested by Massachusetts and a number of other states, ten amendments to the federal Constitution, known as the Bill of Rights, officially became the law of the land.

**1792** • Paul Revere, designer of the first issue of Continental currency, the first official seal of the colonies and the Massachusetts State Seal, opened the Boston bell foundry with his son Joseph Warren Revere. Between the two, they would cast almost 400 church bells, "powerful and mellow." In 1911, there were 78 Revere bells still in use. In the tower of King's Chapel, the largest and most famous bell, weighing over 2,000 pounds still hangs. Joseph Harper, manager of The New Exhibition Room on Hawley Street in Boston, was arrested but released on a technicality for holding a variety show and performances of Shakespeare's plays. Despite the law, Boston theater was finally off to a start. Meanwhile, John Adams was re-elected vice-president and the first layman was elected to the Board of Overseers at Harvard.

**1793** • Samuel Adams became acting governor upon the death of John Hancock. In Williamstown, in the northwest corner of the state, Harvard received its first competition. Williams College was chartered and supported by a grant in the will of Colonel Ephraim Williams. Eli Whitney, born in Westboro in 1765, invented the cotton gin and later devised a system of manufacturing interchangeable gun parts. Religion and politics were still a holy union in Massachusetts and the conservative political posture supported a desire to return to older, Puritan religious values. The religious consciousness of the times was manifested in several directions. One was a Second Great Awakening called the "Revival" which would last for several decades. The Baptists enjoyed tremendous growth during this period and eventually became the nation's largest Protestant denomination.

## NORFOLK COUNTY

Named for Norfolk County, England. Created: March 26, 1793 from Suffolk County as the twelfth county in the state. County Seat: (Shire Town) Dedham. Major Events: Weymouth became the state's second oldest settlement in 1622 as a small fishing and farming outpost. Quincy began in 1625 on Massachusetts Bay and quickly evolved into Thomas Morton's Merrymount. Settlers established themselves to the west on the Charles River in 1635, petitioning to incorporated as a town called Contentment in 1636. It would later be called Dedham. Jonathan Fairbanks built his house there the same year and it still stands today as America's oldest home. Reverend John Eliot established a Praying Indian Town on

Pegan Hill, named for the Pegan Indians, in present-day Dover. The area that would become Brookline was settled in 1638 and, in 1640, Franklin Street was laid out in Quincy as a road from Boston to Plymouth. This was the same year that the Old Colony Boundary Line was marked between the colonies of Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth Bay. The nation's second oldest boundary line, it apparently ran from just south of Cohasset to just south of Plainville, approximating today's southern boundary of Norfolk County. John Winthrop, Jr. built the nation's first iron furnace in Quincy in 1644 and the townspeople of Dedham established the nation's first free public school and supported it with general taxation of Dedham's residents. During King Philips' War of 1675 to 1676, more than half of Medfield was burned as was Wrentham. Many colonists fled to the safety of towns like Dedham. The Baker house was built in Westwood which was first called Clapboard Trees or the Third Parish of Dedham. Several generations of Bakers would occupy the house including Betsey Metcalf Baker who, it is claimed, devised a way of splitting and braiding straw to make bonnets, producing the nation's first straw bonnet and inaugurating what started as a popular cottage industry but grew into one of the area's staple factory products. When Medway was incorporated as a town in 1713, Jacob Bartlett moved further south to settle No Man's Land or what later became Bellingham in 1719. Medway was so isolated that it refused to send representatives to the General Court for 13 years. In 1721, Dr. Zabdiel Boylston of Brookline inoculated his son and two slaves for smallpox, the first doctor to use the controversial procedure as a protection against the often fatal illness. Abigail Smith was born in Weymouth in 1744 the daughter of the Reverend William Smith. She would later become Abigail Adams, the wife of the future president who was born in Quincy. Quincy would also be the birthplace of John Hancock and John Quincy Adams and the site of a world-famous granite quarry. The granite was transported by horse-drawn railway to the Neponset River on what is thought to be the nation's first commercial railway. In 1763, the state's first known census was taken in Medway. When Medfield was chosen to be the county seat, it refused the honor as the townspeople thought the distraction of the court house would distrupt the industry of the town. Dedham became the county seat and Brookline left Suffolk County to join Norfolk. Two years later, Brookline petitioned the state Supreme Court to rejoin Suffolk County but the petition was denied, leaving Brookline an "island" member of Norfolk. Canton became the site of Paul Revere's foundry in 1808 and later his powder mill. During the Revolution and the War of 1812, Canton would provide muskets and powder to American soldiers. Plymouth Rubber today occupies the original site of the Revere foundry. The name Canton was a result of the active China trade carried on by the area merchants. In 1803, Cohasset, Hingham and Hull were to be annexed to Norfolk County from Suffolk but Hingham and Hull refused and won entrance to Plymouth County, leaving Cohasset the second "island" member of Norfolk. Because of the many shipwrecks off Cohasset's rocky coast, the first U.S. lifeboat station was established on Pleasant Beach in 1807. Minot's Light would follow in 1850. A significant decision was handed down by the Massachusetts Supreme Court in 1818 awarding the Dedham Parish rather than the church fellowship the right to elect the church ministers. This ruling opened the doors wide for encroaching Unitarianism. In 1833, China trader Robert Bennet Forbes built a mansion for his mother in Milton which is now the Museum of the America China Trade. Forbes had gone to sea at the tender age of 13 and was captain of an opium storeship by the time he was 19. Opium became the product Yankees found to be most effective in bartering for Chinese tea and silks. In 1834, the Canton viaduct was constructed by artist James Whistler's father. James Clapp established the Clapp Shoe Company in Weymouth in 1853 and the company lasted four generations. Beginning in 1870, Boston tried unsuccessfully for the first of six times to annex the wealthy, residential community of Brookline as a plum for its tax coffers. Brookline remains the state's largest town, refusing to convert to city government. First called Muddy River Hamlet, Brookline became the "Town of Millionaires" in the early 1900s and the birthplace of John F. Kennedy in 1917. In 1871, Henry Fowle Durant founded a Female Seminary which opened in 1875 for "the glory of God" in what was still Natick and the massive estate of Samuel Welles. Welles' grandson-in-law, H. Hollis Hunnewell, bought the estate in 1881, incorporated it as a town and named it Wellesley. Developing an expertise with marine engines in the late 1880s, the Quincy Fore River Shipyards turned out 36 destroyers for World War I and the carrier *Lexington* for World War II. General Dynamics would build the first surface nuclear ship here. Wall Street economist Roger Babson of Wellesley Hills founded Babson Institute in Wellesley in 1919 as a specialized business college. In 1925, Howard Johnson bought a local drugstore in Quincy to begin making "an ice cream I can call my own." Quincy is the modern-day headquarters for Howard Johnson Corporation.

**FEBRUARY 3, 1794** • The new Boston Theater opening included "a grand symphony by Signor Haydn."

**SPRING 1794** • Samuel Adams was elected governor of the Commonwealth while the "Federal era" and the war between France and England brought prosperity flowing into Massachusetts and Boston as never before, creating vast new opportunities for shipping and trading. The newly appointed U.S. Armory at Springfield would become the major source of U.S. military rifles and a center for weapons design and manufacturing. In Hampshire County, a canal was constructed to bypass South Hadley's Falls on the Connecticut River. George Washington appointed John Quincy Adams as the U.S. minister to the Netherlands.

**JUNE 26, 1794** • The General Court ratified the Eleventh Amendment to the U.S. Constitution, curbing the power of the federal judiciary in relation to the states.

**1795** • The Haymarket Theater was constructed and even though the Boston Theater was bankrupt after its first year, lively competition would continue between the two theaters until the Haymarket was torn down in 1803.

**1796** • Two-term Vice-President John Adams was elected the second president of the United States, to take office in the following spring. In Massachusetts, each congressional district voted for two citizens as presidential electors. Any candidate receiving the majority of the popular vote automatically became the district's single elector. If a majority was not achieved in a district, the legislature chose between the two persons with the highest number of votes. In Boston, the Boston

E169
.C45
v.1
WH

A MAIN STREET TRAVEL GUIDE




# DISCOVERING HISTORIC AMERICA

## NEW ENGLAND

*General Editor: S. Allen Chambers*

*Other Guides in the*
*scovering Historic America Series*

**CALIFORNIA AND THE WEST**
**THE MID-ATLANTIC STATES**
**THE SOUTHEAST**

Text:
Vicki Brooks
Michael Fiore
Martin Greif
Lawrence Grow

Design:
Frank Mahood
Donald Rolfe

illustration: *First Church of Belfast, Maine; Historic*
*merican Buildings Survey, Cortlandt V. D. Hubbard,*
*photographer.*

E.P. DUTTON & CO., INC. • *NEW YORK*
*1982*

OUND, Ave. on 80. The ily cem- ymbolic ngland. im, and ouches. id are in of Med- g fami-

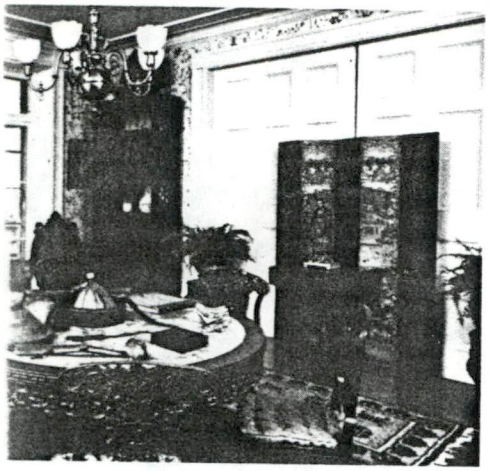
RICAN , 1833. ica and Revolu- he Civil olved in e head- Massa- Bennet trading 0s. The the ex- Forbes's design int fur- n made utifully House

which serves as the museum's headquarters. Other kinds of objects made in China—lacquerware, silver, textiles—are also on exhibit. The museum's archives contain thousands of documents and other printed matter, including photographs, which relate to the American trade with the Far East. NR. Forbes House is open Tu-Su 1-4; group tours are available from 1-4. $3 adults, $1.50 children. (617) 696-1815.

Close by the Forbes House is the **Dr. Amos Holbrook House** (1800), 203 Adams St., which is also maintained by the museum. Wings were added to this Federal residence in 1872 and 1907, but such original neo-classical details as the pedimented center entrance and porch with a balustraded deck still predominate.

## Newton

JACKSON HOMESTEAD, 527 Washington St., 1809. The history of the many settlements which make up the sprawling town of Newton is the primary focus of attention in this historic house museum. How the early 19th-century residents might have lived is displayed in furnishings, clothing, and the toys provided children. The Jackson Homestead, however, has a history beginning long before 1809, its date of construction. At that time





Major Timothy Jackson took the deteriorating saltbox built by his ancestor Edward Jackson in 1679 and recycled parts of it for his new home. Six of the fireplaces have hand-carved 17th-century mantels; there are also many original doors from the earlier house. NR. Open July-Aug, Tu-F 10-4; Sept, M-F 10-4; Oct-June, M-F 10-4; 1st Sunday of month, 10-4. $1 adults, 50¢ senior citizens, 25¢ children 6-17. (617) 552-7238.

## Quincy

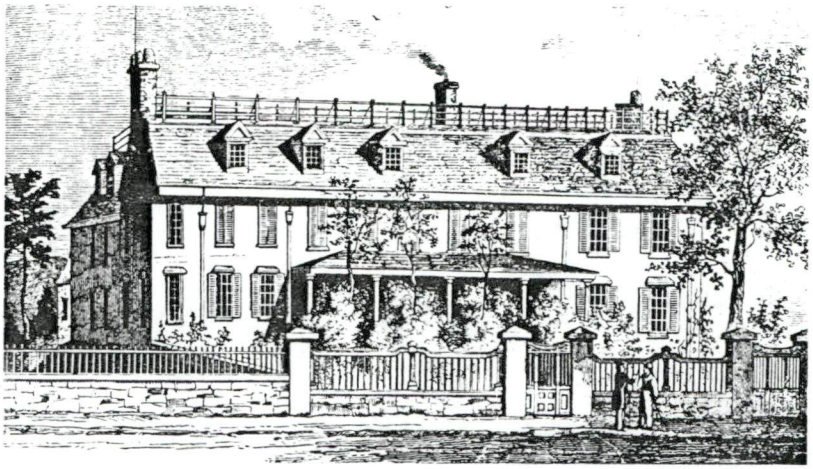
Quincy is a relatively new town—as New England towns go. Not until the area had been recognized as the home ground of the Adams family and the center of a growing granite industry in the 1790s was the town incorporated separately from Braintree. From that time on it grew much more rapidly than the neighboring town and eventually became one of the major manufacturing cities of the state.

Despite its close proximity to Boston, Quincy—like Cambridge—has maintained a separate cultural identity. This independent historical viewpoint is based on the distinguished contributions of the Adams and Quincy families to the area and to the nation.

ADAMS ACADEMY, 8 Adams St., 1872. This former private school houses the offices, library, and museum of the Quincy Historical Society. A Victorian Gothic building of rough-faced granite ashlar with brick trim, it served until 1908 as a boy's school and then was used for various civic purposes before being leased to the society. A fund started by President John Adams led to the establishment of the school, and Ware and Van Brunt, Boston's leading late 19th-century architectural firm, was responsible for the design. NR. Open M-F 9:30-3:30, Sa 12:30-3:30. Free. (617) 773-1144.

ADAMS NATIONAL HISTORIC SITE, 135 Adams St., 1731. Four generations of the eminent Adams family occupied this handsomely appointed house from 1788 to 1927—John Adams, John Quincy Adams, Charles Francis Adams, and Henry Adams. Henry's brother, Brooks, was the last family member to live at what became known as the "Old House." John Adams called it "but the farm of a patriot." It was, considered a mansion house, however, when purchsed by Adams in 1787, although not as large as Mrs. Adams would have liked. It was almost doubled in size in following years. Surrounding the house were some 40 acres. Approximately five acres remain.

The visitor to the historic site can tour



*Adams National Historic Site*

the house, a stone library building built by Charles Francis Adams in the 1860s, a stable, and well-tended gardens. The furnishings are, for the most part, Adams family pieces. NR, NHL. Open Apr 19-Nov 10, daily 9-5. 50¢ adults, chaperoned children under 16 free. (617) 773-1177.

The adjoining **Beale House** and property of 3½ acres is also included in the historic site. This building, however, is occupied and is not open to the public.

THOMAS CRANE PUBLIC LIBRARY, Coddington and Washington Sts., 1881. One of Henry Hobson Richardson's most successful buildings, the library is granite with red sandstone trim; the broadly arched entrance and pitched roof emphasize the Romanesque style. John La Farge was commissioned to produce opalescent panels for windows. NR. Open M-F 9-9, Sa 9-5; closed Sa, July and Aug.

QUINCY HOMESTEAD, 34 Butler Rd., 1706. The home of John Hancock's wife, Dorothy Quincy, this mansion house was partially built in the 1600s, 1706, and in the mid-18th century. The kitchen dates from the 1600s. It has now been opened as a museum by the Colonial Dames of Massachusetts. NR. Apr 19-Nov 1, Tu-Su 10-5. $1 adults, 50¢ for chaperoned children under 12.

COL. JOSIAH QUINCY HOUSE, 20 Muirhead St. (Wollaston), 1770. The Quincy family continued for several generations to provide leaders for the greater Boston community. Col. Quincy and his son, Josiah, Jr., were close allies of the Adamses; grandson Josiah III was president of Harvard and mayor of Boston. The handsome Georgian clapboard house was resided in by members of the family until the late 1800s. The property is now maintained by the SPNEA as a museum. The fireplaces, surrounded by English tiles, are especially noteworthy. The rooms are furnished with antique objects associated with the Quincy family. NR. Open June 1-Sept 30, T, Th, Sa 1-5. 50¢ admission. (617) 227-3956.

UNITED FIRST PARISH CHURCH (Unitarian), 1226 Hancock St., 1827-28. Considered the finest Greek Revival church in New England, it was designed by Alexander Parris along monumental lines with a projecting Doric portico made up of 25-foot-high columns. The granite edifice might well be called the St. Peter's of Unitarianism. Buried in a crypt within are four of the parish's leading members: John Adams and John Quincy Adams and their wives. NR, NHL. Open for tours Apr 19-Oct 12, M-F 9-5. Write or call in advance for tour reservations. (617) 773-1290.

## Shirley

SHIRLEY SHAKER VILLAGE, S of Shirley on the Harvard Rd., 1793-1900. The Massachusetts Correctional Institution is located at the site of the former Shaker settlement founded in 1793. Most of the buildings have been greatly altered and some of them moved from their original sites. The Meeting House was taken down and transported to Hancock Shaker Village (see Pittsfield vicinity listing). There were once some 26 buildings arranged along Harvard Rd.; there are now 14. The village—made up of three Shaker "families"—dissolved in 1908, the remaining members moving on to nearby Harvard village. Applesauce making had been the main industry here on a tract that comprised over 2,000 acres. NR.

## Sudbury

SUDBURY CENTER HISTORIC DISTRICT, Concord and Old Sudbury Rds. 17th-20th centuries. The principal historic buildings in the village are grouped around the triangular town green. The setting is customary, with the colonial **First Parish Church** (1797) at the west side; the **Greek Revival Town Hall** (1846, 1932) facing the church; and, the clapboard Greek Revival **Grange Hall** (1846) next to the Town Hall. Located at 427 Concord Rd., an avenue off the green, is architect Ralph Adams Cram's estate, **"Whitehall"** (1815 with a 1915 addition). The most interesting part of the estate, however, is the **St.**

VOLUME 23

Pumps to Russell

# THE ENCYCLOPEDIA AMERICANA

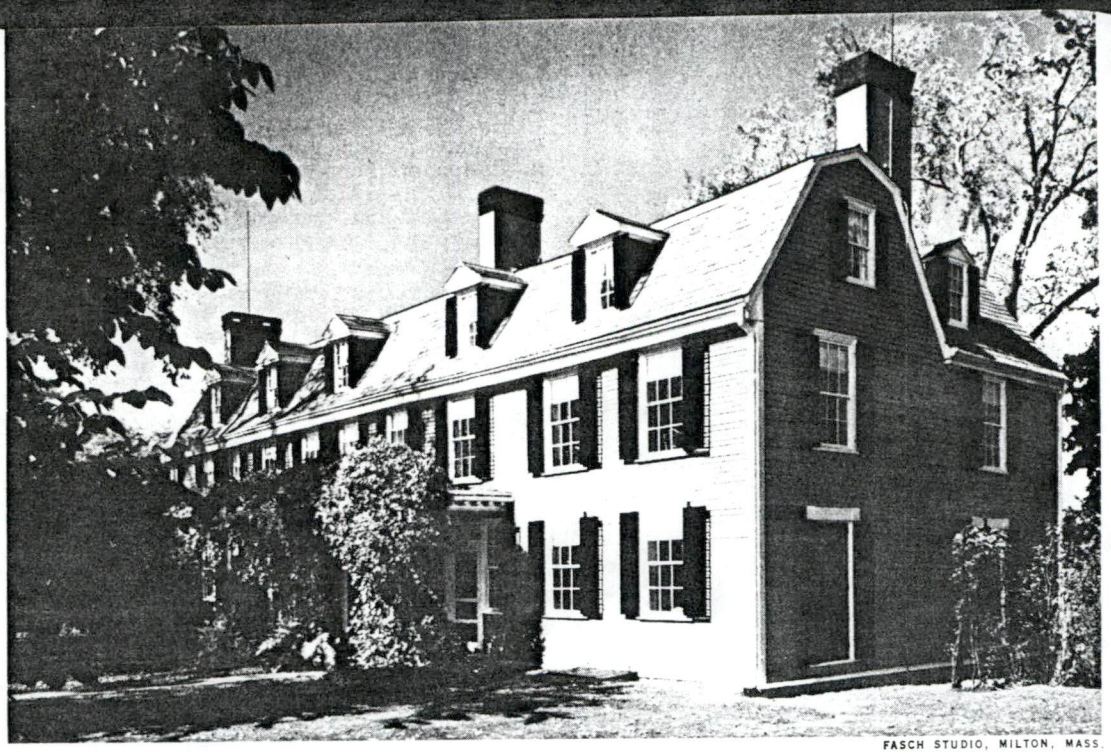
## INTERNATIONAL EDITION

COMPLETE IN THIRTY VOLUMES

FIRST PUBLISHED IN 1829

GROLIER INCORPORATED

International Headquarters: Danbury, Connecticut 06816



FASCH STUDIO, MILTON, MASS.

Four generations of the Adams family, including two presidents, lived in the "Old House" in Quincy, Mass.

**QUINCY,** kwin'zē, a city in eastern Massachusetts, in Norfolk county, is on the Atlantic Ocean just southeast of Boston. It is the birthplace of Presidents John Adams and John Quincy Adams and of John Hancock, first signer of the Declaration of Independence.

Quincy's largest industry is shipbuilding. Printing and publishing are also important, as are the manufacture of transportation equipment, electrical and nonelectrical machinery, and chemicals. The city's 30 miles (48 km) of coastline make it a popular recreation area. Wollaston Beach, Shell Beach, and Houghs Neck are all in Quincy. The Quincy Bay Race Week Regatta draws large crowds every summer.

A number of buildings in Quincy are associated with the Adams family. Chief of these is the Adams National Historic Site, which preserves the house occupied between 1787 and 1927 by four generations of the Adams family, including John, John Quincy, and Henry Adams, author of *The Education of Henry Adams* (1907). Also in Quincy are the John Adams Birthplace (built in 1681), the John Quincy Adams Birthplace (1663), and the Quincy Homestead (1706), home of Dorothy Quincy, who married John Hancock. The Quincy Homestead is one of the few houses in Massachusetts in which the elements of a 17th century building incorporated in a later structure (1706) are clearly visible. John Adams and John Quincy Adams and their wives are buried in the crypt of the First Parish Church.

The United First Parish Church (Unitarian) of Quincy (1827–1828) is a remarkable example of New England Greek Revival church architecture. The granite church has a two-story Doric portico surmounted by a stone tower topped by an open wooden cupola. Also of interest are the excavated remains of the John Winthrop Jr. Iron Furnace of 1644, where the first commercial iron in the United States was made, and the Col. Josiah Quincy Homestead (1770), which served as a lookout for Gen. George Washington during the siege of Boston in the Revolutionary War.

A trading post called Mount Wollaston was established here in 1625. It soon became known as Merry Mount because of the licentious behavior of its head, Thomas Morton, who was ultimately run out of Massachusetts as a "pagan" because he celebrated May Day. In 1634 the community was made part of Boston, but in 1640 it was incorporated as the town of Braintree. In 1792 the North Precinct of Braintree was incorporated as the town of Quincy, named for Col. John Quincy, an eminent citizen. Quincy was incorporated as a city in 1888. It has a mayor-council form of government. Population: 84,743.

**QUINIDINE,** kwin'ə-dēn, is an alkaloid drug obtained from the bark of several species of South American trees of the genera *Cinchona* and *Remijia*. Its chemical formula is the same as that of quinine, which comes from the same trees, but the structure of the quinidine molecule differs from that of the quinine molecule.

Like quinine, quinidine was once used to treat malaria, reduce fever, and speed childbirth. Its principal use today, however, is to treat cardiac arrhythmias (irregularities of the heartbeat), for which it is more effective than quinine. Quinidine acts as a cardiac muscle depressant, tending to slow down and regulate a heart that is beating rapidly and irregularly. It is a potentially dangerous drug that should be used only under medical supervision.

**QUININE,** kwī'nīn, a bitter alkaloid drug that was once widely used to treat malaria. Quinine is obtained from the bark of cinchona trees, which are native to the slopes of the Andes Mountains in South America. Quinine is now commonly replaced by synthetic drugs that are more effective antimalarials and that have less serious side effects.

Ref.
D11
.G34
1990
WH

ISSN 1045-2621

# Holidays and Anniversaries of the World

A Comprehensive Catalogue Containing Detailed Information on Every Month and Day of the Year, with Coverage of 23,000 Holidays, Anniversaries, Fasts and Feasts, Holy Days, Days of the Saints, the Blesseds, and Other Days of Heortological Significance, Birthdays of the Famous, Important Dates in History, and Special Events and Their Sponsors

SECOND EDITION

Jennifer Mossman, Editor



*Gale Research Inc.*

DETROIT • NEW YORK • FORT LAUDERDALE • LONDON

# June 14

## Holidays

**U.S.** **Flag Day**
Commemorates Continental Congress's adoption of flag for the 13 United States, consisting of 13 stripes, 7 red and 6 white, and 13 white stars arranged in a circle on a field of blue, 1777.

## Birthdates

**1736** **Charles Augustin de Coulomb,** French physicist; known for work on friction, electricity, and magnetism. The electrical unit, the *coulomb,* is named for him. [d. August 23, 1806]

**1798** **Frantisek Palacký,** Czech historian, political leader; worked for creation of autonomous Czech nation. [d. April 26, 1876]

**1811** **Harriet (Elizabeth) Beecher Stowe,** U.S. writer; best known for her novel, *Uncle Tom's Cabin,* 1852, which stimulated anti-slavery sentiment prior to U.S. Civil War. [d. July 1, 1896]

**1820** **John Bartlett,** U.S. editor, bookseller; compiler of *Familiar Quotations,* a classic reference work. [d. December 3, 1905]

**1838** **Yamagata Aritomo,** Japanese prince, army general; Premier of Japan, 1889–91, 1898–1900. [d. February 1, 1922]

**1855** **Robert Marion La Follette, Sr.,** U.S. public official, political leader; U.S. Senator, 1907-25. Introduced resolution calling for investigation of **Teapot Dome Scandal.** [d. June 18, 1925]

**1862** **John Joseph Glennon,** U.S. Roman Catholic cardinal. [d. March 9, 1946]

**1868** **Karl Landsteiner,** U.S. physician born in Austria; Nobel Prize in physiology or medicine for discovery of **human blood groups,** 1930. [d. June 26, 1943]

**1895** **José Carlos Mariátegui,** Peruvian writer, reformer. [d. April 16, 1930]

**1906** **Margaret Bourke-White,** U.S. photographer; noted for her photographs of numerous world events, including U.S. campaigns into North Africa, Italy, and Germany during World War II, and photo-essays on Russia, India, the American South. A founding editor of *Life* magazine. [d. August 27, 1971]

**1909** **Burl Ives (Burl Icle Ivanhoe),** U.S. folk singer, character actor.

**1918** **Dorothy McGuire,** U.S. actress; known for her starring role in *Claudia,* 1941.

**1925** **Pierre Salinger,** U.S. politician, journalist; Press Secretary to President John F. Kennedy, 1961–63.

**1928** **Che Guevera (Ernesto Guevera de la Serna),** Latin American guerrilla, revolutionary theoretician and tactician; served as aide to Fidel Castro (August 13) during Cuban Revolution, 1959. [d. October 9, 1967]

**1958** **Eric Heiden,** U.S. speed skater; winner of five gold medals in 1980 Winter Olympics.

**1961** **Boy George (George O'Dowd),** British singer; member of the rock group, *Culture Club;* known for his avante-garde appearance.

## Historical Events

**1800** **Napoleon** defeats Austrians at **Marengo.**

**1846** **Bear Flag Revolt** begins with proclamation of **Republic of California** by a group of settlers. California is annexed to U.S. on August 17, 1846.

**1900** The **Hawaiian Islands** become the Territory of Hawaii, part of the United States.

**1918** The **Battle of the Metz** ends in the failure of the German offensive **(World War I).**

**1934** **Max Baer** knocks out **Primo Carnera** for world heavyweight boxing title.

The U.S. Congress creates the **Federal Communications Commission.**

**1940** **Auschwitz,** the largest of the Nazi concentration camps, opens near Krakow, Poland.

Ref.
D11
.C45
1991
WH

# CHASE'S ANNUAL EVENTS

*Thirty-Fourth Year of Publication*



11/30/90

*Special Days, Weeks & Months in* **1991**

***An Almanac and Survey of the Year:***

***A Calendar of Holidays, Holy Days, National and Ethnic Days, Seasons, Astronomical Phenomena, Festivals and Fairs, Anniversaries, Birthdays, Special Events and Traditional Observances of all kinds, the World over.***

CB
CONTEMPORARY
BOOKS

**DETROIT GRAND PRIX.** June 14-16. Detroit, MI. Fifth Stop on the Cart/PP6 Indy Car World Series Championship. Sponsor: Valvoline. Info from: Detroit Renaissance, Keith Kaminski, Media Relations Mgr, 100 Renaissance Ctr, Ste 1760, Detroit, MI 48243.

**FIRST NONSTOP TRANSATLANTIC FLIGHT: ANNIVERSARY.** June 14-15. Captain John Alcock and Lieutenant Arthur W. Brown flew a Vickers Vimy bomber 1,900 miles nonstop from St. Johns, Newfoundland, to Clifden, County Galway, Ireland, June 14-15, 1919. In spite of their crash landing in an Irish peat bog, their flight inspired public interest in aviation and led to many other flights. See also: "Lindbergh Flight Anniversary" (May 20).

★ **FLAG DAY.** June 14. Presidential Proclamation. Issued each year for June 14. Proclamation 1335, of May 30, 1916, covers all succeeding years. Has been issued annually since 1941. (PL81-203 of Aug 3, 1949.) Customarily issued as "Flag Day and National Flag Week," as in 1986; the president usually mentions "a time to honor America," Flag Day to Independence Day (89 Stat. 211).

☆ ☆ ☆

**FLAG DAY: ANNIVERSARY OF THE STARS AND STRIPES.** June 14. On this day in 1777, John Adams introduced the following resolution before the Continental Congress, meeting at Philadelphia, PA: "Resolved, That the flag of the thirteen United States shall be thirteen stripes, alternate red and white; that the union be thirteen stars, white on a blue field, representing a new constellation." Legal holiday in Pennsylvania.

**FLAG DAY CEREMONIES.** June 14. Betsy Ross House, Philadelphia, PA. 11:00 AM program followed by band concert in Atwater Kent Gardens of Betsy Ross House. Info from: Rosen-Coren Agency, Inc, 902 Benjamin Fox Pavilion, Foxcroft Sq, Jenkintown, PA 19046.

**INTERNATIONAL FAN CLUB ORGANIZATION DINNER AND SHOW.** June 14. Tennessee State Fair Grounds, Nashville, TN. Participation in the annual Fan Fair. Sponsor: Intl Fan Club Organization, Loudilla, Loretta and Kay Johnson, Box 177, Wild Horse, CO 80862.

**JAPAN: RICE PLANTING FESTIVAL.** June 14. Osaka. Ceremonial transplanting of rice seedlings in paddyfield at Sumiyashi Shrine, Osaka.

**LAKEFRONT FESTIVAL OF ARTS.** June 14-16. Milwaukee Art Museum, Milwaukee, WI. To stimulate interest in the visual arts. A fund-raiser for the benefit of the museum's Art Acquisition Fund. Info from: Friends of Art, Beth Hoffman, 750 N Lincoln Memorial Dr, Milwaukee, WI 53202.

**LOUISIANA BLUEBERRY FESTIVAL.** June 14-16. Mansfield, LA. Arts, crafts, food booths, street dance, live entertainment and parade. Info from: Don Frazier, PO Box 1436, Mansfield, LA 71052.

**MICROBREWERY FESTIVAL—MIDWEST.** June 14-15. Hyatt Regency, Chicago, IL. 1991 will be the debut year of "Microbrewery Festival—Midwest," a consumer exposition featuring malt beverages produced by micro-breweries worldwide. Special events and activities relating to beer will include cooking with beer, beer and fitness and beer paraphernalia. Info from: Cheryl Zwierzynski, Production Contractors, Inc, 1711 W Fullerton, Chicago, IL 60614.

**June 1991**

| S | M | T | W | T | F | S |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | | | | 1 |
| 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 |
| 9 | 10 | 11 | 12 | 13 | 14 | 15 |
| 16 | 17 | 18 | 19 | 20 | 21 | 22 |
| 23 | 24 | 25 | 26 | 27 | 28 | 29 |
| 30 | | | | | | |

**NATIONAL FLAG DAY USA: PAUSE FOR THE PLEDGE.** June 14. Held simultaneously across the country at 7:30 PM EDT. Public law 99-54 recognizes the Pause for the Pledge as part of National Flag Day ceremonies. The concept of the Pause for the Pledge of Allegiance was conceived as a way for all citizens to share a patriotic moment. National ceremony at Fort McHenry National Monument and Historic Shrine.

**PINE COUNTRY PRO RODEO.** June 14-16. Coconino County Fairgrounds, Flagstaff, AZ. PRCA pro rodeo to exhibit the skills of our American cowboy. Info from: Pine Country Pro Rodeo Committee, Marshall Knoles, 2708 N 4th St, Flagstaff, AZ 86004.

**POTOMAC RIVER FESTIVAL.** June 14-16. Colonial Beach, VA. To promote the attractions of Colonial Beach and historic Westmoreland County. Sponsor: Chamber of Commerce, 2 Boundary St, Colonial Beach, VA 22443.

**SPACE MILESTONE: *MARINER* 5 (US).** June 14 Interplanetary probe of Venus established 72½-87½ percent carbon dioxide content of atmosphere on Oct 18 flyby of planet. Launched June 14, 1967.

**SPACE MILESTONE: *VOSTOK* 5 (USSR).** June 14 Lieutenant Colonel Valery Bykovsky orbits Earth 81 times, 2,044,224 miles. Landed June 19. Launched June 14, 1963.

**SPAIN: FESTIVAL INTERNACIONAL DE MUSICA Y DANZA.** June 14-July 3. Granada. Info from: Festival Internacional de Musica y Danza, Aptdo Correos 64, E-18009, Granada, Spain.

**STERNWHEELER DAYS.** June 14-16. Marina Park, Cascade Locks, OR. Return of the replica sternwheeler "Columbia Gorge" to home port for the summer. Wine and cheese tasting, crafts, salmon feed, live music, 10K run. Sponsor: Port of Cascade Locks, PO Box 307, Cascade Locks, OR 97014.

**STOWE, HARRIET BEECHER: 180TH BIRTH ANNIVERSARY.** June 14. American writer, Harriet Beecher Stowe, daughter of the Rev Lyman Beecher and sister of Henry Ward Beecher. Author of *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, an antislavery novel that provoked a storm of protest and resulted in fame for the author. Two characters in the novel attained such importance that their names became part of the English language — the Negro slave, Uncle Tom, and the villainous slave owner, Simon Legree. The bitter reaction to *Uncle Tom's Cabin* and its profound political impact are without parallel in American literature. It is said that during the Civil War, when Harriet Beecher Stowe was introduced to President Abraham Lincoln, his words to her were "So you're the little woman who wrote the book that made this great war." Stowe was born at Litchfield, CT, June 14, 1811. The last ten years of her life were clouded by an ailment which may have been Alzheimer's disease. She died in Hartford, CT, on July 1, 1896.

**SUMMERFEST ART FAIRE.** June 14-15. Tabernacle Square, Logan, UT. A celebration of the arts. Events include live theater, a fine arts exhibit, benefit evening and a two day art faire, featuring various arts demonstrations, exhibiting artists, a jazz festival and children's activities. Annually, the third weekend in June. Info from: Cache Valley Health Care Foundation, c/o Logan Regional Hospital, Logan, UT 84321.

***TECUMSEH!*: THE EPIC OUTDOOR DRAMA.** June 14-Aug 31. Chillicothe, OH. Witness the spectacular reenactment of the life and death of the great Shawnee leader Tecumseh. Held in the large, tiered amphitheater nestled in the hardwood forest of Sugarloaf Mountain. Take a backstage tour, visit the Prehistoric Museum, dine in the open-air Tecumseh Restaurant Terrace. Info from: Tecumseh, PO Box 73, Chillicothe, OH 45601.

**UNIVAC COMPUTER: 40TH BIRTHDAY.** June 14. UNIVAC I, the world's first commercial computer, designed for the US Bureau of the Census, was unveiled, demonstrated and dedicated at Philadelphia, PA, June 14, 1951. Though this milestone of the computer age was the first commercial electronic com-

National Security Resources Board
Library
Law Collection

# UNITED STATES STATUTES AT LARGE

CONTAINING THE

LAWS AND CONCURRENT RESOLUTIONS
ENACTED DURING THE FIRST SESSION OF THE
EIGHTY-FIRST CONGRESS
OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

## 1949

AND

PROCLAMATIONS, TREATIES, INTERNATIONAL
AGREEMENTS OTHER THAN TREATIES,
AND REORGANIZATION PLANS

---

## VOLUME 63

IN THREE PARTS

---

## PART 1

PUBLIC LAWS, REORGANIZATION PLANS, PRIVATE LAWS,
CONCURRENT RESOLUTIONS, AND PROCLAMATIONS

UNITED STATES
GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
WASHINGTON : 1950

13845

fines, if any, collected by the United States Court of Appeals for the District of Columbia Circuit, including fees and fines, if any, collected by the office of the clerk of that court, as the amount paid by the District of Columbia toward the salaries and expenses of such court bears to the total amount of such salaries and expenses."

Repeal.

D. C. Code § 21-308. *Post*, p. 889.

SEC. 8. That the last sentence of the second paragraph of section 2 of the Act of June 8, 1938, entitled "An Act to provide for insanity proceedings in the District of Columbia" (52 Stat. 625, 626), which reads as follows: "The Commissioners shall include in their annual estimates such amounts as may be required for the salaries and expenses herein authorized," is hereby repealed.

Repeal.

SEC. 9. That the Act of April 24, 1926, entitled "An Act providing for expenses of the office of Recorder of Deeds and Register of Wills of the District of Columbia" (44 Stat. 322; title 19, sec. 404 and sec. 405; D. C. Code, 1940), insofar as it relates to the office of the Register of Wills, and any other provisions of law inconsistent with the provisions of this Act are hereby repealed.

Effective date.

SEC. 10. This Act shall take effect on July 1, 1949.

Approved August 2, 1949.

---

[CHAPTER 384]

AN ACT

August 3, 1949
[S. 1742]
[Public Law 202]

Removing certain restrictions imposed by the Act of March 8, 1888, on certain lands authorized by such Act to be conveyed to the trustees of Porter Academy.

Porter Academy.

*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled*, That the Secretary of the Army is authorized to release to the trustees of Porter Academy by an appropriate written instrument the restriction placed upon that land in Charleston, South Carolina, which was conveyed to the trustees of Porter Academy pursuant to the provisions of the Act of March 8, 1888, entitled "An Act authorizing the Secretary of War to transfer to the trustees of Porter Academy certain property in the city of Charleston, South Carolina", sections 1 and 2 of which required that the property should be inviolably dedicated to educational purposes and no other and required that the deed of conveyance contain a condition to that effect.

25 Stat. 45.

Approved August 3, 1949.

---

[CHAPTER 385]

JOINT RESOLUTION

August 3, 1949
[H. J. Res. 170]
[Public Law 203]

Designating June 14 of each year as Flag Day.

Flag Day.

*Resolved by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled*, That the 14th day of June of each year is hereby designated as "Flag Day", and the President of the United States is authorized and requested to issue annually a proclamation calling upon officials of the Government to display the flag of the United States on all Government buildings on such day, and urging the people to observe the day as the anniversary of the adoption on June 14, 1777, by the Continental Congress of the Stars and Stripes as the official flag of the United States of America.

Approved August 3, 1949.

## FASHION

**2175** A fashionable woman is always in love—with herself. *François de La Rochefoucauld*

**2176** Change in fashion is the tax which the industry of the poor levies on the vanity of the rich. *Nicolas Chamfort*

**2177** Fashion: a despot whom the wise ridicule and obey. *Ambrose Bierce*

**2178** Fashion is what one wears oneself. What is unfashionable is what other people wear. *Oscar Wilde*

**2179** Fashion is that by which the fantastic becomes for a moment universal. *Ibid.*

**2180** Fashion is a form of ugliness so intolerable that we have to alter it every six months. *Ibid.*

**2181** We smile at the women who are eagerly following the fashions in dress whilst we are as eagerly following the fashions in thought. *Austin O'Malley*

**2182** Every generation laughs at the old fashions, but follows religiously the new. *Henry D. Thoreau*

**2183** I see that the fashion wears out more apparel than the man. *William Shakespeare*

**2184** Fashion is gentility running away from vulgarity, and afraid of being overtaken. *William Hazlitt*

**2185** When a man is once in fashion, all he does is right. *Lord Chesterfield*

**2186** He who goes against the fashion is himself its slave. *Logan Pearsall Smith*

**2187** For an idea ever to be fashionable is ominous, since it must afterward be always old-fashioned. *George Santayana*

## FASTIDIOUSNESS

**2188** Fastidiousness is the ability to resist a temptation in the hope that a better one will come along. *John A. Lincoln*

## FAT

**2189** A fat man is no good in war. He can neither fight nor run away. *American Proverb*

**2190** Nobody loves a fat man. *Ibid.*

**2191** All fat man are jolly, or if here and there a fat man doesn't find himself so terribly jovial by nature, he is compelled to assume an air of jollity, because it is expected of him, sort of noblesse obese. *Frank Case*

**2192** She had a lot of fat that did not fit. *H. G. Wells*

## FATHER

**2193** Fathers should be neither seen nor heard. That is the only proper basis for family life. *Oscar Wilde*

**2194** Diogenes struck the father when the son swore. *Robert Burton*



**2195** A father is a banker provided by nature. *French Proverb*

**2196** One father can support twelve children, but twelve children cannot support one father. *Ibid.*

**2197** As fathers commonly go, it is seldom a misfortune to be fatherless; and considering the general run of sons, as seldom a misfortune to be childless. *Earl of Chesterfield*

**2198** It is a wise child that knows its own father, and an unusual one that unreservedly approves of him. *Mark Twain*

**2199** When I was a boy of fourteen, my father was so ignorant I could hardly stand to have the old man around. But when I got to be twenty-one, I was astonished at how much he had learned in seven years. *Ibid.*

**2200** My father and I were always on the most distant terms when I was a boy—a sort of armed neutrality, so to speak. At irregular intervals this neutrality was broken, and suffering ensued; but I will be candid enough to say that the breaking and suffering were always divided with strict impartiality between us—which is to say, my father did the breaking and I did the suffering. *Ibid.*

**2201** Father: a kin you love to touch. *Anonymous*

**2202** Nearly every man is a firm believer in heredity until his son makes a fool of himself. *Herbert V. Prochnow*

**2203** Many a man spanks his children for things his own father should have spanked out of him. *Don Marquis*

## FAULTS

**2204** The first part of the night, think of your own faults; the latter part, think of the faults of others. *Chinese Proverb*

**2205** She's generous to a fault—if it's her own. *Arthur "Bugs" Baer*

**2206** The greatest of faults, I should say, is to be conscious of none. *Thomas Carlyle*

**2207** Always acknowledge a fault frankly. This will throw those in authority off their guard and give you opportunity to commit more. *Mark Twain*

**2208** People who have no faults are terrible; there is no way of taking advantage of them. *Anatole France*

**2209** If you wish to be loved, show more of your faults than your virtues. *Edward G. Bulwer-Lytton*

**2210** We confess to small faults only to convey the impression that we have no big ones. *François de La Rochefoucauld*

**2211** Most of our faults are more pardonable than the means we use to conceal them. *Ibid.*

**2212** If we had no faults of our own, we should take less pleasure in noticing the faults of others. *Ibid.*

**2213** We give ourselves credit for the opposite faults of those we have: when we are weak, we boast of being obstinate. *Ibid.*

Research 11½

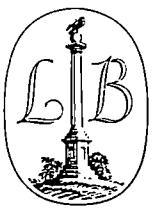
# Familiar Quotations

*A collection of passages, phrases and proverbs traced to their sources in ancient and modern literature*

*FIFTEENTH AND 125TH ANNIVERSARY EDITION*
*REVISED AND ENLARGED*

## John Bartlett

*Edited by EMILY MORISON BECK*
*and the editorial staff of Little, Brown and Company*




LITTLE, BROWN AND COMPANY • BOSTON • TORONTO

## James Smithson
1765–1829

1 To found at Washington, under the name of the Smithsonian Institution, an establishment for the increase and diffusion of knowledge among men.[1]
*Bequest [1829] with which the Smithsonian Institution was established [1846]*

## Isaac D'Israeli
1766–1848

2 Whatever is felicitously expressed risks being worse expressed: it is a wretched taste to be gratified with mediocrity when the excellent lies before us.
*Curiosities of Literature [1834]. On Quotation*

## Thomas Robert Malthus
1766–1834

3 Population, when unchecked, increases in a geometrical ratio. Subsistence increases only in an arithmetical ratio. A slight acquaintance with numbers will show the immensity of the first power in comparison of the second.
*An Essay on the Principle of Population [1798]*

## Ernst Friedrich Herbert von Münster
1766–1839

4 Absolutism tempered by assassination.
*Description of the Russian Constitution*

## Carolina Oliphant, Baroness Nairne
1766–1845

5 Better lo'ed ye canna be,
Will ye no come back again?
*Life and Songs [1869]. Bonnie Charlie's Now Awa'*[2]

6 Charlie is my darling, the young Chevalier.
*Ib. Charlie Is My Darling*[2]

7 We'll up an' gie them a blaw, a blaw,
Wi' a hundred pipers an' a', an' a'.
*Ib. The Hundred Pipers*

8 Gude nicht, and joy be wi' you a'.
*Ib. Gude Nicht*

9 A penniless lass wi' a lang pedigree.
*Ib. The Laird o' Cockpen*

10 I'm wearin' awa'
To the land o' the leal.
*Ib. The Land o' the Leal*

11 There's nae sorrow there, John,
There's neither cauld nor care, John,
The day is aye fair,
In the land o' the leal. *Ib.*

## Madame de Staël
## [Germaine, Baronne de Staël-Holstein]
1766–1817

12 Love is the whole history of a woman's life, it is but an episode in a man's.[3]
*De l'Influence des Passions [1796]*

13 A man must know how to defy opinion; a woman how to submit to it.
*Delphine [1802]*

14 The sight of such a monument is like a continuous and stationary music.[4]
*Corinne [1807], bk. IV, ch. 3*

15 To understand everything makes one tolerant.[5] *Ib. XVIII, 5*

16 I would gladly give half of the wit with which I am credited for half of the beauty you possess. *Letter to Madame Récamier*

## John Quincy Adams[6]
1767–1848

17 I can never join with my voice in the toast which I see in the papers attributed to one of our gallant naval heroes. I cannot ask of heaven success, even for my country, in a cause where she should be in the wrong.[7] *Fiat justitia, pereat coelum.*[8] My toast would be, may our country be always successful, but whether successful or otherwise, always right.
*Letter to John Adams [August 1, 1816]*

[1] Quoted by John Quincy Adams in the *Committee Report on the Smithson Bequest* [March 5, 1840].
See John Quincy Adams, 418:10.

[2] Also attributed to James Hogg [1770–1835].

[3] L'amour est l'histoire de la vie des femmes, c'est un episode dans celle des hommes.

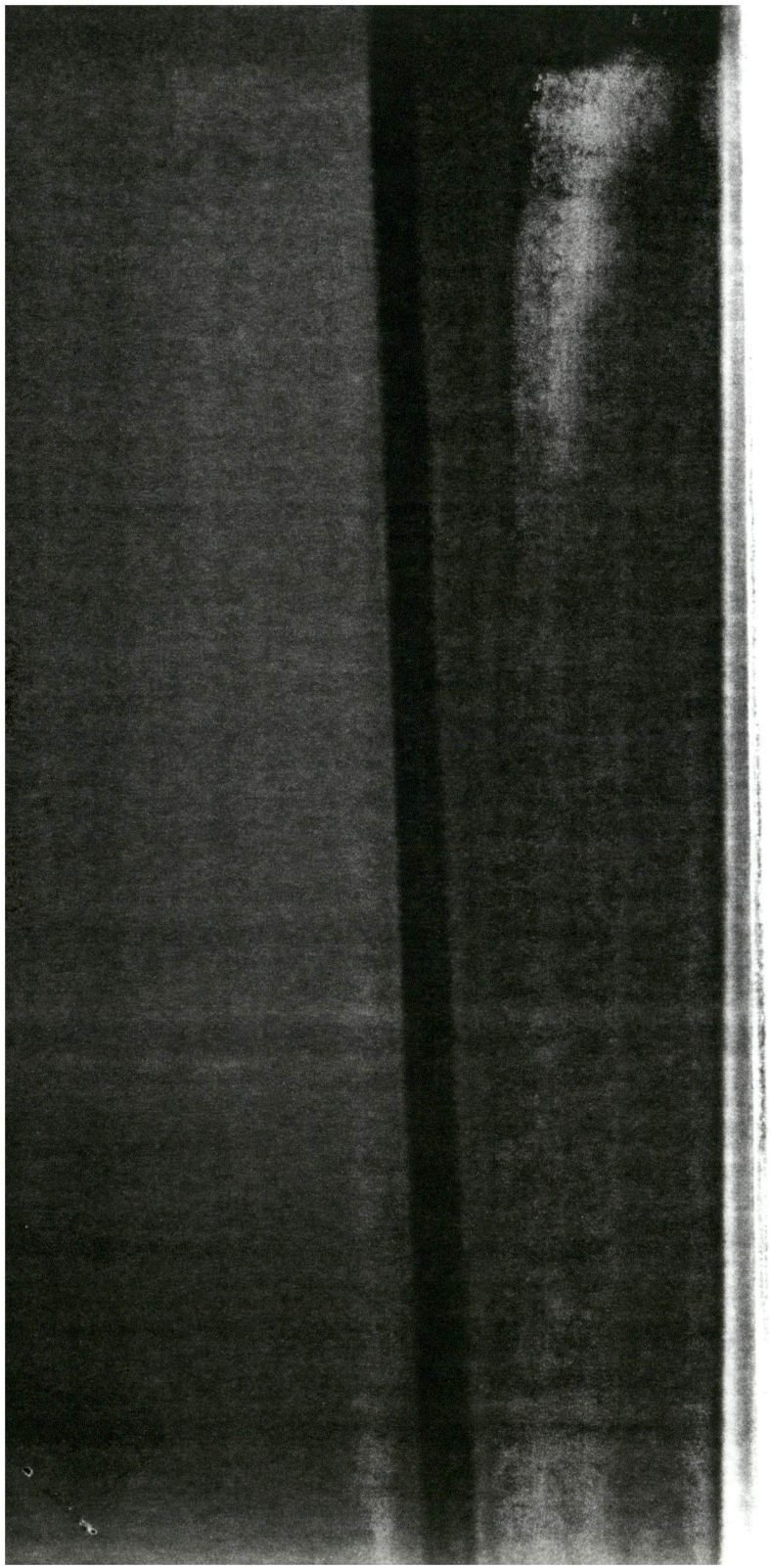
[4] See Goethe, 396:6.

[5] Tout comprendre rend très indulgent.
Attributed to Madame de Staël are similar phrases: Comprendre c'est pardonner [To understand is to forgive]. Tout comprendre c'est tout pardonner [To know everything is to forgive everything].

[6] Known as "Old Man Eloquent."
See Milton, 282:6.

[7] See Charles Churchill, 375:13; Decatur, 445:19; and Schurtz, 603:4.

[8] See Anonymous Latin, 133:25.





## Woodrow Wilson
1856–1924

1 The United States must be neutral in fact as well as in name. . . . We must be impartial in thought as well as in action.

*Message to the Senate [August 19, 1914]*

2 You deal in the raw material of opinion, and, if my convictions have any validity, opinion ultimately governs the world.

*Address to the Associated Press [April 20, 1915]*

3 There is such a thing as a man being too proud to fight.

*Address to Foreign-Born Citizens [May 10, 1915]*

4 [The Civil War] created in this country what had never existed before—a national consciousness. It was not the salvation of the Union; it was the rebirth of the Union.

*Memorial Day Address [1915]*

5 The flag is the embodiment, not of sentiment, but of history. It represents the experiences made by men and women, the experiences of those who do and live under that flag.

*Address [June 14, 1915]*

6 We have stood apart, studiously neutral.

*Message to Congress [December 7, 1915]*

7 America cannot be an ostrich with its head in the sand.

*Speech at Des Moines [February 1, 1916]*

8 There must be, not a balance of power, but a community of power; not organized rivalries, but an organized common peace.

*Address to the Senate [January 22, 1917]*

9 It must be a peace without victory. . . . Victory would mean peace forced upon the loser, a victor's terms imposed upon the vanquished. It would be accepted in humiliation, under duress, at an intolerable sacrifice, and would leave a sting, a resentment, a bitter memory upon which terms of peace would rest, not permanently, but only as upon quicksand. Only a peace between equals can last. *Ib.*

10 A little group of willful men, representing no opinion but their own, have rendered the great Government of the United States helpless and contemptible.

*Statement made in reference to certain members of the Senate [March 4, 1917]*[1]

11 Armed neutrality is ineffectual enough at best.

*Address to Congress, asking for a declaration of war [April 2, 1917]*

12 The world must be made safe for democracy.[2] *Ib.*

13 It is a fearful thing to lead this great peaceful people into war, into the most terrible and disastrous of all wars, civilization itself seeming to be in the balance. But the right is more precious than peace, and we shall fight for the things which we have always carried nearest our hearts—for democracy, for the right of those who submit to authority to have a voice in their own governments, for the rights and liberties of small nations, for a universal dominion of right by such a concert of free peoples as shall bring peace and safety to all nations and make the world itself at last free. To such a task we can dedicate our lives and our fortunes, everything that we are and everything that we have, with the pride of those who know that the day has come when America is privileged to spend her blood and her might for the principles that gave her birth and happiness and the peace which she has treasured. God helping her, she can do no other.[3] *Ib.*

14 1. Open covenants of peace, openly arrived at.

2. Absolute freedom of navigation upon the seas. . . .

5. A free, open-minded, and absolutely impartial adjustment of all colonial claims.

*Address to Congress (The Fourteen Points) [January 8, 1918]*

15 14. A general association of nations must be formed . . . for the purpose of affording mutual guarantees of political independence and territorial integrity to great and small states alike. *Ib.*

16 Sometimes people call me an idealist. Well that is the way I know I am an American. America is the only idealistic nation in the world.

*Address at Sioux Falls [September 8, 1919]*

17 The highest and best form of efficiency is the spontaneous cooperation of a free people.

*From* BERNARD BARUCH, *American Industry at War: A Report of the War Industries Board [March 1921]*

---

[1] bill authorizing the arming of American merchant vessels.

[2] See James Harvey Robinson, 703:2.

[3] See Luther, 455:10.

# The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations

THIRD EDITION

Oxford New York Toronto Melbourne
OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS
1979

# QUOTATIONS

### PETER ABELARD 1079–1142

1 *O quanta qualia sunt illa sabbata,*
*Quae semper celebrat superna curia.*
O how great and glorious are those sabbaths which the heavenly court for ever celebrates!
***Hymnus Paraclitensis***

2 *Quis rex, quae curia, quale palatium,*
*Quae pax, quae requies, quod illud gaudium.*
What a king, what a court, how fine a palace, what peace, what rest, what rejoicing is there!

### ACCIUS 170–c.90 B.C.

3 *Oderint, dum metuant.*
Let them hate, so long as they fear.
***Atreus.*** Seneca, *De Ira*, I, 20, 4

### DEAN ACHESON 1893–1971

4 Great Britain has lost an Empire and has not yet found a role.
Speech at the Military Academy, West Point, 5 Dec. 1962

### LORD ACTON 1834–1902

5 Power tends to corrupt and absolute power corrupts absolutely.
Letter to Bishop Mandell Creighton, 3 Apr. 1887. See *Life and Letters of Mandell Creighton* (1904), i.372. See 373:23

### CHARLES FRANCIS ADAMS 1807–1886

6 It would be superfluous in me to point out to your lordship that this is war.
Dispatch to Earl Russell, 5 Sept. 1863. C.F. Adams, *Charles Francis Adams*, p.342

### HENRY ADAMS 1838–1918

7 A friend in power is a friend lost.
*The Education of Henry Adams*, ch.7

### PRESIDENT JOHN QUINCY ADAMS 1767–1848

8 Think of your forefathers! Think of your posterity!
Speech, 22 Dec. 1802

### SAMUEL ADAMS 1722–1803

9 A nation of shop-keepers are very seldom so disinterested.
Oration said to have been delivered at Philadelphia, 1 Aug. 1776. See 359:15, 509:12

### SARAH F. ADAMS 1805–1848

10 Nearer, my God, to thee,
Nearer to thee!
***Nearer My God to Thee***

### JOSEPH ADDISON 1672–1719

11 Pray consider what a figure a man would make in the republic of letters.
***Ancient Medals,*** 1

12 There is nothing more requisite in business than dispatch.
5

13 'Twas then great Marlbro's mighty soul was prov'd.
***The Campaign,*** l.279

14 And, pleas'd th' Almighty's orders to perform,
Rides in the whirl-wind, and directs the storm.
l.291

15 And those who paint 'em truest praise 'em most.
l.476

16 'Tis not in mortals to command success,
But we'll do more, Sempronius; we'll deserve it.
***Cato,*** I.ii.43

17 Blesses his stars, and thinks it luxury.
iv.70

18 'Tis pride, rank pride, and haughtiness of soul;
I think the Romans call it stoicism.
82

19 Were you with these, my prince, you'd soon forget
The pale, unripened beauties of the north.
134

20 The woman that deliberates is lost.
IV.i.31

21 Curse on his virtues! they've undone his country.
Such popular humanity is treason.
iv.35

22 What pity is it
That we can die but once to serve our country!
81

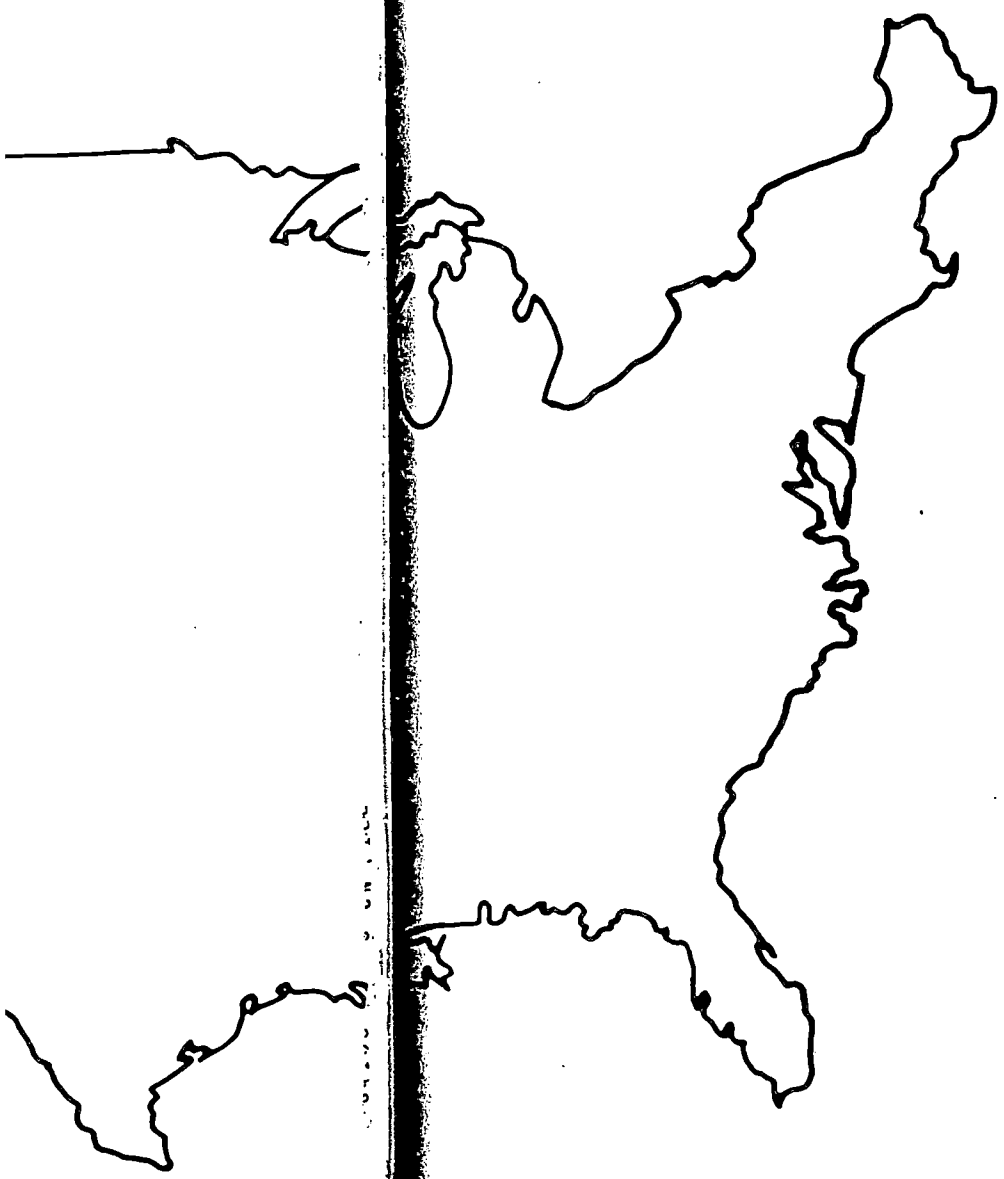
23 Content thyself to be obscurely good.
When vice prevails, and impious men bear sway,
The post of honour is a private station.
139

24 It must be so—Plato, thou reason'st well!—
Else whence this pleasing hope, this fond desire,
This longing after immortality?
Or whence this secret dread, and inward horror,
Of falling into naught? Why shrinks the soul
Back on herself, and startles at destruction?
'Tis the divinity that stirs within us;
'Tis heaven itself, that points out an hereafter,
And intimates eternity to man.
Eternity! thou pleasing, dreadful thought!
V.i.1

25 From hence, let fierce contending nations know
What dire effects from civil discord flow.
iv.111

# AMERICA THE QUOTABLE

*Mike Edelhart and*
*James Tinen*



**Facts On File Publications**
460 Park Avenue South
New York, N.Y. 10016

* * *

America every morning when we
us whether we will it or not. The
ie sum of many small changes—a
iere, a new school there, a new
re had been swampland—changes
oroad transformation of our lives.
uide these changes. For, though
le, change for the better is a full-

Adlai Stevenson
ampaign speech in Miami, Florida
1956

* * *

he states themselves form a chorus
ost romantic vocables: Delaware,
Florida, Dakota, Iowa, Wyoming,
the Carolinas."

Robert Louis Stevenson
*Across the Plains*
1892

* * *

s when the fleet of Columbus sailed
of the New World, America has been
or opportunity, and the people of the
ave taken their tone from the incessant
:h has not only been open but has even
them."

Frederick Jackson Turner
nificance of the Frontier in American
History"
1893

* * *

is always stronger than we know in our
moments."

E.B. White
*New York Times*
Dec. 30, 1967

* * *

l States themselves are essentially the
n."

Walt Whitman
*Leaves of Grass*
1855

* * *

ashing that this America is only you

weapons, testimony, are you and me,
lies, thefts, defections, are you and

Walt Whitman
"By Blue Ontario's Shore"
1856

* * *

"America lives in the heart of every man everywhere who wishes to find a region where he will be free to work out his destiny as he chooses."

President Woodrow Wilson
Speech in New York
May 17, 1915

* * *

"One comes to the United States—always, no matter how often—to see the future. It's what life in one's own country will be like five, ten, twenty years from now."

Ehud Yonay, Israeli
*New York Times*
Nov. 26, 1972

## America and the World

"Whenever the standard of freedom and independence has been or shall be unfurled, there will be America's heart, her benedictions, and her prayers. But she goes not abroad in search of monsters to destroy."

John Quincy Adams
Fourth of July Speech
1821

* * *

"Europeans are . . . forced to observe the labor of American statesmen somewhat in the way that decrepit Alpine guides, in the village square, might follow through a telescope the progress of a group of young, willing, bold and inexperienced climbers on the smooth face of a mountain."

Luigi Barzini
*Americans Are Alone in the World*
1953

* * *

"It is ours to set the world its example of right and honor. We cannot fly from our world duties; it is ours to execute the purpose of a fate that has driven us to be greater than our small intentions. We cannot retreat from any soil where Providence has unfurled our banner . . ."

Albert Beveridge, U.S. senator
Speech in the Senate
1900

* * *

"What makes America unique in our time is that confrontation with the new is part of the daily American experience. For better or worse, the rest of the world learns what is in store for it by observing what happens in the United States."

Zbigniew Brzezinski
*Between Two Ages*
1970

* * *

" . . . as Europe comes to admit, which it will soon have to, that the United States is now the ranking world power, its customs and gadgets and manners and literature and ways of doing business will powerfully influence the young."

Alistair Cooke
*Talk About America*
1968

* * *

"Is the U.S. a great power—or merely a large country?"

Editorial
*Dong-A Ilbo* (South Korean newspaper)
February, 1968

* * *

"What we call foreign affairs is no longer foreign affairs. It's a local affair. Whatever happens in Indonesia is important to Indiana."

President Dwight D. Eisenhower
Speech to graduating class of Foreign Service Institute
1959

* * *

"There can be no such thing as Fortress America. If ever we were reduced to the isolation implied by that term we would occupy a prison, not a fortress."

President Dwight D. Eisenhower
State of the Union address
Jan. 9, 1959

* * *

"From the moment of its discovery . . . America has been, sometimes quite literally, the creation of European wishful thinking."

J. Martin Evans
*America: The View From Europe*
1976

* * *

"Instead of the ugly Americans we should be labeled the childish Americans, who think that by sharing a half-licked lollypop in our favorite democratic flavor we can make people love us."

Grace Nies Fletcher
*In Quest of the Least Coin*
1969

* * *

"We are well on our way to becoming a traditional great power—an imperial nation if you will—engaged in the exercise of power for its own sake, exercising it to the limit of our capacity and beyond, filling every vacuum and extending the American 'presence' to the farthest reaches of the earth. And, as with the great empires of the past, as the power grows, it is becoming an end in itself, separated

# A TREASURY OF HUMOROUS QUOTATIONS

**For Speakers, Writers, and Home Reference**

HERBERT V. PROCHNOW and

HERBERT V. PROCHNOW, Jr.

HARPER & ROW, PUBLISHERS

1817

NEW YORK, HAGERSTOWN, SAN FRANCISCO, LONDON

DEFEND

d; when it is attacked, it defends itself.

DELAWARE

ınties when the tide is out, and two when

DELICATESSEN

a delicatessen just once. We never could
*rl Warren*
:atessen. I hate eating alone, except things
p on the couch with . . . like potato salad.

DELINQUENCY

ery boy, in his heart, would rather steal
›mobile. *Tom C. Clark*
ıse children with angels. *David Maxwell*

DEMAGOGUE

also worthless always charms the rabble.

who preaches doctrines he knows to be
s to be idiots. *H. L. Mencken*

DEMOCRACY

:lection by the incompetent many for ap-
›t few. *George Bernard Shaw*
government of bullies tempered by editors.

m of religion; it is the worship of jackals by
*ken*
ho lead follow; those who follow lead. *Hol-*

ın attempt (like that of a jolly hostess) to
:. *G. K. Chesterton*
rnment by the uneducated, while aristocracy
the badly educated. *Ibid.*
emocracy makes democratic institutions im-
:*sell*
ırrent suspicion that more than half of the
ıan half of the time. *E. B. White*
ply the bludgeoning of the people, by the
*Oscar Wilde*
say this because other systems are worse.



**1536** Democracy . . . is a condition where people believe that other people are as good as they are. *Stuart Chase*

**1537** Strip the human race absolutely naked, and it would be a real democracy. But the introduction of even a rag of tiger skin, or a cow tail, could make a badge of distinction and be the beginning of a monarchy. *Mark Twain*

**1538** Democracy down here is like a baby—and nobody gives a baby everything to eat right away. I'm giving 'em liberty, but in my style. *Anastasio Somoza*

**1539** When everybody is somebody, then nobody is anybody. *Anonymous*

**1540** Democracy is liberty plus economic security. We Americans want to pray, think as we please—and eat regular. *Maury Maverick*

DEMOCRATIC PARTY

**1541** The Democratic Party is like a mule. It has neither pride of ancestry nor hope of posterity. *Ignatius Donnelly*

**1542** The Democratic Party is like a man riding backward in a carriage. It never sees a thing until it has gone by. *Benjamin F. Butler*

**1543** I never said all Democrats were saloonkeepers. What I said was that all saloonkeepers were Democrats. *Horace Greeley*

DENOMINATIONS

**1544** It is becoming impossible for those who mix with their fellowmen to believe that the grace of God is distributed denominationally. *William R. Inge*

DENTIST

**1545** Dentists and solicitors. These are the people to whom we always show our best side. *Samuel Butler*

**1546** Dentist: a prestidigitator who, putting metal in your mouth, pulls coins out of your pocket. *Ambrose Bierce*

**1547** A dentist at work in his vocation always looks down in the mouth. *George D. Prentice*

**1548** For the dental association we suggest the slogan, "Be true to your teeth or they will be false to you." *Anonymous*

DENUNCIATION

**1549** The denunciation of the young is a necessary part of the hygiene of older people, and greatly assists the circulation of their blood. *Logan Pearsall Smith*

DEPENDABLE

**1550** Grant stood by me when I was crazy, and I stood by him when he was drunk, and now we stand by each other. *William Tecumseh Sherman*

DEPRESSION

**1551** Once upon a time my political opponents honored me as possessing